

LIBRARY

OF THE

Theological Seminary.

PRINCETON, N. J.

BV 4500 .P8 1845

C Allestree, Richard, 1619-  
1681.

S The practice of Christian  
graces

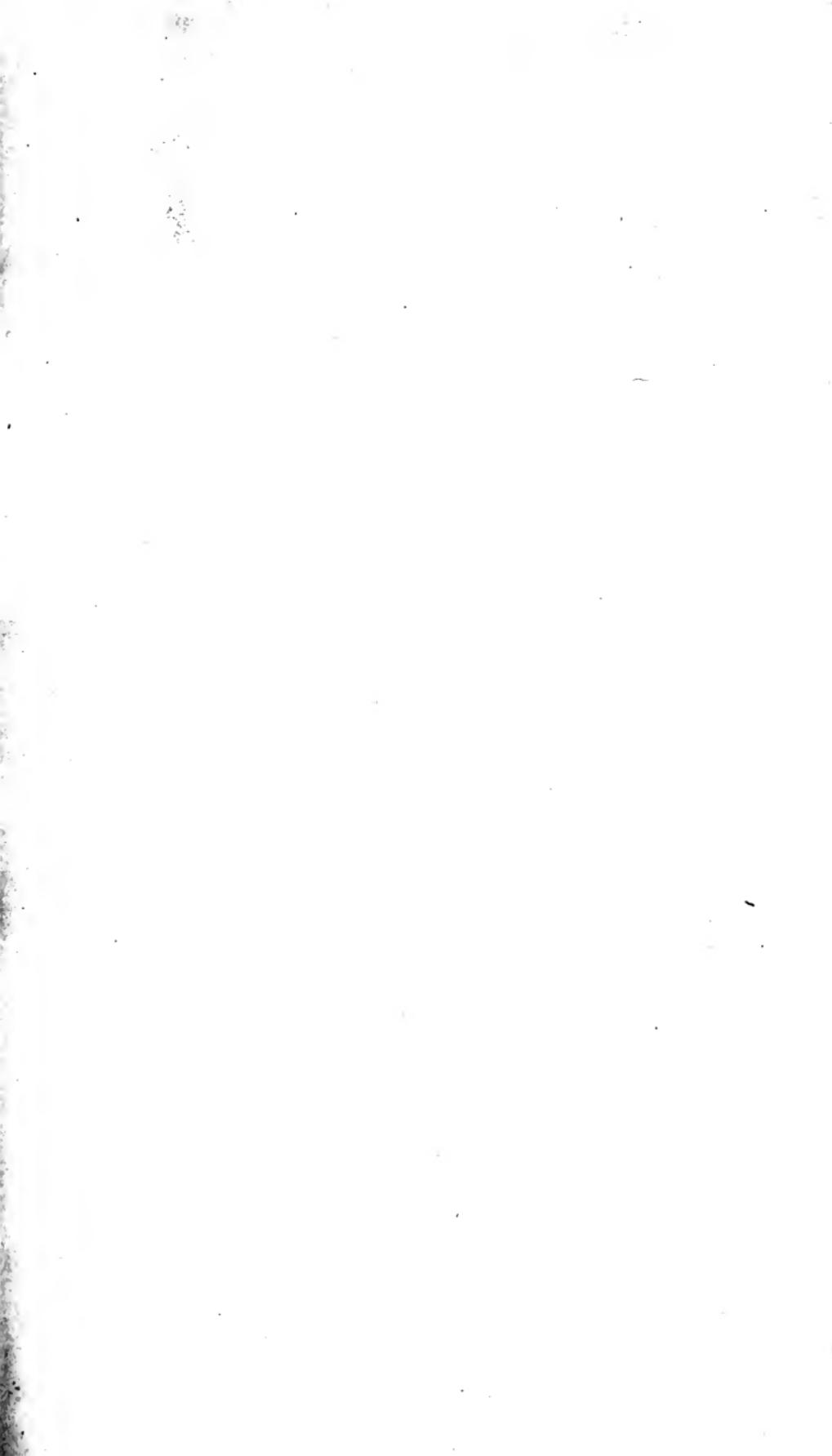
A DONATION

FROM

W. W. Frazin Esq

Received

May 1870.









THE  
PRACTICE OF CHRISTIAN GRACES;  
OR,  
THE WHOLE DUTY OF MAN.

FIRST PUBLISHED,

1658.

---

A NEW EDITION, WITH A PREFACE.

BY THE  
REV. WILLIAM BENTINCK HAWKINS, M.A., F.R.S.  
OF EXETER COLLEGE, OXFORD.

(1)



THE  
PRACTICE OF CHRISTIAN GRACES;

OR,

The Whole Duty of Man,

LAID DOWN

A PLAIN AND FAMILIAR WAY,

FOR

THE USE OF ALL.

WITH

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS

FOR SEVERAL OCCASIONS.

---

PHILADELPHIA:

T. WARDLE, 144 CHESTNUT STREET.

1845.



## EDITOR'S PREFACE.

FEW books have obtained a more general circulation, or have passed through more editions than *The Practice of Christian Graces*, or, *The Whole Duty of Man*, and perhaps it may safely be said, few have possessed such well founded claims on the esteem and approbation of the public. From the time of its first appearance\* in 1658, to the end of the seventeenth and during the early part of the eighteenth century, it retained the popular character which it had originally acquired. So great, indeed, was the estimation in which it was held, that not long after its publication it was translated into the Latin, French, and Welsh languages.† We are also told, that it was the custom of the learned and excellent Bishop Bull, one of the greatest ornaments of our church, to read a chapter out of the *Whole Duty of Man* in addition to the performance of family prayers in his house on Sunday evenings. We cannot do better than give the account of this circumstance in the words of the Bishop's biographer, the amiable and pious Robert Nelson, a name equally eminent amongst the lay members of the church; since they supply an additional testimony to the merit of the work in question, from one who was well qualified to appreciate its real value. “Upon Sunday evenings, there was the addition of a chapter out of that excellent book, *The Whole Duty of Man*, than which we have none more fit for general and constant use; and this was for the further instruction of his family,

---

\* London, Printed for T. Garthwaite, at the Little North Door of St. Pauls, 1658.

† The translation published in France in the year 1669 is dedicated to the Duchess of York. It is anonymous, but the translator appears to have been a female, and a native of France. She compliments the Duchess on having “une connoissance achevée de la delicatesse de notre langue,” and speaking of herself says, “car comme je ne suis ni de la sexe ni de l'honneur à écrire pour le public.”

particularly of those who had been deprived of going to church by reason of the necessary services of the house.”\*

Isaak Walton bears a like testimony of Bishop Sanderson, and says, that “He, in his retirement, had the church prayers read in his chamber twice every day; and at nine at night some prayers read to him and to a part of his family out of ‘The Whole Duty of Man.’”

Another eminent divine of our church, the celebrated Dean Stanhope, esteemed this work so highly, that he recommended it as a model for style in the composition of sermons, in a letter addressed by him to a young relation who had entered into holy orders. “As to other books which may fit you for the discharge of your duty, Mr. Hooker, Bishops Sanderson, Pearson, and Stillingfleet, Dr. Jackson, and Archbishop Tillotson, cannot be read too often. Happy is the man who can form his style upon the last of these; and, in plain practical preaching, upon the rational, instructive, and familiar way of the Whole Duty of Man.”†

If during a later period new editions of this work have appeared at longer intervals of time, it is the taste of the public, and not the credit of the book itself, which must be called in question. It is a singular circumstance, and one which we believe has seldom attended any other literary production, that up to the present time, when nearly two centuries have elapsed since the publication of “The Whole Duty of Man,” the real authorship of that work has never yet been settled on strong or decisive grounds, and the name of the writer of a book more generally read, and more extensively admired than most others, has remained unknown to the present day. Whatever may be the cause assigned,

---

\* Nelson's Life of Bishop Bull, p. 102, Oxford, 1840.

† Nichols's Anecdotes, vol. iv. p. 168. A writer in the Edinburgh Review (vol. xliv. p. 5,) remarks, speaking of the style of The Whole Duty of Man, and that of the other works by the same author, “After the lapse of a hundred and seventy years, they contain scarcely a word or a phrase which has become superannuated.”

whether it is to be imputed to a natural modesty on the part of the author, an unwillingness to be brought too prominently before the notice of the public, or whether we may ascribe it to a desire on his part to ascertain the possible reception which a work, not bearing on its title-page the name of any author, and depending on its own merits alone, might experience from the public;—it is at least a curious, and we may say, an extraordinary circumstance, allowing the author during his lifetime to have been desirous to preserve his name a secret, that after his death he should have imposed the same obligation of secrecy on his survivors; or supposing this not to be the case, that no one of his friends or connexions should have been willing to draw aside the veil. Such a circumstance, perhaps, can only be ascribed to caprice, certainly a very harmless kind, or to actual ignorance arising from the ingenious manner in which the mystery had been preserved. It was scarcely, however, to be expected, notwithstanding this studied concealment, that a book so much read and so much admired should be permitted to pass without question as to its authorship; and accordingly we find that several individuals, more or less eminent, were at different times brought forward as possessing claims to this distinction. Among those whose pretensions to the honour were more specious, may be named Bishop Fell, Dr. Alles-tree, Bishop Chappel, Archbishop Sterne, and Lady Paking-ton.\* Dr. Henry Hammond has also been mentioned as

---

\* The authorship of this work is also attributed to Dr. Frewen, Archbishop of York (Aubrey's Letters, vol. ii. p. 129), but without the slightest reason, as he died in 1664, and it is evident the author of the Whole Duty of Man was living after that period. The following persons also have been mentioned as possessing some claim, viz. Abraham Woodhead, Obadiah Walker, and Mr. Fulman. Anthony Wood says, “some have attributed ‘The Whole Duty of Man’ to Mr. Abraham Woodhead, others to Mr. Obadiah Walker, both of whom became papists; but most apparent it is that that book was written by a true and sincere friend of the Church of England, and one who held that to be the Catholic Church.” In Oldfield’s Divine Discourses, p. 74, it is

having some title to the authorship, with but little reason, however, as in that case he would scarcely have introduced a work to the public purporting to be written by an unknown person, in a preface to which he subscribed his own name. The same reason will also apply to the claim made for Bishop Fell, who also wrote a preface to the folio edition of the entire works of the author of the Whole Duty of Man, published in 1684, from which it is evident that he was not himself the author.

“Many,” he says, “I doubt not, will now expect an account of the person and condition of the author; but, besides that it is an ill-mannered thing to pry into what is studiously concealed, the gratifying this curiosity would be an injury to the design of these writings, by robbing them of one efficacious motive of conviction. As the case now stands, all men must see and allow, that neither faction, nor interest, nor pride, nor covetousness, nor other temporal advantage, was sought for by the time and pains employed in these discourses. If the reader shall please, instead of useless inquiries, to bring the same devotion and sincerity to the perusal of these discourses, as was employed in the writing of them; if he print in his mind, and transcribe into his practice what he reads, his pains will be answered by suitable advantage. Let him be wise and humble, temperate, chaste, patient, charitable, and devout: live a whole age of great austeries, and maintain an undisturbed serenity in the midst of them: and then he will himself become a lively picture of our Author.”

It is singular enough that Bishop Atterbury, who was so thoroughly versed both in ancient and modern literature, and

---

said, that Mr. Fulman, a native of Penshurst in Kent, and amanuensis to Dr. Hammond, was the author. Fulman however was born in 1632, and the work in question was put into the hands of Dr. Hammond in 1657, and was, as it appears, written some years before. It is also attributed to Dr. Chaplin, of University College, Oxon, by Evelyn, vide Memoirs, vol. iii. p. 318.

so well acquainted with the Oxford press, and the works which issued from it, (Bishop Fell's edition was printed at Oxford), should have been ignorant of the name of the author of this excellent book. In his sermon on 1 Tim. vi. 1, speaking of the best Christians being least known, he says, "And of this there is one, though a very late, yet so remarkable an instance, that, for the honour of our holy faith, I think it may deserve to be particularly mentioned—the instance I mean of the author of 'that excellent book, The Whole Duty of Man,' who took not more care to do good to the world than he did to conceal the doer of it, being contented to approve himself to Him, and Him only, who seeth in secret, and resolved that the praise of men, whether in his life or after his death, should be no part of his reward."

With regard to the claim set up for Dr. Allestree, we believe it rests on little more than the following passage in Granger's Biographical History of England, in which, speaking of Bishop Fell, he says, "He and Dr. Allestree are supposed to have written almost all the books attributed to the author of *The Whole Duty of Man*."<sup>\*</sup> Such evidence as this, it will at once be perceived, is of very insufficient character to establish a claim of authorship.<sup>†</sup> Bishop

---

\* Vol. iii. p. 252, ed. 1804.

† In the Life of Dean Prideaux, published in 1748, it is said that the Dean always considered Bishop Fell as the author of *The Decay of Christian Piety*, and that his reasons for this supposition were, that his uncle, Sir William Morrice, whilst in attendance at court a little after the Restoration, had heard Bishop Fell preach a sermon in the King's Chapel, which pleased him so much that he desired to have a copy of it. This was given to him; and on comparing it with the *Decay of Christian Piety*, which was published some years afterwards, he found it in the very same words in the pages of that publication. It is also stated that Dr. Prideaux was afterwards confirmed in this opinion, for as he attended the press in the Theatre at Oxford, whilst another of the books ascribed to the same author was printing, he often found whole lines, and sometimes two or three together, blotted out, and interlineations in their stead, which he knew to be in Bishop Fell's handwriting, and this was a liberty it was unlikely any one but the author would have taken.

Chappel\* also has been named as the writer of this work. In the Biographia Britannica it is stated, "The author of this most excellent book, 'The Whole Duty of Man,' was Bishop Chappel, who, dying in 1648 at Derby, was buried at Dilstrop in Notts. The MS. of it was transmitted by Dr. Sterne, afterwards Archbishop of York, to Dr. Fell, Dean of Christ Church, who having read it beforehand to his pupils, occasioned several to say that the said Dr. Sterne was the author; as also others did, by means of a copy of Bishop Chappel's MS. being found in Lady Pakington's closet after her death, that she wrote it." The claim of Bishop Chappel, if it depends only upon the statements contained in the

---

So that his opinion on the whole was, that the book called the "Whole Duty of Man" was written by an author still unknown; but that all the other books assigned to the same author were written by Bishop Fell and Dr. Allestree; and that when the first of them, either by design or mistake of the Bookseller, came forth under the name of the author of "The Whole Duty of Man," they suffered all the others to come out under the same disguise, the better to conceal what they intended should be a secret. And as to what Bishop Fell says in a preface to a folio edition at Oxford, in which all these books are comprised together, where he mentions the author as lately dead, it was generally understood to be meant of Dr. Allestree, who was then lately deceased. Dr. Lort (whose opinion is cited in Nichols's Anecdotes) observes on this statement, "This is indeed a very singular account from Dr. Prideaux by an anonymous author."

\* Bishop of Cork: Peck, (*Disiderata Curiosa*,) in a note to the Life of Chappel, gives the following extract from a letter written by Mr. Beaupré Bell: "'Tis certain The Whole Duty of Man was written by one who suffered by the troubles in Ireland; and some lines in that piece give great grounds to conjecture that Bishop Chappel was the author." "Thus we see," observes Peck, "that prelate, as well as many other great and good persons, comes in for part of the credit of that excellent book; yet there is no explicit evidence of his having been the author of it. It appears indeed to have been written before the death of Charles I., although it was not published till 1657, (this is a mistake, arising doubtless from confounding the date of the Preface with that of the book itself, which was not published until 1658), and the manner of it is agreeable enough to that prelate's plain and easy way of writing; but then there can be no reason given, why his name should be suppressed in the title-page, when a posthumous work of his was actually published with it but a few years before."

foregoing extract, can scarcely be termed very well founded, since we learn from them that out of the same train of circumstances which gave origin to the claim of Bishop Chapel, sprung also a similar claim for two other individuals, Archbishop Sterne and Lady Pakington.\* The pretensions

---

\* It is stated in a passage in Aubrey's Letters, vol. ii. p. 125, that a MS. copy of the Whole Duty of Man, in the handwriting of Lady Pakington, was found amongst her papers after her death; this, however, is saying but little towards establishing a claim of authorship, if we recollect that this lady was a very devout person, possessing much acquaintance with the divines of the day, and therefore very likely to have been favoured with a sight of the work in question before it was printed, and also to have been allowed to take a copy of it for her own use whilst in that state. The following circumstances, however, render it still more unlikely that this lady was the author. The celebrated Dr. H. Hammond, for several years previous to his death, and during the very time of the publication of The Whole Duty of Man, was residing in the house of Lady Pakington; he lived on terms of the greatest friendship with her, and acted also as a spiritual adviser; it is therefore utterly improbable that if she really composed the work in question, she should not have told him; and yet it is very evident, from the Preface prefixed to it of which he was the author, that he was unacquainted with the name of the person who wrote The Whole Duty of Man.

And if we are reminded that Dr. Hickes, in the Dedication of his Saxon Grammar to the grandson of this lady, says, "She deserved to be called and to be esteemed the Authoress of The Whole Duty of Man," we reply, that it was perfectly natural for the zealous friends of Lady Pakington to endeavour to found a claim of authorship on the single circumstance, however slight and insufficient it might be in itself, of a copy of the work having been discovered in her handwriting.

The strongest evidence in favour of Lady Pakington is in the following note:

Oct. 13, 1698.—Mr. Thomas Caulton, Vicar of Worksop, in Nottinghamshire, in the presence of Wm. Thornton, Esq. and his lady, Mrs. Heathcote, Mrs. Ashe, Mrs. Caulton, and John Hewit, Rector of Harthill, declared the words following:

“ November 5th, 1689.

“ At Shire-Oaks, Mrs. Eyre took me up into her chamber after dinner, and told me that her daughter Moyser, of Beverly, was dead. Among other things concerning the private affairs of the family, she told me who was the author of the ‘*Whole Duty of Man*,’ at the same time pulling out of a private drawer a MS. tied together, and stitched in octavo, which she declared was the original copy written by Lady Pakington her mother, who disowned ever having written the other books imputed

of the last named person are overthrown by the single fact, that the author is spoken of by Bishop Fell, who was evidently acquainted with him, in the masculine gender. With regard to Archbishop Sterne, the case to be made out is somewhat stronger, and although it must be confessed that the evidence collected in favour of his claim is only circumstantial, yet the chain of reasoning is far from incomplete. From the nature and character of this evidence, we prefer giving it in the form of an Appendix, rather than inserting it in the body of the Preface, which we shall conclude with a character of the Whole Duty of Man drawn by one of the most distinguished writers of our own time, one who has not only thoroughly explored the richest mines of the literature of his own country, but has himself also opened new veins equally rich and valuable. We must, however, protest against the assertion contained in the last clause of the extract, and we hope our readers will join us in the protest, when they have examined the evidence in favour of the claim of Archbishop Sterne, which is offered in the following Appendix. Speaking of this work,\* Dr. Southey observes, "A good old book, which contains the substance of a course of sermons, addressed in the plainest language to plain people, and setting before them those duties which they are called upon to perform in the ordinary course of life. The author was a person of sound judgment and sober piety, who sought to make his parishioners practical Christians and not professing ones ; and that he was humble minded himself there is conclusive proof ; for he concealed his name, and no inquiries have ever yet been able to ascertain it."

---

to be by the same author, excepting '*The Decay of Christian Piety*.' She added too, that it had been perused in MS. by Dr. Covel, Master of Trinity College, Cambridge, Dr. Stamford, Prebendary of York, and Mr. Banks, Rector of the Great Church at Hull.

Mr. Caulton declared this upon his death-bed, two days before his decease.

"W. T.  
J. H."

\* Life of Cowper, vol. i. p. 117.

## APPENDIX TO EDITOR'S PREFACE.

WE shall first present our readers with a catalogue of the different pieces written by the author of the Whole Duty of Man, with the dates of the first editions.

I. Whole Duty of Man. The first edition is entitled *The Practice of Christian Graces, or the Whole Duty of Man*, and printed for T. Garthwaite, 1658, with frontispiece by Hollar, to which is prefixed a letter by Dr. H. Hammond, dated March 7, 1657.

II. *The Gentleman's Calling*, printed for T. Garthwaite, 1660, with a letter prefixed by Dr. Humphrey Henchman, dated October 27, 1659.

III. *The causes of the Decay of Christian Piety*, written by the Author of the Whole Duty of Man, 1667. The MS. was conveyed to Garthwaite by H. E. in a letter prefixed, dated June 7, 1667. In the Preface to this work the Author quotes the Syriac and Septuagint versions of the Old Testament, and also the original Hebrew.

IV. *The Ladies' Calling*, printed at Oxford, 1673. The editor of this work is said to be Dr. John Fell, who prefixed an Address to the Reader, from which it appears that he was then totally unacquainted with the author.

V. *The Government of the Tongue*, printed at Oxford, 1674. Probably at this time the author was known to Dr. Fell.

VI. *The Art of Contentment*, printed at Oxford, 1675.

VII. *The Lively Oracles given to us, &c*, Oxford, 1678.

A collected edition of the Genuine Works of the Author of the Whole Duty of Man was printed at Oxford, 1684. It appears from the Preface to this edition, that the editor, Dr. Fell, was then acquainted with the author, for he gives a character of him, and speaks of him as being dead.

The following are the circumstances which seem to throw an air of probability over the claim of authorship alleged for Archbishop Sterne. Some of these, it will be seen, have already been alluded to:

The Author of the Whole Duty of Man was the author of all the six subsequent pieces, which were collected together in one volume, folio, printed at Oxford, 1684.

The advocates for Lady Pakington attribute only two works to her, the Whole Duty of Man, and the Decay of Christian Piety.

Bishop Fell states, that the Author was then dead, 1684.

Archbishop Sterne died June 28, 1683.

He is spoken of by Bishop Fell in the masculine gender.

Therefore not Lady Pakington.

The Author was acquainted with the learned languages, Greek, Hebrew, Syriac.

So was Archbishop Sterne, who assisted Walton in the publication of the Polyglot Bible.

Timothy Garthwaite was the publisher of the first edition of the Whole Duty of Man; the Gentleman's Calling; the Causes of the Decay of Christian Piety; and was also the publisher of Walton's Polyglot. It is therefore probable that he (Archbishop Sterne) would send his own MS. to the same publisher.

Mr. Pickering, the publisher of the last London edition, (1842), has in his possession a copy of the edition of The Whole Duty of Man, Lond. 1659, in which is written in a cotemporary hand as follows: “*The Author of this is Dr. Sterne, Master of Jesus College in Cambridge.*”

We are perfectly aware that the foregoing circumstances, considered separately, can possess but little weight, and even when taken collectively, perhaps cannot avail much towards establishing the claim brought forward in favour of Archbishop Sterne; but nevertheless, in the absence of better evidence, with regard to the production of so remarkable a work, the few and trifling circumstances which we have mentioned may prove, in some degree, interesting. However, we have not yet exhausted the evidence on this subject. The following extract from a number of the Gentleman's Magazine of rather early date, may perhaps be considered to possess testimony of a stronger character, a supposition, on our part, which has induced us to place it as the last link in our chain (we wish it were stronger) of evidence.—The Article is entitled “*Discovery of the real Author of the Whole Duty of Man.*” Some time ago was put into my hands an half sheet of paper, containing (as it is there expressed in the title), ‘A Brief paraphrase on the Lord's Prayer, the author, Dr. Sterne, now Archbishop of York.’ Upon my perusal of it, I found it to be word for word exactly the same with that which is published in the Whole Duty of Man. The invocation, petitions, and conclusion, distinct, separate, and the title of each inclosed in hooks, thus:

{ Our Father which art in Heaven. }

It is so in the best printed editions of that work. The hand an old secretary, which was much used an age or more ago. The spelling the same likewise, different in many words from the present spelling of them. The appearance of the paper and writing give assurance of their long standing, not improbably as long ago as the time, or very near it, when the Whole Duty of Man was first published. There were, at that time, strong reasons why the author of that work desired to conceal his name. Those reasons have long since ceased. The work would now do credit to the memory of the author, if known; nor would the knowledge of the author give any one prejudice to the work. The time when Archbishop Sterne lived answers very well to the time when that work was published; he died a very old man, A. D. 1683. And if piety and zeal for true religion, which strongly characterise the author of that work, was also the character of Archbishop Sterne, I think we may, with high probability, conclude him to have been the author of that, and the other works under that name.” Gent's. Mag. 1772, p. 611.

We subjoin a short account of the Life of Archbishop Sterne, extracted with some few alterations, from Walker's Sufferings of the Clergy. It will be seen by it what cruelty and persecution he suffered on account of his loyalty to his sovereign, and devotion to our holy church, at the hands of the atrocious and sanguinary party, who consummated their guilt and wickedness by murdering their king, and overthrowing the Church of their native land.

Richard Sterne, D.D. descended from a family of that name in Suffolk, was born at Mansfield in Notts: became scholar of Trinity College in the University of Cambridge, was afterwards elected Fellow of Bennet College in the same University, and ultimately Master of Jesus College. Upon the breaking out of the rebellion he was very active in sending the University plate to the king, for which act of loyalty he was seized by Cromwell, together with Dr. Beale, Master of St. John's, and Dr. Martin, Master of Queen's, and conveyed to London. On their arrival in the metropolis in express defiance of an order issued by the House of Lords for their immediate imprisonment in the Tower, they were paraded in insolent triumph by Cromwell and his myrmidons through Bartholomew Fair, and as far as Temple Bar, and from thence back to the Tower, "on purpose that they might be hooted at, or stoned by, the rabble rout." Since which time, now above three years together (says an account hereof then written) they have been hurried up and down, from one prison to another, at excessive and unreasonable charges and fees exacted from them, far beyond their abilities to defray, having all their goods plundered, and their masterships and livings taken from them, which should preserve them from famishing. And though in all this time there was never any accusation brought, much less proved against any of them, yet have they suffered intolerable imprisonment ever since, both by land and water, especially that in the ship, where for ten days together, they with many other gentlemen of great rank, were kept under deck, without liberty to come to breathe in the common air, except at the courtesy of the rude sailors, which oftentimes was denied them. In which condition they were more like galley-slaves than freeborn subjects, and men of such quality and condition, and had been so indeed, might some have had their wills, who were bargaining with the merchants to sell them to Algiers, or as bad a place, as hath been since notoriously known upon no false or fraudulent information. Besides which, there are some other circumstances which rendered their usage of Dr. Sterne and his fellow-sufferers in a peculiar manner barbarous and inhuman. For when they were first seized, they were used with all possible scorn and contempt; Cromwell was more particularly insolent towards them, and when one of them desired a little time to put up some linen, told him, *that it was not in his commission.*

In the villages, as they passed from Cambridge to London, *the people were called by some of their agents to come and abuse and revile them.* They were also led leisurely through the midst of Bartholomew Fair;

as they passed along, they were entertained with exclamations, reproaches, scorns, and curses ; and it was a great providence, considering the prejudice which the people had to them, that they found no worse usage. After their confinement, though they often petitioned to be heard, yet they could never obtain either a trial or their liberty. They had been a full year under restraint in other prisons, when they were at length, August 11, 1643, by order of the parliament, sent on board the ship, the name of which was the Prosperous Sailor, then lying at Wapping. As they went to Billingsgate to take water, a fellow was like to have been committed for saying, that they looked like honest men. But another of the true stamp, looking these grave, learned divines in the face, reviled them, saying, that they did not look like Christians ; and prayed, *that they might break their necks as they went down the stairs to take water.* This harsh usage they found by land, but yet they found far worse by water. Being come on shipboard, they were instantly put under hatches, where the decks were so low that they could not stand upright, and yet were denied stools to sit on, or so much as a burthen of straw to lye on. Into this Little Ease, in a small ship, they crowd no less than eighty prisoners of quality ; and that they might stifle one another, having no more breath than what they sucked from one another's mouth, most maliciously, and (certainly) to a murtherous intent, they stop up all the small auger-holes, and all other inlets which might relieve them with fresh air. An act of such horrid barbarism that nor age, nor story, nor rebellion can parallel ! Whilst Dr. Sterne thus continued in durance, and if I do not mistake the day, March 13, 1643, he was by a warrant from the Earl of Manchester ejected from the Mastership, and one Mr. Laing substituted in his room, whom that Earl coming in person to the College Chapel put into the master's seat, and with some other formalities gave him the investiture of this Headship, April 12, 1644 ; of which he was afterwards himself dispossessed, Nov. 14, 1650, for refusing the engagement. After this Dr. Sterne was removed from the ship, but still kept under confinement in some other prison ; only when the blessed martyred Archbishop (whose chaplain he was) suffered on Tower Hill, he was allowed to attend him on the scaffold, and perform the last offices of piety about him. At length having lost all he had, and suffered to the last degree for his loyalty, he was permitted to have his liberty. After which he lived obscurely until the Restoration, upon which he became Bishop of Carlisle, and in 1664 was from thence translated to the see of York, in possession of which he died in 1683, in the 87th year of his age. He was a man of eminent worth and abilities, a person of unshaken loyalty, and had the honour to assist in the noble undertaking of the Polyglot." Walker's Sufferings of the Clergy, Pt. 2, 147.

The following interesting Letter, addressed by Archbishop Sterne to a former pupil who had relieved his necessities, and giving an account of his sufferings during his confinement, confirms the relation of Walker, and presents a striking picture of the insatiate rapacity and unrelenting

cruelty of that execrable party, who, during the rebellion, endeavoured to gratify their thirst for plunder, and hatred of all that was good, and righteous, and holy, by violating every law of God and man.

“ GOOD MR. SAYER,

“ UPON Saturday last I received your letter by the same hand to which you delivered it: in it I read that loving and good affection which I ever found in you and from you; and together with it, I received the real expression of it, whereby I am more ways than one become your debtor. The seasonableness, and especially the freeness, of the courtesy made it double and triple to itself, and would have bound me to entertain it, though I had less occasion than at this time I have, as things are and have been with me. This is now the fourteenth month of my imprisonment; nineteen weeks in the Tower, thirty weeks in the Lord Peter's House, ten days in the ships, and seven weeks here in Ely House. The very dry fees and rents of these several prisons have amounted to above £100, besides diet and all other charges, which have been various and excessive, as in prisons is usual. For the better enabling me to maintain myself in prison, and my family at home, they have seized upon all my means which they can lay their hands on. At my Living near Cambridge, they have not only taken the whole crop, that is, in a manner the whole benefit of the Living, (for the rest is very little) but plundered and sold whatever goods of mine they found there, even to the poultry in the yard; allowing me not so much as to pay for his dinner that served the cure. They have robbed also the child that is yet unborn of the clothes it should be wrapped in. But upon my wife's address to the committee at Cambridge, they had so much humanity, as to make the sequestrators (though with much ado) restore them to her again. They have also forbidden our College Tenants (all within their verge) to pay us any rents, (for the better upholding of learning and the nurseries thereof.) If I have any thing else that escapes their fingers, it is in such fingers out of which I cannot get it; and that also I owe to the same goodness of the times. So that if my friends' love had not made my credit better than it deserves to be, and supplied my occasions, I should have kept but an hungry and cold house both here and at home. And all this while I have never been so much as spoken withal, or called either to give or receive an account why I am here. Nor is any thing laid to my charge, (not so much as the general crime of being a malignant) no, not in the warrant for my commitment. What hath been wanting in human justice, hath been (I praise God) supplied by Divine mercy. Health of body, and patience, and cheerfulness of mind, I have not wanted, no, nor on shipboard; where we lay (the first night) without any thing under or over us, but the bare decks, and the clothes on our backs: and after we had some of us got beds, were not able (when it rained) to lie dry in them; and when it was fair weather, were sweltered with heat, and stifled with our own breaths; there being of us in that one small Ipswich coal-ship (so low built

too, that we could not walk, nor stand upright in it) within one or two of threescore; whereof six Knights and eight Doctors of Divinity, and divers Gentlemen of very good worth, that would have been sorry to have seen their servants (nay, their dogs) no better accommodated. Yet among all that company, I do not remember that I saw one sad or dejected countenance all the while, so strong is God, when we are weakest. But to return to yourself, you see what a good debtor you are like to have of me, though of that I gave your friend fair warning when he was first with me, telling him (and that truly) that I was never in a condition less deserving to be trusted with money. I have only given him a note of my hand for the receipt of so much borrowed of you. As you have limited me no time of payment; so neither have I prescribed you a time of forbearance, but do acknowledge it due upon demand. If you please to set any time, or to require any further obligation, (for mortality's sake) I shall, upon notice from you, observe and perform accordingly. I have nothing more to add, but my loving respects to yourself, and your best wife, (though unknown) your good mother, and all yours (God bless them!) so praying God to send us a happy meeting, and a speedy good end to these miserable distractions of our Church and kingdom; I shall still subscribe myself (seeing you still acknowledge that relation).\*

"Your loving Tutor, &c.

"RICH. STERNE."

*Ely House, Oct. 2, 1643.*

After his release from confinement, Dr. Sterne retired to Stevenage in Hertfordshire, where he kept a private school for the support of his family, until the Restoration. Soon after this event, he was nominated to the Bishopric of Carlisle, Oct. 9, 1660. Bishop Kennet says of him, "He was promoted to the Bishopric of Carlisle on account of his piety, and great learning, and prudence, as being indeed not less exemplary in his notions and conversation, than if he himself had expected martyrdom from the hour of his attendance upon his patron Archbishop Laud." In the succeeding year, it appears that he was one of the three Bishops to whom the convocation committed the task of revising the Book of Common Prayer. In the year 1664, on the death of Archbishop Frewen, he was promoted to the see of York, where he continued until his death, June 18, 1683, which took place at Bishopsthorp, in the 87th year of his age. "He left behind him," says Le Neve, "the character of a man of eminent worth and abilities; a person of unshaken loyalty; his behaviour worthy of his high station; he distinguished himself by his accurate book of Logic, and had particularly the honour to assist in the noble undertaking of the Polyglot Bible." He was also the author of some

---

\* Le Neve's Lives of the Bishops, vol. i. p. 247.

Latin verses published in several different collections, and wrote a Comment upon Psalm 103, 8vo. London, 1649. He appears to have been a considerable benefactor to the University of Cambridge, having given £40 per annum for the foundation of four scholarships in Jesus College, of which he was master, and having also founded two scholarships of £10 per annum each at Bennet College, of which he was once a Fellow. He also contributed largely towards the rebuilding of St. Paul's Cathedral, London. It is perhaps not unworthy of remark, that the celebrated Laurence Sterne is said to have been his great-grandson.

There is extant a finely engraved mezzotint portrait of the Archbishop, by F. Place; for more particulars of him, vide Querela Cantabrigiensis at the end of the Mercurius Rusticus, and Master's History of Corpus Christi College, Cambridge.

---

## DR. HAMMOND'S LETTER

TO MR. GARTHWAIT, THE PUBLISHER OF THE FIRST EDITION.

SIR :

You needed not any intercession to recommend this task to me which brought its invitations and reward with it. I very willingly read over all the sheets, both of the DISCOURSE and the DEVOTIONS annexed, and find great cause to bless God for both, not discerning what is wanting in any part of either, to render it, with God's blessing, most sufficient, and proper to the great end designed, the spiritual supplies and advantages of all those that shall be exercised therein. The subject matter of it is indeed what the title undertakes, THE WHOLE DUTY OF MAN, set down in all the branches, with those advantages of brevity and partitions, to invite, and support, and engage the reader, that condescension to the meanest capacities, but withal, that weight of spiritual arguments, wherein the best proficients will be glad to be assisted, that it seems to me equally fitted for both sorts of readers, which shall bring with them a sincere desire of their own, either present or future advantages. The *Devotion* part in the

conclusion is no way inferior, being a seasonable aid to every man's infirmities, and hath extended itself very particularly to all our principal concerns. The *Introduction* hath supplied the place of a *Preface*, which you seem to desire from me, and leaves me no more to add, but my prayers to God, "that the Author which hath taken care to convey so liberal an alms to the Corban so secretly, may not miss to be rewarded openly, in the visible power, and benefit of this work, on the hearts of the whole nation, which was never in more need of such supplies as are here afforded." That his all-sufficient Grace will bless the seed sown, and give an abundant increase, is the humblest request of

Your assured Friend,  
H. HAMMOND.

*March 7, 1657.*

## A PREFACE

TO THE ENSUING TREATISE, SHOWING THE NECESSITY OF  
CARING FOR THE SOUL.

1. THE only intent of the ensuing treatise is, to be a short and plain direction to the very meanest readers, to behave themselves so in this world, that they may be happy for ever in the next. But because it is in vain to tell men their Duty, till they be persuaded of the necessity of performing it, I shall, before I proceed to the particulars required of every Christian, endeavour to win them to the Practice of one general Duty preparatory to all the rest ; and that is, the Consideration and CARE of their own SOULS, without which they will never think themselves much concerned in the other.

2. Man, we know, is made up of two parts, a body and a soul ; the body only the husk or shell of the soul, a lump of flesh, subject to many diseases and pains while it lives, and at last to death itself ; and then it is so far from being valued, that it is not to be endured above ground, but laid to rot in the earth. Yet to this viler part of us we perform a great deal of care ; all the labour and toil we are at, is to maintain that. But the more precious part, the Soul, is little thought of, no care taken how it fares, but as if it were a thing that nothing concerned us, is left quite neglected, never considered by us.

3. This carelessness of the Soul is the root of all the sin we commit, and therefore whosoever intends to set upon a Christian course, must in the first place amend that. To the doing whereof, there needs no deep learning, or extraordinary parts ; the simplest man living (that is not a natural fool) hath understanding enough for it, if he will but act in this by the same rules of common Reason, whereby he proceeds in his worldly business. I will therefore now briefly set down some of those Motives, which use to stir up our care of any outward thing, and then apply them to the soul.

4. There be four things especially, which use to awake our care ; the first is the worth of the thing, the second the usefulness of it to us, when we cannot part with it without great damage and mischief, the third the great danger of it, and the fourth the likelihood that our care will not be in vain, but that it will preserve the thing cared for.

5. For the first, we know our care of any worldly thing is answerable to the worth of it ; what is of **THE WORTH OF THE SOUL.** greatest price, we are most watchful to preserve, and most fearful to lose ; no man locks up dung in his chest, but his money, or what he counts precious, he doth. Now in this respect the Soul deserves more care than all the things in the world besides, for it is infinitely more worth ; first, in that it is made after the image of God, it was God that breathed into man this breath of life, GEN. ii. 7. Now God being of the greatest excellency and worth, the more any thing is like him, the more it is to be valued. But it is sure that no creature upon the earth is at all like God, but the Soul of man, and therefore nothing ought to have so much of our care. Secondly, the Soul never dies. We use to prize things according to their durableness ; what is most lasting is most worth. Now the Soul is a thing that will last for ever ; when wealth, beauty, strength, nay, our very bodies themselves fade away, the Soul still continues. Therefore in that respect also, the Soul is of the greatest worth ; and then what strange madness is it for us to neglect them as we do ! we can spend days, and weeks, and months, and years, nay, our whole lives in hunting after a little wealth of this world, which is of no durance or continuance, and in the mean time let this great durable treasure, our Souls, be stolen from us by the devil.

6. A second motive to our care of any thing, is the usefulness of it to us, or the great mischief we shall have by the loss of it. Common reason teaches us this in all things of this life. If our hairs fall, we do not much regard, because we can be well enough without them ; but if we are

**THE MISERY OF LOSING THE SOUL.**

in danger to lose our eyes or limbs, we think all the care we can take little enough to prevent it, because we know it will be a great misery. But certainly there is no misery to be compared to that misery that follows the loss of the Soul. It is true, we cannot lose our Souls, in one sense, that is, so lose them, that they shall cease to be ; but we may lose them in another, that we should wish to lose them even in that ; that is, we may lose that happy estate to which they were created, and plunge them into the extremest misery. In a word, we may lose them in hell, whence there is no fetching them back, and so they are lost for ever. Nay, in this consideration our very bodies are concerned, those darlings of ours, for which all our care is laid out ; for they must certainly after death be raised again, and be joined again to the Soul, and take part with it in whatever state ; if then our care for the body take up all our time and thoughts, and leave us none to bestow on the poor Soul, it is sure the Soul will for want of that care be made for ever miserable. But it is as sure, that that very body must be so too. And therefore, if you have any true kindness to your body, show it by taking care for your Souls. Think with yourselves, how you will be able to endure everlasting burnings. If a small spark of fire, lighting on the least part of the body be so intolerable, what will it be to have the whole cast into the hottest flames ? And that not for some few hours or days, but for ever ? so that when you have spent many thousands of years in that unspeakable torment, you shall be no nearer coming out of it, than you were the first day you went in ; think of this, I say, and think this withal, that this will certainly be the end of neglecting the Soul, and therefore afford it some care, if it be but in pity to the body, that must bear a part in its miseries.

7. The third motive to the care of any thing is its being in danger ; now a thing may be in danger two ways : first, by enemies from without ; this is the case of the sheep, which is still in danger of being devoured by wolves ; and we know that

THE DANGER THE  
SOUL IS IN.

makes the shepherd so much more watchful over it. Thus it is with the Soul, which is in a great deal of danger, in respect of its enemies ; those we know are the world, the flesh, and the devil ; which are all such noted enemies to it, that the very first act we do in behalf of our Souls, is to vow a continual war against them. This we all do in our baptism ; and whoever makes any truce with any of them, is false not only to his Soul, but to his vow also ; becomes a forsaken creature : a consideration well worthy our laying to heart. But that we may the better understand what danger the soul is in, let us a little consider the quality of these enemies.

8. In a war, you know, there are divers things that make an enemy terrible : the first is subtilty and cunning, by which alone many victories have been won ; and in this respect the devil is a dangerous adversary ; he long since gave sufficient proof of his subtilty, in beguiling our first parents, who yet were much wiser than we are ; and therefore no wonder if he deceive and cheat us. Secondly, the watchfulness and diligence of an enemy makes him the more to be feared ; and here the devil exceeds : it is his trade and business to destroy us, and he is no loiterer at it, he goes up and down seeking whom he may devour, 1 PET. v. 8, he watches all opportunities of advantage against us, with such diligence, that he will be sure never to let any slip him. Thirdly, an enemy near us is more to be feared than one at a distance : for if he be far off, we may have time to arm, and prepare ourselves against him, but if he be near, he may steal on us unawares. And of this sort is the flesh, it is an enemy, at our doors, shall I say ? nay, in our bosoms, it is always near us, to take occasion of doing us mischiefs. Fourthly, the baser and falser an enemy is, the more dangerous. He that hides his malice under the show of friendship, will be able to do a great deal the more hurt. And this again is the flesh, which, like Joab to Abner, 2 SAM. iii. 27, pretends to speak peaceably to us, but wounds us to death ; it is forward to purvey for pleasures and delights for us, and so seems very kind, but it has a hook under that

bait, and if we bite at it we are lost. Fifthly, the number of enemies makes them more terrible ; and the world is a vast army against us ; there is no state or condition in it, nay, scarce a creature which doth not at some time or other fight against the Soul : the honours of the world seek to wound us by pride, the wealth by covetousness, the prosperity of it tempts us to forget God, the adversities to murmur at him. Our very table becomes a snare to us, our meat draws us to gluttony, our drink to drunkenness, our company, nay, our nearest friends often bear a part in this war against us, whilst, either by their example or persuasions, they entice us to sin.

9. Consider all this, and then tell me whether a Soul thus beset hath leisure to sleep : even Delilah could tell Samson, it was time to awake when the Philistines were upon him. And Christ tells us, *If the good man of the house had known in what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken up,* MATT. xxiv.

43. But we live in the midst of thieves, and therefore must look for them every hour, and yet who is there among us that hath that common providence for this precious part of him, his Soul, which he hath for his house, or indeed the meanest thing that belongs to him ? I fear our Souls may say so to us, as Christ to his disciples, *What ! could ye not watch with me one hour ?* MATT. xxvi. 40. For I doubt it would pose many of us to tell when we bestowed one hour on them, though we know them to be continually beset with most dangerous enemies. And then, alas ! what is like to be the case of these poor Souls, when their adversaries bestow so much care and diligence to destroy them, and we will afford none to preserve them ? surely the same as of a besieged town, where no watch or guard is kept, which is certain to fall a prey to the enemy. Consider this ye that forget God, nay, ye that forget yourselves, lest *he pluck you away, and there be none to deliver you,* PSALM l. 22.

10. But I told you there was a second way whereby a thing may be in danger, and that is, from some disorder or

distemper within itself. This is often the case of our bodies, they are not only liable to outward violence, but they are within themselves sick and diseased. And then we can be sensible enough that they are in danger, and need not to be taught to seek out for means to recover them. But this is also the case of the Soul, we reckon those parts of the body diseased, that do not rightly perform their office ; we account it a sick palate that tastes not aright, a sick stomach that digests not. And thus it is with the Soul when its parts do not rightly perform their offices.

11. The parts of the Soul are especially these three : the **UNDERSTANDING**, the **WILL**, and the **AFFECTIONS**. And that these are disordered, there needs little proof ; let any man look seriously into his own heart, and consider how little it is he knows of spiritual things, and then tell me whether his understanding be not dark ? How much apter is he to will evil than good, and then tell me whether his will be not crooked ? And how strong desires he hath after the pleasures of sin, and what cold and faint ones towards God and goodness, and then tell me whether his affections be not disordered, and rebellious even against the voice of his own reason within him ? Now, as in bodily diseases, the first step to the cure is to know the cause of the sickness, so likewise here it is very necessary for us to know how the Soul first fell into this diseased condition, and that I shall now briefly tell you.

12. God created the first man, Adam, without sin, and endued his Soul with the full knowledge of his Duty ; and with such a strength,

**THE FIRST COVENANT.** that he might, if he would, perform all that was required of him. Having thus created him, he makes a covenant or agreement with him to this purpose, that if he continued in obedience to God without committing sin ; then first, that strength of Soul, which he then had, should still be continued to him ; and secondly, that he should never die, but be taken up into heaven, there to be happy for ever. But on the other side, if he committed sin and dis-

obeyed God, then both he and all his children after him should lose that knowledge and that perfect strength which enabled him to do all that God required of him: and secondly, should be subject to death, and not only so, but to eternal damnation in Hell.

13. This was the agreement made with Adam and all mankind in him (which we usually call the First Covenant) upon which God gave Adam a particular commandment, which was no more but this, that he should not eat of one only tree of that garden wherein he had placed him. But he by the persuasion of the devil eats of that tree, disobeys God, and so brings that curse upon himself, and all his posterity. And so by that one sin of his, he lost both the full knowledge of his Duty, and the power of performing it. And we being born after his image, did so likewise, and so are become both ignorant in discerning what we ought to do, and weak and unable to the doing of it, having a backwardness to all good, and an aptness, and readiness to all evil; like a sick stomach, which loathes all wholesome food, and longs after such trash as may nourish the disease.

14. And now you see where we got this sickness of Soul, and likewise that it is like to prove a deadly one, and therefore I presume I need say no more, to assure you our souls are in danger. It is more likely you will from this description think them hopeless. But that you may not from that conceit excuse your neglect of them, I shall hasten to show you the contrary, by proceeding to the fourth motive of care.

15. That fourth motive is the likelihood that our care will not be in vain, but that it will be a means to preserve the thing cared for; where this is wanting, it disheartens our care.

THAT OUR CARE  
WILL NOT BE IN  
VAIN.

A physician leaves his patient when he sees him past hope, as knowing it is then in vain to give him any thing; but on the contrary, when he sees hope of recovery, he plies him with medicines. Now in this very respect we have a great deal of reason to take care of our Souls,

for they are not so far gone, but they may be recovered, nay, it is certain they will, if we do our parts towards it.

16. For though by that sin of Adam all mankind were under the sentence of condemnation, yet it pleased God so far to pity our misery, as to give us his Son, and in him to make a new Covenant with us, after we had broken the first.

17. This second Covenant was made with Adam and us in

THE SECOND  
COVENANT.

him, presently after his fall, and is briefly contained in those words, GEN. iii. 15, where God declares, that *the seed of the woman shall break the serpent's head*; and this was made up, as the first was, of some mercies to be afforded by God, and some duties to be performed by us.

18. God therein promises to send his only Son, who is God equal with himself, to earth, to become man like unto us in all things, sin only excepted, and he to do for us these several things.

19. First, to make known to us the whole Will of his Father; in the performance whereof we shall be sure to be accepted and rewarded by him. And this was one great part of his business, which he performed in those many sermons and precepts we find set down in the Gospel. And herein he is our Prophet, it being the work of a Prophet of old not only to foretell, but to teach. Our duty in this particular is to hearken diligently to him, to be most ready and desirous to learn that will of God which he came from Heaven to reveal to us.

20. The second thing He was to do for us, was to satisfy God for our sins, not only that one of Adam, but all the sins of all mankind that truly repent and amend, and by this means to obtain for us forgiveness of sins, the favour of God, and so to redeem us from Hell and eternal damnation, which was the punishment due to our sin. All this he did for us by his death. He offered up himself a sacrifice for the sins of all those who heartily bewail, and forsake them. And in this He is our Priest, it being the Priest's office to offer sacrifice for the sins of the people. Our duty in this particular is, first,

truly and heartily to repent us of, and forsake our sins, without which they will never be forgiven us, though Christ have died. Secondly, steadfastly to believe, that if we do that, we shall have the benefits of that sacrifice of his ; all our sins, how many and great soever, shall be forgiven us, and we saved from those eternal punishments which were due unto us for them. Another part of the priest's office was blessing and praying for the people ; and this also Christ performs to us. It was his special commission from his Father to bless us, as St. Peter tells us, Acts iii. 26 : *God sent his Son Jesus to bless you ;* and the following words show wherein that blessing consists, *in turning away every one of you from his iniquity :* those means which he has used for the turning us from our sins are to be reckoned of all other the greatest blessings ; and for the other part, that of praying, that he not only performed on earth, but continues still to do it in Heaven, *He sits on the right hand of God, and makes request for us,* Rom. viii. 34. Our duty herein is, not to resist this unspeakable blessing of his, but to be willing to be thus blest in the being turned from our sins, and not to make void and fruitless all his prayers and intercessions for us, which will never prevail for us whilst we continue in them.

21. The third thing that Christ was to do for us, was to enable us, or give us strength to do what God requires of us. This he doth, first, by taking off from the hardness of the Law given to Adam, which was, never to commit the least sin, upon pain of damnation, and requiring of us only an honest and hearty endeavour to do what we are able, and where we fail, accepting of sincere repentance. Secondly, by sending his holy Spirit into our hearts to govern and rule us, to give us strength to overcome temptations to Sin, and to do all that He under the Gospel requires of us. And in this he is our KING, it being the office of a King to govern and rule, and to subdue enemies. Our duty in this particular is to give up ourselves obedient subjects of his, to be governed and ruled by him, to obey all his laws, not to take part with any rebel,

that is, not to cherish any one sin, but diligently to pray for his grace to enable us to subdue all, and then carefully to make use of it to that purpose.

22. Lastly, He has purchased for all that faithfully obey him, an eternal glorious inheritance, the kingdom of Heaven, whither he is gone before to take possession for us. Our duty herein is to be exceeding careful, that we forfeit not our parts in it, which we shall certainly do, if we continue impenitent in any sin. Secondly, not to fasten our affections on this world, but to raise them according to the precept of the Apostle, *COL. iii. 2, set your affection on things above, and not on things on the earth;* continually longing to come to the possession of that blessed inheritance of ours, in comparison whereof all things here below should seem vile and mean to us.

23. This is the sum of that SECOND COVENANT we are now under, wherein you see what Christ hath done, how he executes those three great offices of KING, PRIEST, and PROPHET: as also what is required of us, without our faithful performance of which, all that he hath done shall never stand us in any stead; for he will never be a Priest to save any, who take him not as well for their prophet to teach, and their king to rule them; nay, if we neglect our part of this covenant, our condition will be yet worse than if it had never been made; for we shall then be to answer, not for the breach of law only, as in the first, but for the abuse of mercy, which is of all sins the most provoking. On the other side, if we faithfully perform it, that is, set ourselves heartily to the obeying of every precept of Christ, not going on wilfully in any one sin, but bewailing and forsaking whatever we have formerly been guilty of, it is then most certain, that all the forementioned benefits of Christ belong to us.

24. And now you see how little reason you have to cast off the CARE of your SOULS, upon a conceit they are past cure, for that it is plain they are not; nay, certainly they are in that very condition, which of all others makes them fittest for our care. If they had not been thus REDEEMED by CHRIST, they had been then so hopeless, that care would have been in

vain ; on the other side, if his redemption had been such that all men should be saved by it, though they live as they list, we should have thought it needless to take care for them, because they were safe without it. But it hath pleased God so to order it, that our care must be the means by which they must receive the good even of all that Christ hath done for them.

25. And now if after all that God hath done to save these Souls of ours, we will not bestow a little Care on them ourselves, we very well deserve to perish. If a physician should undertake a patient that were in some desperate disease, and by his skill bring him so far out of it, that he were sure to recover, if he would but take care of himself, and observe those rules the physician set him, would you not think that man weary of his life that would refuse to do that ? So certainly that man is weary of his Soul, wilfully casts it away, that will not consent to those easy conditions by which he may save it.

26. You see how great kindness God hath to these Souls of ours, the whole TRINITY, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost have all done their parts for them. The FATHER gave his only Son, the SON gave himself, left his Glory, and endured the bitter death of the Cross, merely to keep our Souls from perishing. The HOLY GHOST is become as it were our attendant, waits upon us with continual offers of his grace, to enable us to do that which may preserve them ; nay, he is so desirous we should accept those offers of his, that he is said to be grieved when we refuse them, EPHES. iv. 30. Now, what greater disgrace and affront can we put upon God, than to despise what he thus values ? that those Souls of ours, which Christ thought worthy every drop of his blood, we should not think worth any part of our care ? We use in things of the world, to rate them according to the opinion of those who are best skilled in them ; now certainly God, who made our Souls, best knows the worth of them ; and since he prizes them so high, let us (if it be but reverence to him) be ashamed to neglect them. Especially now that they are in so hopeful a condition, that nothing but our own carelessness can possibly destroy them.

27. I have now briefly gone over those four motives of care I at first proposed, which are each of them such as never misses to stir it up towards the things of this world ; and I have also showed you how much more reasonable, nay, necessary it is they should do the like for the Soul. And now what can I say more, but conclude in the words of ISAIAH, xlvi. 8, *Remember this, and show yourselves men.* That is, deal with your Soul as your reason teaches you to do with all other things that concern you. And sure this common justice binds you to ; for the Soul is that which furnishes you with that reason, which you exercise in all your worldly business ; and shall the Soul itself receive no benefit from that reason which it affords you ; this is, as if a master of a family, who provides food for his servants, should by them be kept from eating any himself, and so remain the only starved creature in his house.

28. And as Justice ties you to this, so Mercy doth likewise ; you know the poor Soul will fall into endless and unspeakable miseries, if you continue to neglect it, and then it will be too late to consider it. The last refuge you can hope for, is God's mercy, but that you have despised and abused. And with what face can you in your greatest need beg for his mercy to your Souls, when you would not afford them your own ? No not that common charity of considering them, of bestowing a few of those idle hours, you know not (scarce) how to pass away upon them.

29. Lay this to your hearts, and as ever you hope for God's pity, when you most want it, be sure in time to pity yourselves, by taking that due care of your precious Souls which belongs to them.

30. If what hath been said have persuaded you to this so necessary a duty, my next work will be to tell you how this Care must be employed ; and that, in a word, is in the doing of all those things which tend to the making the Soul happy, which is the end of our Care, and what those are I come now to show you.

# CONTENTS.

---

## SUNDAY I.

Of the Duty of Man by the Light of Nature ; by the Light of Scripture.—Duty to God.—Of Faith, Commands, Threatenings ; Promises.—Hope, Presumption, Despair.—Love of God.—Fear of God.—Trusting in God ; in all Wants, spiritual and temporal . . . . .	37—56
---	-------

## SUNDAY II.

Of Humility, of Submission to God's Will in respect of Obedience ; Of Patience ; in all sorts of Sufferings.—Of Honour due to God in several ways ; in his House ; Possessions ; his Day ; the Feasts and Fasts of the Church ; his Word.—Of Catechizing.—Preaching.—Sacraments, Baptism . . . . .	57—76
--	-------

## SUNDAY III.

Of the Lord's Supper, and Preparation before receiving ; of Duties at the receiving ; and afterwards . . . . .	77—94
--	-------

## SUNDAY IV.

Honour due to God's Name : Sins against it ; Blasphemy ; Swearing, Assertyory Oaths, Promissory Oaths ; Unlawful Oaths ; Of Perjury ; of Vain Oaths, and the Sin of them . . . . .	95—102
--	--------

## SUNDAY V.

Of Worship due to God's Name ; of Prayer and Confession.—Of Public Prayers in the Church ; in the Family.—Of Private Prayer.—The Advantages of Prayer.—Of Repentance.—Of Fasting . .	102—118
--	---------

## SUNDAY VI.

Of Duties to Ourselves ; Of Sobriety ; Humility ; the great Sin of Pride ; the Danger ; the Folly of this Sin.—Of Vain-glory ; Helps against it.—Of Meekness ; the Means to obtain it.—Of Consideration	119—132
---	---------

## SUNDAY VII.

- Of Contentedness, and the Contraries of it: Murmuring; Covetousness; Envy, and Helps to Contentedness.—Diligence; Industry in improving Gifts; of Nature or Grace.—Of Chastity; Helps to it.—Temperance; its Rules in Eating, &c. . . . . 132—144

## SUNDAY VIII.

- Of Temperance in Drinking: False Ends of Drinking; viz. Good-Fellowship, Preserving of Kindness; Cheering of Spirits, putting away Cares; Passing away Time; Preventing Reproach; Pleasure; Bargaining, &c.—The Guilt of Strong-Drinkers; Exhortations from it, &c. . . . . 144—156

## SUNDAY IX.

- Temperance in Sleep; Mischiefs of Sloth: of Recreation.—Of Apparel, and of the Ends for which Clothing should be used . . . 156—161

## SUNDAY X.

- Of Duties to our Neighbours: of Justice, Negative, in doing no Wrong or Injury to any, and Positive, to do Right to all.—Of the Sin of Murder; the Heinousness of it; the Punishment of it; and the strange Discoveries thereof.—Of Maiming.—Of Wounds, Stripes, and Injuries to others . . . . . 162—174

## SUNDAY XI.

- Of Justice about the Possessions of our Neighbour; against Injuring him as concerning his Wife; his Goods.—Of Malice.—Covetous Injustice.—Oppression.—Theft.—Of Paying Debts; what we are bound for, and what we have promised . . . . . 174—181

## SUNDAY XII.

- Of Theft; Stealing the Goods of our Neighbour.—Of Deceit in Trust; in Traffic; Concealing the Faults of his Ware; his Overvaluing it.—Fraud in the Buyer.—Of Restitution, and the Necessity thereof . . . . . 181—189

## SUNDAY XIII.

- Of False Reports; of the Credit of our Neighbour; False Witness.—  
 Slanders, Whisperings.—Of Despising and Scoffing; for infirmities.—  
 Positive Justice, or the yielding to every man that which, by any kind  
 of right, he may challenge from us.—Of Speaking truth; of Lying.—  
 Of Humility and Courteous Behaviour.—Of Meekness and Pride.—  
 Brawling; and Cursing.—Of Envy; Detraction.—Respect to Men of  
 Extraordinary Gifts; in regard to their Ranks and Qualities.—Dues  
 to those in any sort of Want.—Duties in respect of Relation.—Of  
 Gratitude to Benefactors . . . . . 189—206

## SUNDAY XIV.

- Of Duty to Parents and Magistrates; Pastors, Love and Esteem of  
 them; Maintenance, Obedience.—Of the Duty of Children to Parents:  
 Reverence; Love; Obedience; especially in their Marriage; Minister-  
 ing to their Wants.—Duty to the worst of Parents.—Duty of Parents  
 to their Children . . . . . 206—222

## SUNDAY XV.

- Of Duty to our Brethren and Relations.—To a Husband Obedience;  
 Fidelity; Love.—The Faults of the Husband acquit not from these  
 Duties.—Dues to the Wife: Love; Faithfulness, Maintenance, In-  
 struction.—Husbands and Wives mutually to pray for and assist  
 each other in all Good.—Virtue the chief Consideration in Mar-  
 riage.—Unlawful Marriages.—Friendship.—Servants' Duty.—Mas-  
 ters' Duty . . . . . 223—237

## SUNDAY XVI.

- Other Branches of our Duty to our Neighbour: the Duty of Charity; to  
 Men's Souls; Bodies, Goods, Credit, &c. . . . . 237—255

## SUNDAY XVII.

- Of Charity in respect of our Neighbour's Goods.—Alms-giving.—Of  
 Charity in respect of our Neighbour's Credit.—Of Peace-making.—  
 Of going to Law.—Of Charity to our Enemies.—Christian duties  
 both possible and pleasant.—The Danger of delaying our turning to  
 God . . . . . 255—272

## PRIVATE DEVOTIONS.

Prayers for Morning . . . . .	276
Prayers for Night . . . . .	280
Collects for Several Graces . . . . .	284
A Paraphrase on the Lord's Prayer . . . . .	292
Pious Ejaculations out of the Book of Psalms . . . . .	294
Brief heads of Examination before the Sacrament . . . . .	296
Prayers before the Sacrament . . . . .	307
Ejaculations at the Lord's Table, &c. . . . .	310
Prayers after the Sacrament . . . . .	312
Prayer of Intercession . . . . .	313
Prayers in time of Persecution and Affliction . . . . .	315
A Thanksgiving for Deliverance . . . . .	317
Prayers for the Sick . . . . .	318
Ejaculations for the Sick . . . . .	323
Prayers in time of Public Calamities . . . . .	326
A Prayer for this Church . . . . .	328
A Prayer for the Peace of the Church . . . . .	329

## SUNDAY I.

Of the Duty of Man by the Light of Nature, by the Light of Scripture : the three great Branches of Man's Duty—to God, Ourselves, our Neighbour: our Duty to God; of Faith, the Promises, of Hope, of Love, of Fear, of Trust.

THE benefits purchased for us by Christ are such as will undoubtedly make the Soul happy ; for Eternal Happiness itself is one of them : but because these benefits belong not to us till we perform the condition required of us, whoever desires the happiness of his Soul must set himself to the performing of that condition. What that is, I have already mentioned in the general, *That it is the hearty, honest endeavour of obeying the whole will of God.* But then that will of God containing under it many particulars, it is necessary we should also know what those are ; that is, what are the several things that God now requires of us, our performance whereof will bring us to everlasting happiness, and the neglect to endless misery.

2. Of these things there are some which God hath so stamped upon our Souls, that we naturally know them ; that is, we should have known them to be our Duty, though we had never been told so by the Scripture. That this is so, we may see by those Heathens, who having never heard of either Old or New Testament, do yet acknowledge themselves bound to some general Duties, as to worship God, to be just, to honour their parents, and the like ; and as St. Paul saith, Rom. ii. 15, *Their Consciences do in those things accuse or excuse them* ; that is, tell them, whether they have done what they should, in those particulars, or no.

3. Now though Christ hath brought greater light into the world, yet he never meant by it to put out any of that natural light, which God hath set up in our Souls : therefore let me here, by the way, advise you not to walk contrary even to this lesser light. I mean not to venture on any of those acts, which mere natural conscience will tell you are sins.

4. It is just matter of sadness to any Christian heart, to see some in these days, who profess much of Religion, and yet live in such sins, as a mere heathen would abhor, men

that pretending to higher degrees of light and holiness than their brethren do, yet practise contrary to all the rules of common honesty, and make it part of their Christian liberty so to do ; of whose seduement it concerns all that love their Souls to beware : and for that purpose let this be laid as a foundation, *That that Religion or opinion cannot be of God, which allows men in any wickedness.*

5. But though we must not put out this light which God hath thus put into our Souls, yet this is not the only way whereby God hath revealed his will ; and therefore we are not to rest here, but proceed to the knowledge of those other things which God hath by other means revealed.

6. The way for us to come to know them is by the **SCRIPTURES**, wherein are set down those several commands of God which he hath given to be the Rule of our Duty.

7. Of those, some were given before Christ came into the world ; such are those precepts we find scattered throughout the Old Testament, but especially contained in the Ten Commandments, and that excellent book of Deuteronomy : others were given by Christ, who added much, both to the law implanted in us by nature, and that of the Old Testament ; and those you shall find in the New Testament, in the several precepts given by him and his Apostles, but especially in that Divine Sermon on the Mount, set down in the fifth, sixth, and seventh chapters of St. Matthew's Gospel.

8. All these should be severally spoke to, but because that would make the discourse very long, and so less fit for the meaner sort of men, for whose use alone it is intended, I choose to proceed in another manner ; by summing up all these together, and so, as plainly as I can, to lay down what is now the duty of every Christian.

9. This I find briefly contained in the words of the Apostle, TIT. ii. 12. *That we should live soberly, righteously and godly in this present world* ; where the word *Soberly*, contains our Duty to ourselves ; *Righteously*, our Duty to our Neighbour ; and *Godly*, our Duty to God. These therefore shall be the heads of my discourse, our DUTY to GOD, OURSELVES, and our NEIGHBOUR. I begin with that to GOD, that being the best groundwork whereon to build both the other.

10. There are many parts of our DUTY to GOD ; the two

chief are these: first, to acknowledge him to be God: secondly, to have no other. Under these **DUTY TO GOD.** are contained all those particulars which make up our whole Duty to God, which shall be showed in their order.

11. To acknowledge him to be God, is to believe him to be an infinite glorious Spirit, that was from everlasting, without beginning, and shall be to everlasting, without end. That **ACKNOWLEDGING HIM TO BE GOD.**  
he is our Creator, Redeemer, Sanctifier, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, one God, blessed for ever. That he is subject to no alteration, but is unchangeable; that he is no bodily substance, such as our eyes may behold, but spiritual and invisible, whom *no man hath seen, nor can see*, as the Apostle tells us, 1 TIM. vi. 16. That he is infinitely great and excellent, beyond all that our wit or conceit can imagine; that he hath received his being from none, and gives being to all things.

12. All this we are to believe of him in regard of his essence and being: but besides this, he is set forth to us in the Scripture by several Excellences, as that he is of Infinite Goodness and Mercy, Truth, Justice, Wisdom, Power, All-sufficiency, Majesty; that he disposes and governs all things by his Providence; that he knows all things and is present in all places; these are by divines called the Attributes of God, and all these we must undoubtingly acknowledge; that is, we must firmly believe all these Divine Excellences to be in God, and that in the greatest degree, and so that they can never cease to be in him, he can never be other than *infinitely Good, Merciful, True, &c.*

13. But the acknowledging him for our God signifies yet more than this; it means that we should perform to him all those several parts of Duty which belong from a creature to his God; what those are I am now to tell you.

14. The first is **FAITH**, or Belief, not only that fore-mentioned of his Essence and Attributes, but of his Word, the believing most firmly that all that he saith is perfectly true. This necessarily **FAITH.** arises from that Attribute, his truth, it being natural for us to believe whatsoever is said of one of whose truth we are confident. Now the Holy Scriptures being the Word of God, we are therefore to conclude, that all that is contained in them is most true.

**OF HIS AFFIRMATIONS.** 15. The things contained in them are of these four sorts : first, affirmations, such are all the stories of the Bible, when it is said, such and such things came so and so to pass ; Christ was born of a Virgin, was laid in a manger, &c. And such also are many points of doctrine, as that there are three Persons in the Godhead, that Christ is the Son of God, and the like. All things of this sort thus delivered in Scripture we are to believe most true. And not only so, but because they are all written for our instruction, we are to consider them for that purpose, that is, by them to lay that foundation of Christian knowledge, on which we may build a Christian life.

**COMMANDS.** 16. The second sort of things contained in the Scripture, are the Commands ; that is, the several things enjoined us by God to perform : these we are to believe to come from him, and to be most just and fit for him to command : but then this belief must bring forth obedience, that what we believe thus fit to be done, be indeed done by us ; otherwise our belief that they come from him serves but to make us more inexcusable.

**THREATENINGS.** 17. Thirdly, the Scripture contains Threatenings ; many texts there are which threaten to them that go on in their sins, the wrath of God ; and under that are contained all the punishments and miseries of this life, both spiritual and temporal, and everlasting destruction in the life to come. Now we are most steadfastly to believe, that these are God's threats, and that they will certainly be performed to every impenitent sinner. But then the use we are to make of this belief, is to keep from those sins to which this destruction is threatened ; otherwise our belief adds to our guilt, that will wilfully go on in spite of those threatenings.

**PROMISES.** 18. Fourthly, the Scripture contains Promises, and those both to our Bodies and our Souls. For our bodies there are many Promises that God will provide for them what he sees necessary, I will name only one, MATT. vi. 33. *Seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteousness, and all these things, that is, all outward necessities, shall be added unto you:* but here it is to be observed, that we must *first seek the kingdom of God and his righteousness*, that is, make it our first and greatest care to serve and obey him, before this Promise even of temporal good things belong to us. To

the Soul there are many and high Promises, as first, that of present ease and refreshment, which we find, MATT. xi. 29. *Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me, and ye shall find rest unto your Souls:* but here it is apparent that, before this rest belongs to us, we must have *taken on us Christ's yoke*, become his servants and disciples. Finally, there are Promises to the Soul even of all the benefits of Christ; but yet those only to such as perform the condition required; that is, pardon of sins to those that repent of them, increase of grace to those that diligently make use of what they have already, and humbly pray for more; and eternal salvation to those that continue to their lives' end in hearty obedience to his commands.

19. This belief of the Promises must, therefore, stir us up to perform the condition; and till it do so, we can in no reason expect any good by them: and for us to look for the benefit of them on other terms, is the same mad presumption that it would be in a servant to challenge his master to give him a reward for having done nothing of his work, to which alone the reward was promised; you can easily resolve what answer were to be given to such a servant, and the same we are to expect from God in this case. Nay, farther, it is sure, God hath given these promises to no other end, but to invite us to holiness of life; yea, he gave his Son, in whom all his promises are, as it were, summed up for this end. We usually look so much at Christ's coming to satisfy for us, that we forget this other part of his errand. But there is nothing surer, than that the main purpose of his coming into the world was to plant good life among men.

20. This is so often repeated in Scripture, that no man that considers and believes what he reads can doubt of it. Christ himself tells us, MATT. ix. 13, *He came to call sinners to repentance.* And St. Peter, Acts iii. 26, tells us, *That God sent his Son Jesus to bless us, in turning every one of us from our iniquities;* for it seems the *turning us from our iniquities* was the greatest special blessing which God intended us in Christ.

21. Nay, we are taught by St. Paul, that this was the end of his very death also, TITUS ii. 14. *Who gave himself for our sins, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify to himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.* And again, GAL. i. 4. *Who gave himself for us, that he might deliver us from this present evil world,* that

is, from the sins and ill customs of the world. Divers other Texts there are to this purpose ; but these I suppose sufficient to assure any man of this one great truth, that all that Christ hath done for us was directed to this end, the bringing us to live Christianly : or in the words of St. Paul, *To teach us, that denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world.*

22. Now we know Christ is the foundation of all promises ; *In him all the promises of God are yea, and Amen,* 2 COR. i. 20. And, therefore, if God gave Christ to this end, certainly the Promises are to the same also. And then how great an abuse of them is it, to make them serve for purposes quite contrary to what they were intended ? viz. to the encouraging us in sins ; which they will certainly do, if we persuade ourselves they belong to us, how wickedly soever we live. The Apostle teaches us another use of them, 2 COR. vii. 1, *Having therefore these promises, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.* When we do thus, we may justly apply the Promises to ourselves, and with comfort expect our parts in them. But, till then, though these Promises be of certain truth, yet we can reap no benefit from them, because we are not the persons to whom they are made, that is, we perform not the condition required to give us right to them.

23. This is the Faith or belief required of us towards the things God hath revealed to us in the Scripture, to wit, such as may answer the end for which they were so revealed, that is, the bringing us to good lives ; the bare believing the truth of them, without this, is no more than the Devils do, as St. James tells us, Chap. ii. 19. Only they are not so unreasonable as some of us are, for they will tremble, as knowing well this Faith will never do them any good. But many of us go on confidently, and doubt not the sufficiency of our Faith, though we have not the least fruit of obedience to approve it by : let such hear St. James' judgment in the point, chap. ii. 26. *As the body without the spirit is dead, so Faith if it have not works is dead also.*

24. A second duty to God is HOPE, that is, a comfortable HOPE. expectation of these good things he hath promised. But this, as I told you before of Faith, must be such as agrees to the nature of the pro-

mises, which being such as requires a condition on our part, we can hope no farther than we make that good ; or, if we do, we are so far from performing by it this duty of Hope, that we commit the great sin of Presumption, **PRESUMPTION.** which is nothing else but hoping where God hath given us no ground to hope : this every man doth, that hopes for pardon of sins and eternal life, without that repentance and obedience to which alone they are promised ; the true hope is that which purifies us, St. John saith, 1 EPIST. iii. 3, *Every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure* ; that is, it makes him leave his sins, and earnestly endeavour to be holy as Christ is, and that which doth not so, how confident soever it be, may well be concluded to be but that hope of the hypocrite, which Job assures us shall perish.

25. But there is another way of transgressing this Duty, besides that of Presumption, and that is **DESPAIR.** by Desperation, by which, I mean not that which is ordinarily so called, viz. the despairing of mercy, so long as we continue in our sins, for that is but just for us to do : but I mean such a Desperation as makes us give over endeavour ; that is, when a man that sees he is not at the present such a one as the promises belong to, concludes he can never become such, and, therefore, neglects all duty, and goes on in his sins. This is indeed the sinful desperation, and that which, if it be continued in, must end in destruction.

26. Now the work of Hope is to prevent this, by setting before us the generality of the promises, that they belong to all that will but perform the condition. And, therefore, though a man have not hitherto performed it, and so hath yet no right to them, yet hope will tell him, that that right may yet be gained, if he will now set heartily about it. It is therefore strange folly for any man, be he ever so sinful, to give up himself for lost, when if he will but change his course, he shall be as certain to partake of the promises of mercy, as if he had never gone on in those former sins.

27. This Christ shows us in the Parable of the Prodigal, LUKE xv. where we see that Son, which had run away from his Father, and had consumed the portion given him, in riotous living, was yet, upon his return and repentance, used with as much kindness by the Father, as he that had never offended, nay, with higher and more passionate expressions of love. The intent of which Parable was only to

show us how graciously our heavenly Father will receive us, how great soever our former sins have been, if we shall return to him with true sorrow for what is past, and sincere obedience for the time to come ; nay, so acceptable a thing is it to God, to have any sinner return from the error of his ways, that there is a kind of triumph in heaven for it, *There is joy in the presence of the angels of God, over one sinner that repenteth*, LUKE xv. 10. And now who would not rather choose by a timely repentance to bring joy to heaven, to God and his holy Angels, than by a sullen desperation to please Satan and his accursed spirits ; especially when by the former we shall gain endless happiness to ourselves, and by the latter, as endless torments ?

**28. A third Duty to God is Love.** There are two common motives of Love among men.

**LOVE, ITS MOTIVES.** The one the goodness and excellency of the person, the other his particular kindness and love to us ; and both these are in the highest degree in God.

**29. First, he is of infinite goodness, and excellency in himself ;** this you were before taught to believe of him, and no man can doubt it that considers but this one thing, that there is nothing good in the world, but what hath received all its goodness from God : his goodness is as the sea, or ocean, and the goodness of all creatures but as some small streams flowing from the sea. Now you would certainly think him a madman, that should say, the sea were not greater than some little brook : and certainly it is no less folly to suppose that the goodness of God doth not as much (nay, infinitely more) exceed that of all creatures. Besides, the goodness of the creature is imperfect, and mixed with much evil ; but his is pure and entire, without any such mixture. He is perfectly holy, and cannot be tainted with the least impunity, neither can be the author of any to us ; for, though he be the cause of all the goodness in us, he is the cause of none of our sins. This St. James expressly tells us, Chap. i. 13. *Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God ; for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man.*

**30. But secondly, God is not only thus good in himself,** but he is also wonderful good, that is, kind and merciful to us : we are made up of two parts, a Soul and a Body ; and to each of

**HIS KINDNESS  
TO US.**

these God hath expressed infinite mercy and tenderness. Do but consider what was before told you of the SECOND COVENANT, and the mercies therein offered, even Christ himself and all his benefits, and also that he offers them so sincerely and heartily, that no man can miss of enjoying them but by his own default. For he doth most really and affectionately desire we should embrace them and live; as appears by that solemn oath of his, EZEK. xxxiii. 11. *As I live, saith the Lord, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but that the wicked turn from his way and live:* whereto he adds this passionate expression, *Turn, ye, turn ye from your evil ways, for why will ye die?* To the same purpose you may read EZEK. xviii. Consider this, I say, and then surely you cannot but say, he hath great kindness to our souls. Nay, let every man but remember with himself the many calls he hath had to repentance and amendment; sometimes outward by the Word, sometimes inward by the secret whispers of God's Spirit in his heart, which were only to woo and entreat him to avoid eternal misery, and to accept of eternal happiness; let him, I say, remember these, together with those many other means God hath used toward him for the same end, and he will have reason to confess God's kindness, not only to men's souls in general, but to his own in particular.

31. Neither hath he been wanting to our bodies; all the good things they enjoy, as health, strength, food, raiment, and whatever else concerns them, are merely his gifts: so that indeed it is impossible we should be ignorant of his mercies to them, all those outward comforts and refreshments we daily enjoy, being continual effects and witnesses of it; and though some enjoy more of these than others, yet there is no person but enjoys so much in one kind or other, as abundantly shows God's mercy and kindness to him in respect of his body.

32. And now surely you will think it but reasonable we should love him, who is in all respects thus lovely: indeed this is a duty so generally acknowledged, that if you should ask any man the question, whether he loved God or no, he would think you did him great wrong to doubt of it; yet for all this, it is too plain, that there are very few that do indeed love him; and this will soon be proved to you by examining a little what are the common effects of love, which we bear to

men like ourselves, and then trying whether we can show any such fruits of our love to God.

33. Of that sort there are divers, but for shortness I will

**FRUIT OF LOVE,** name but two. The first is a Desire of

Pleasing, the second a Desire of Enjoyment.

**DESIRE OF** These are constantly the fruits of Love.

**PLEASING.** For the first, it is known by all, that he

that loves any person is very desirous to approve himself to him, to do whatsoever he thinks will be pleasing to him ; and according to the degree of love, so is this desire more or less ; where we love earnestly, we are very earnest and careful to please. Now if we have indeed that love to God we pretend to, it will bring forth this fruit, we shall be careful to please him in all things. Therefore as you judge of the *tree by its fruits*, so may you judge of your love of God by this fruit of it ; nay indeed, this is the way of trial which Christ himself hath given us, JOHN xiv. 15. *If ye love me, keep my Commandments :* and St. John tells us, 1 EPIST. v. 3. *That this is the love of God, that we walk after his Commandments ;* and where this one proof is wanting, it will be impossible to testify our love to God.

34. But it must yet be farther considered, that this love of God must not be in a low or weak degree ; for besides that the motives to it, his excellency and his kindness, are in the highest ; the same commandment which bids us love God, bids us *love him with all our hearts, and with all our strength*, that is, as much as is possible for us, and above any thing else. And therefore, to the fulfilling this commandment, it is necessary we love him in that degree ; and if we do so, then certainly we shall have not only some slight and faint endeavours of pleasing, but such as are most diligent and earnest, such as will put us upon the most painful and costly duties, make us willing to forsake our own ease, goods, friends, yea life itself, when we cannot keep them without disobeying God.

35. Now examine thyself by this : hast thou this fruit of love to show ? Dost thou make it thy constant and greatest care to keep God's Commandments ? to obey him in all things ? earnestly labouring to please him to the utmost of thy power, even to the forsaking of what is dearest to thee in this world ? If thou dost, thou mayest then truly say thou lovest God. But on the contrary, if thou wilfully continuest in the breach of many, nay, but of any one command of his,

never deceive thyself, for the love of God abides not in thee. This will be made plain to you, if you consider what the Scripture saith of such, as that they *are enemies to God by their wicked works*, COL. i. 21. That the carnal mind (and such is every one that continues *wilfully in sin*) is *enmity with God*, ROM. viii. 7. That he that *sins wilfully, tramples under foot the Son of God, and doth despite unto the Spirit of Grace*, HEB. x 29, and many the like. And therefore unless you can think enmity, and trampling, and despite to be the fruits of love, you must not believe you love God, whilst you go on in a wilful disobedience to him.

36. A second fruit of love, I told you, was Desire of Enjoying. This is constantly to be seen in our love to one another. If you have a friend whom you entirely love, you desire his conversation, wish to be always in his company: and thus will it be also in our love to God, if that be as great and hearty as this.

DESIRE OF EN-  
JOYING.

37. There is a twofold enjoying of God, the one imperfect in this life, the other more perfect and complete in the life to come: that in this life is that conversation, as I may call it, which we have with God in his ordinances, in praying and meditating, in hearing his word, in receiving the sacrament, which are all intended for this purpose, to bring us into an intimacy and familiarity with God by speaking to him, and hearing him speak to us.

38. Now if we do indeed love God, we shall certainly hugely value and desire these ways of conversing with him; it being all that we can have in this life, it will make us with David esteem *one day in God's courts better than a thousand*, Ps. lxxxiv. 10; we shall be glad to have these opportunities of approaching to him as often as it is possible, and be careful to use them diligently, to that end of uniting us still more to him; yea, we shall come to these spiritual exercises with the same cheerfulness we would go to our dearest friend. And if indeed we do thus, it is a good proof of our love.

39. But I fear there are not many have this to show for it, as appears by the common backwardness and unwillingness of men to come to these; and their negligence and heartlessness when they are at them; and can we think that God will ever own us for lovers of him, whilst we have such dislike to his company, that we will never come into

it but when we are dragged by fear, or shame of men, or some such worldly motive? It is sure you would not think that man loved you, whom you perceive to shun your company, and be loath to come in your sight. And therefore be not so unreasonable as to say, you love God, when yet you desire to keep as far from him as you can.

40. But besides this there is another enjoyment of God, which is more perfect and complete, and that is our perpetual enjoying of him in Heaven, where we shall be for ever united to him, and enjoy him not now and then only for short spaces of time, as we do here, but continually without interruption, or breaking off. And certainly if we have that degree of love to God we ought, this cannot but be most earnestly desired by us so much, that we should think no labour too great to compass it. The seven years that Jacob served for Rachel, GEN. xxix. 20, *seemed to him but a few days for the love that he had to her:* and surely if we have love to God, we shall not think the service of our whole lives too dear a price for this full enjoyment of him, nor esteem all the enjoyments of the world worth the looking on in comparison thereof.

41. If we can truly tell ourselves we do thus long for this enjoyment of God, we may believe we love him. But I fear again there are but few that can thus approve their love. For if we look into men's lives, we shall see they are not generally so fond of this enjoyment, as to be at any pains to purchase it. And not only so, but it is to be doubted, there are many who, if it were put to their choice, whether they would live here always to enjoy the profit and pleasure of the world, or go to Heaven to enjoy God, would, like the children of Gad and Reuben, set up their rest on this side Jordan, NUMB. xxxii. and never desire that heavenly Canaan; so close do their affections cleave to things below: which shows clearly they have not made God their treasure, for then according to our Saviour's Rule, MATT vi. 22, their heart would be with him. Nay, farther yet; it is too plain that many of us set so little value on this enjoying of God, that we prefer the vilest and basest sins before him, and choose to enjoy them, though by it we utterly lose our parts in Him, which is the case of every man that continues wilfully in those sins.

42. And now I fear, according to these rules of trial, many that profess to love God, will be found not to do so. I

conclude all with the words of St. John, 1 EPIST. iii. 18, which, though spoken of the love of our brethren, is very fitly applicable to this love of God, *Let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth.*

43. A fourth duty to God is FEAR; this arises from the consideration both of his justice and his power. His justice is such that he will

## FEAR.

not clear the wicked, and his power such that he is able to inflict the sorest punishments upon them; and that this is a reasonable cause of fear, Christ himself tells us, MATT. x. 28. *Fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.* Many other places of Scripture there are, which commend to us this duty, as PSALM ii. 11. *Serve the Lord with fear.* PSALM xxxiv. 9, *Fear the Lord ye that be his Saints.* PROV. ix. 10, *The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom,* and divers the like; and indeed all the threatenings of wrath against sinners, which we meet with in the Scripture, are only to this end, to work this fear in our hearts.

44. Now this fear is nothing else but such an awful regard of God as may keep us from offending him. This the wise man tells us, PROV. xvi. 6, *The fear of the Lord is to depart from evil:* so that none can be said truly to fear God, that is not thereby withheld from sin; and this is but answerable to that common fear we have towards men; whoever we know may hurt us, we will beware of provoking; and therefore if we be not as wary of displeasing God, it is plain we fear men more than we do him.

45. How great a madness this is, thus to fear men above God, will soon appear, if we compare what man can do to us with that which God can.

THE FOLLY OF  
FEARING MEN  
MORE THAN  
GOD.

And first, it is sure, it is not in the power of man (I might say devils too) to do us any hurt, unless God permit and suffer them to do it: so that if we do but keep him our friend, we may say with the Psalmist, *The Lord is on my side, I fear not what man can do unto me.* For let their malice be never so great, he can restrain and keep them from hurting us; nay, he can change their minds towards us, according to that of the wise man, PROV. xvi. 7, *When a man's ways please the Lord, he maketh even his enemies to be at peace with him.* A notable example of this we have in Jacob, GEN. xxxii. who when his brother Esau was coming against

him as an enemy, God wonderfully turned his heart, so that he met him with all the expressions of brotherly kindness, as you may read in the next chapter.

46. But secondly, Suppose men were left at liberty to do thee what mischief they could ; alas ! their power goes but a little way : they may perhaps, rob thee of thy goods, it may be they may take away thy liberty or thy credit, or, perchance, thy life too ; but that thou knowest is the utmost they can do. But now God can do all this when he pleases, and that which is infinitely more, his vengeance reaches even beyond death itself, to the eternal misery both of body and soul in hell ; in comparison of which, death is so inconsiderable, that we are not to look upon it with any dread. *Fear not them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do,* saith Christ, LUKE xii. 4. And then immediately adds, *But I will forewarn you whom you shall fear : fear him which, after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell ; yea, I say unto you, fear him.* In which words, the comparison is set between the greatest ill we can suffer from men, the loss of life, and those sadder evils God can inflict on us ; and the latter are found to be the only dreadful things, and therefore, God only to be feared.

47. But there yet is one thing farther considerable in this matter, which is this : It is possible we may transgress against men and they not know it : I may perhaps steal my neighbour's goods, or defile his wife, and keep it so close that he shall not suspect me, and so never bring me to punishment for it : but this we cannot do with God ; he knows all things, even the most secret thoughts of our hearts ; and, therefore, though we commit a sin never so closely, he is sure to find us, and will as surely, if we do not timely repent, punish us eternally for it.

48. And now surely it cannot but be confessed, that it is much safer displeasing men, than God ; yet, alas ! our practice is as if we believed the direct contrary, there being nothing more ordinary with us, than for the avoiding of some present danger we fear from men, to rush ourselves upon the indignation of God. And thus it is with us, when, either to save our estates, or credits, or our very lives, we commit any sin ; for that is plainly the choosing to provoke God, rather than man.

49. But God knows this case of fear of men is not the only one wherein we venture to displease him ; for we

commit many sins, to which we have none of this temptation, nor indeed any other; as for instance, that of common swearing, to which there is nothing either of pleasure or profit to invite us. Nay, many times, we, who so fear the mischiefs that other men may do to us, that we are ready to buy them off with the greatest sins, do ourselves bring all those very mischiefs upon us by sins of our own choosing. Thus the careless prodigal robs himself of his estate, the deceitful and dishonest man, or any that lives in open notorious sin, deprives himself of his credit, and the drunkard and glutton brings deseases on himself, to the shortening his life. And can we think we do at all fear God, when that fear hath so little power over us, that though it be backed with the many present mischiefs that attend upon sin, it is not able to keep us from them? Surely such men are far from fearing God, that they rather seem to defy him, resolve to provoke him, whatsoever it cost them, either in this world or the next. Yet so unreasonably partial are we to ourselves, that even such as these will pretend to this fear: you may examine multitudes of the most gross scandalous sinners, before you shall meet with one that will acknowledge he fears not God. It is strange it should be possible for men thus to cheat themselves; but, however, it is certain we cannot deceive God, he will not be mocked, and, therefore, if we will not now so fear as to avoid sin, we shall one day fear when it will be too late to avoid punishment.

50. A fifth duty to God, is that of TRUSTING in him, that is, depending and resting on him: and that is, first, in all dangers; secondly, in all wants. We are to rest on him in all our dangers, both spiritual and temporal. Of the first sort, are all those temptations by which we are in danger to be drawn to sin. And in this respect he hath promised that if we *resist the Devil, he shall flee from us,* JAMES iv. 7. Therefore our duty is first to pray earnestly for God's grace to enable us to overcome the temptation, and secondly, to set ourselves manfully to combat with it, not yielding or giving consent to it in the least degree; and whilst we do thus, we are confidently to rest upon God, that his grace will be sufficient for us, that he will either remove the temptation, or strengthen us to withstand it.

IN ALL SPIRITUAL  
DANGERS.

51. Secondly, in all outward and temporal dangers we

are to rest upon him, as knowing that he is able to deliver us, and that he will do so if he see it best for us, and if we be such to whom he hath promised his protection, that is, such as

**IN ALL TEM-  
PORAL.**

truly fear him. To this purpose we have many promises in Scripture, PSALM xxxiv. 7, *The angel of the Lord tarrieth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them:* and PSALM xxxiv. 22, *The Lord delivereth the souls of his saints, and all that put their trust in him shall not be destitute;* and divers the like.

Also we have many examples, as that of the three children in the furnace, DAN. iii.; that of Daniel in the lion's den, DAN. vi.; and many others: all which serve to teach us this one lesson, that if we go on conscientiously in performing our duty, we need not be dismayed for any thing that can befall us, for the God whom we serve is able to deliver us.

**52. Therefore, in all dangers we are first humbly to pray  
NOT SEEK TO DE-  
LIVER OURSELVES  
BY ANY SIN.**

for his aid, and then to rest ourselves cheerfully on him; and assuring ourselves that he will give such an issue as shall be most for our good. But above all things, we must be sure to fix our dependence wholly on him, and not to rely on the creatures for help; much less must we seek to deliver ourselves by any unlawful means, that is, by the committing of any sin; for that is like Saul, 1 SAM. xxviii. 7, *to go to the witch,* that is, to the Devil, for help. Such courses do commonly deceive our hopes at the present, and instead of delivering us out of our straits, plunge us in greater, and those much more uncomfortable ones, because then we want that which is the only support, God's favour and aid, which we certainly forfeit when we thus seek to rescue ourselves by any sinful means. But supposing we could by such a way certainly free ourselves from the present danger; yet, alas, we are far from having gained safety by it; we have only removed the danger from that which was less considerable, and brought it upon the most precious part of us, our Souls; like an unskilful physician, that to remove a pain from the finger strikes it to the heart; we are, therefore, grossly mistaken, when we think we have played the good husband in saving our liberties or estates, our lives themselves, by a sin; we have not saved them, but madly overbought them, laid out our very souls on them: and Christ tells us how little we shall gain by such bargains,

MATT. xvi. 26, *What is a man profited if he shall gain the whole world and lose his own soul?* Let us therefore resolve never to value any thing we can possess in this world at so high a rate, as to keep it at the price of the least sin ; but, whenever things are driven to such an issue, that we must either part with some, perhaps all, our worldly possessions, nay, life itself, or else commit sin, let us then remember, that this is the season for us to perform that great and excellent duty of *taking up the Cross*, which we can never so properly do as in this case ; for our bearing of that which we have no possible way of avoiding can at most be said to be but the carrying of the Cross ; but then only can we be said to take it up, when, having a means of escaping it by a sin, we rather choose to endure the Cross than commit the sin ; for then it is not laid on us by any unavoidable necessity, but we willingly choose it : and this is highly acceptable with God, yea, withal so strictly required by him, that if we fail of performing it, when we are put to the trial, we are not to be accounted followers of Christ ; for so himself hath expressly told us, MATT. xvi. 24, *If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his Cross and follow me;* and so again, MARK viii. 34. It were therefore, a good point of spiritual wisdom for us, sometimes by some lower degrees of self-denial, to fit ourselves for this greater, when we shall be called to it : we know he that expects to run a race will beforehand be often breathing himself, that he may not be foiled when he comes to run for the prize ; in like manner, it will be fit for us, sometimes to abridge ourselves somewhat of our lawful pleasure, or ease, or profit, so that we may get such a mastery over ourselves, as to be able to renounce all when our obedience to God requires it.

53. And as we are thus to trust on God for deliverance from danger, so are we likewise for supply of our wants ; and those again are either IN ALL WANTS  
SPIRITUAL. Spiritual or Temporal. Our Spiritual want is that of his Grace to enable us to serve him, without which we can do nothing ; and for this we are to depend on him, provided we neglect not the means, which are Prayer and a careful using of what he hath already bestowed on us : for then we have his promise for it, *He will give the holy Spirit to them that ask it*, LUKE xi. 13, and *unto him that hath shall be given*, MATT. xxv. 29, that is, *To him*

*that hath made a good use of that grace he hath already, God will give more.* We are not therefore to affright ourselves with the difficulty of those things God requires of us, but remember he commands nothing which he will not enable us to perform, if we be not wanting to ourselves. And therefore let us sincerely do our parts, and confidently assure ourselves God will not fail of his.

54. But we have likewise Temporal and Bodily Wants, and for the supply of them we are likewise to rely on him. And for this also we

TEMPORAL  
WANTS.

want no promises, supposing us to be of the

number of them to whom they are made, that is, God's faithful servants: *They that fear the Lord lack nothing*, PSALM XXXIV.

9. and ver. 10, *They that seek the Lord shall want no manner of thing that is good*: again PSALM XXXIII. 18, 19, *Behold the eye of the Lord is upon them that fear him, upon them that hope in his mercy, to deliver their souls from death, and to feed them in time of famine.* Examples also we have of this, as we may see in the case of Elijah and the poor Widow, 1 KINGS xvii. And many others.

55. We are therefore to look up to him for the provision of all things necessary for us, according to that of the Psalmist, *The eyes of all wait upon thee, O Lord, and thou givest them their meat in due season.* And our Saviour hath taught us to pray for our *daily bread*; thereby teaching us that we are to live in continual dependence upon God for it. Yet I mean not by this, that we should so expect it from God, as to give up ourselves to idleness and expect to be fed with miracles. No, our honest industry and labour is the means by which God ordinarily gives us the necessities of this life; and therefore we must by no means neglect that *He that will not labour let him not eat*, says the Apostle, 2 THESS. iii. 10. And we may believe God will pronounce the same sentence, and suffer the slothful person to want even necessary food. But when we have faithfully used our own endeavour, then we must also look up to God for his blessing on it, without which it can never prosper to us. And having done thus, we may comfortably rest ourselves on his Providence for such a measure of these outward things as he sees fittest for us.

56. But if our condition be such that we are not able to labour, and have no other means of bringing in the necessities of life to ourselves, yet even then we are cheerfully to

rest upon God, believing that he who feeds the ravens will by some means or other, though we know not what, provide for us, so long as he pleases we shall continue in this world, and never in any case torment ourselves with carking and distrustful thoughts, but as the Apostle, 1 PET. v. 7, *cast all your care on him who careth for us.*

57. This is earnestly pressed by our Saviour, MATT. vi. where he abundantly shows the folly of this sin of distrust. The place is a most excellent one, and therefore, I shall set it down at large, Verse 25, *Therefore, I say unto you, Take no thought for your life what you shall eat, or what you shall drink; neither for your body, what you shall put on; is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? Behold the fowls of the air, for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns, yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit to his stature? And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field how they grow, they toil not, neither do they spin, and yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. Wherefore if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little Faith? Therefore take no thought, saying, what shall we eat? or what shall we drink? or wherewithal shall we be clothed? (for after all these things do the Gentiles seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. But seek ye first the Kingdom of God and his righteousness, and then all these things shall be added unto you. Take therefore no thought for to-morrow, for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself; sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.* I might add many other texts to this purpose, but this is so full and convincing, that I suppose it is needless.

58. All therefore that I shall say more concerning this duty is to put you in mind of the great Benefits of it. As first, that by this trusting upon God, you engage and bind him to provide for you. Men, you know, think themselves highly concerned not to fail those that depend and trust upon them: and certainly God doth so much more. But then secondly, there is a great deal of ease and quiet in practice of this duty: it delivers us from all those carkings

THE BENEFITS  
OF TRUSTING ON  
GOD.

and immoderate cares which disquiet our minds, break our sleep, and gnaw even our very heart. I doubt not but those that have felt them need not be told they are uneasy. But then methinks that uneasiness should make us forward to embrace the means for the removing of them ; and so we see it too often doth in unlawful ones ; men will cheat, and steal, and lie, and do any thing to deliver themselves from the fear of want : but alas ! they commonly prove but deceitful remedies ; they bring God's curse on us, and so are more likely to betray us to want, than to keep us from it. But if you desire a certain and unfailing cure for cares, take this of relying upon God.

59. For what should cause that man to fear want that knows he hath one that cares for him, who is All-sufficient, and will not suffer him to want what is fit for him ? If a poor man had but a faithful promise from a wealthy person that he would never suffer him to want, it is sure he would be highly cheered with it, and would not then think fit to be as carking as he was before : and yet a man's promise may fail us ; he may either grow poor and not be able, or he may prove false and not be willing, to make good his word. But we know, God is subject neither to impoverishing nor deceit. And therefore how vile an injury do we offer to him, if we dare not trust as much upon his promise as we would that of a man ! Yea, and how great a mischief do we do ourselves by loading our minds with a multitude of vexatious and tormenting cares, when we may so securely *cast our burden upon God!* I conclude this in the words of the Apostle, PHIL. iv. 6, *Be careful in nothing, but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known to God.*

## SUNDAY II.

Of Humility, of Submission to God's Will in respect of Obedience ; of Patience in all sorts of Sufferings, and of Honour due to God in several ways, in his House, Possession, his Day, Word, Sacraments, &c.

A SIXTH Duty to God is HUMILITY ; that is, such a sense of our own meanness and his excellency, as may work in us lowly and unfeigned submission to him : this submission is twofold ; first, to his will, secondly, to his wisdom.

2. The submission to his will is also of two sorts, the submission either of Obedience or Patience ; that of Obedience is our ready yielding ourselves up to do his will, so that when God hath by his command made known to us what his pleasure is, cheerfully and readily to set about it. To enable us to this, humility is exceedingly necessary ; for a proud person is of all others the unaptest to obey, and we see men never pay an obedience but where they acknowledge the person commanding to be some way above them ; and so it is here. If we be not thoroughly persuaded that God is infinitely above us, that we are vileness and nothing in comparison of him, we shall never pay our due obedience.

3. Therefore, if ever you mean to obey entirely (as you must if ever you mean to be saved) get your hearts possessed with the sense of that great unspeakable distance that is between God and you. Consider him as he is a God of infinite majesty and glory ; and we poor worms of the earth : he infinite in power, able to do all things ; and we able to do nothing, not so much as to make one *hair white or black*, as our Saviour speaks, MATT. v. 36 : he of infinite purity and holiness ; and we polluted and defiled, wallowing in all kinds of sins and uncleanness : he unchangeable and constant ; and we subject to change and alteration every minute of our lives : he eternal and immortal ; and we frail mortals, that whenever he *taketh away our breath we die and are turned again to our dust*, PSALM civ. 29. Consider all this, I say, and you cannot but acknowledge a

SUBMISSION TO  
GOD'S WILL IN  
RESPECT OF  
OBEDIENCE.

THE GREAT DIS-  
TANCE BETWEEN  
GOD AND US.

wide difference between God and man, and therefore may well cry out with Job, after he had approached so near to God, as to discern somewhat of his excellency, JOB xlvi. 5, 6, *Now mine eye seeth thee, wherefore I abhor myself and repent in dust and ashes.*

4. And even when this humility hath brought us to obedience, it is not then to be cast off, as **THE UNWORTHINESS OF OUR BEST WORKS.** if we had no farther use of it; for there is still great use, nay necessity of it, to keep

us from any high conceits of our performances, which if we once entertain, it will blast the best of them, and make them utterly unacceptable to God; like the strictness of the Pharisee, which when once he came to boast of, the Publican was preferred before him, LUKE xviii. The best of our works are so full of infirmity and pollution, that if we compare them with that perfection and purity which is in God, we may truly say with the Prophet, *All our righteousness are as filthy rags*, ISAIAH lxiv. 6, and therefore to pride ourselves in them is the same madness that it would be in a beggar to brag of his apparel, when it is nothing but vile rags and tatters. Our Saviour's precept in this matter must always be remembered, LUKE xvii. 10, *When you have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants.* If when we have done all, we must give ourselves no better a title, what are we then to esteem ourselves, that are so far from doing any considerable part of what we are commanded? Surely that worser name of *slothful and wicked servant*, MATT. xxv. 26, we have no reason to think too bad for us.

5. A second sort of submission to his will is that of **SUBMISSION IN RESPECT OF PATIENCE.** Patience; this stands in suffering his will, as that of obedience did in acting it, and is nothing else but a willing and quiet yielding to whatever afflictions it pleases God to lay upon us. This the forementioned humility will make easy to us; for when our hearts are thoroughly possessed with that reverence and esteem of God, it will be impossible for us to grudge or murmur at whatever he does. We see an instance of it in old Eli, 1 SAM. iii., who after he had heard the sad threatenings of God against him, of the destruction of his family, the loss of the priesthood, the cutting off both his sons in one day, which were all of them afflictions of the heaviest kind, yet this one consideration, that it was

the Lord, enabled him calmly and quietly to yield to them ; saying, *Let him do what seemeth him good*, verse 18. The same effect it had on David, in his suffering, PSALM xxxix. 9, *I was dumb, I opened not my mouth, because thou didst it.* God's doing it silenced all murmurings and grumblings in him. And so must it do in us, in all our afflictions, if we will indeed approve our humility to God.

6. For surely you will not think that child hath due humility to his parent, or that servant to his master, that when they are corrected, shall fly in the father's or master's face. But this do we whenever we grudge and repine at that which God lays upon us. But besides the want of humility in our so doing, there is also a great want of justice in it ; for God hath, as we are his creatures, a right to do with us what he will, and therefore for us to resist that right of his, is the highest injustice that can be ; nay farther, it is also the greatest folly in the world, for it is only our good that God aims at in afflicting us ; that heavenly Father is not like our earthly ones, who sometimes correct their children only to satisfy their own angry humour, not to do them good. But this is subject to no such frailties : *He doth not afflict willingly, nor grieve the children of men*, LAM. iii. 33. They are our sins, which do not only give him just cause, but even force and necessitate him to punish us. He carries to us the bowels and affections of the tenderest father ; now when a father sees his child stubborn and rebellious, and running on in a course that will certainly undo him, what greater act of fatherly kindness can he do than chasten and correct him ; to see if by that means he may amend him ? Nay indeed he could not be said to have true kindness to him if he should not. And thus it is with God, when he sees us run on in sin : either he must leave off to love us, and so leave us to ourselves to take our own course, and that is the heaviest curse that can befall any man ; or else, if he continue to love us, he must correct and punish us to bring us to amendment. Therefore whenever he strikes, we are in all reason, not only patiently to lie under his rod, but (as I may say) kiss it also ; that is, be very thankful to him, that he is pleased not to *give us over to our own heart's lusts*, PSALM lxxxi. 12 ; but still continues his care of us ; sends afflictions, as so many messengers to call us home to himself. You see then how gross a folly it

THANKFULNESS  
FOR GOD'S COR-  
RECTIONS.

is to murmur at those stripes which are meant so graciously ; it is like that of a foward patient, which reproaches and reviles the physician that comes to cure him ; and if such a one be left to die of his disease, every one knows whom he is to thank for it.

7. But it is not only quietness, nor thankfulness neither under afflictions, that is the full of our duty in this matter ; we must have

**FRUITFULNESS  
UNDER THEM.** Fruitfulness also, or all the rest will stand us in no stead. By fruitfulness I mean the bringing forth that, which the afflictions were sent to work in us, viz. the amendment of our lives. To which purpose in time of affliction it is very necessary for us to call ourselves to an account, to examine our hearts and lives, and search diligently what sins lie upon us, which provoked God thus to smite us, and whatsoever we find ourselves guilty of, humbly to confess to God, and immediately to forsake for the rest of our time.

8. All I shall add concerning this duty of patience, is, that we are as much bound to it in one **IN ALL SORTS OF  
SUFFERINGS.** sort of sufferings, as another ; whether our sufferings be so immediately from God's

hand, that no creature hath any thing to do in it, as sickness, or the like ; or whether it be such, wherein men are the instruments of afflicting us. For it is most sure when any man doth us hurt, he could not do it without God's permission and sufferance, and God may as well make them the instruments of punishing us, as do it more directly by himself ; and it is but a counterfeit patience, that pretends to submit to God, and yet can bear nothing from men. We see holy Job, who is set forth to us as a pattern of true patience, made no such difference in his afflictions ; he took the loss of his cattle, which the Chaldeans and Sabeans robbed him of, with the very same meekness with which he did that which was consumed by fire from heaven. When therefore we suffer any thing from men, be it never so unjustly in respect of them, we are yet to confess it is most just in respect of God ; and therefore instead of looking upon them with rage and revenge, as the common custom of the world is, we are to look up to God, acknowledge his justice in the affliction, begging his pardon most earnestly for those sins which have provoked him to send it, and patiently and thankfully bear it till he shall see fit to remove

it; still saying with Job, *Blessed be the name of the Lord.*

9. But I told you Humility contained in it a submission not only to his Will, but also to his Wisdom ; that is, to acknowledge him infinitely wise, and therefore, that whatever he doth is best and fittest to be done. And this we are to confess both in his commands, and in his disposing and ordering of things. First, whatsoever he commands us either to believe or do, we are to submit to his wisdom in both ; to believe whatsoever he bids us believe, how impossible soever it seems to our shallow understandings ; and to do whatever he commands us to do, how contrary soever it be to our fleshy reason or humour ; and in both to conclude, that his commands are most fit and reasonable, however they appear to us.

10. Secondly, we are to submit to his Wisdom in respect of his Disposal and ordering of things ; to acknowledge he disposes all things most wisely, and that not only in what concerns the world in general, but also in what concerns every one of us in particular ; so that in what condition soever he puts us, we are to assure ourselves it is that which is best for us, since he chooses it for us who cannot err. And therefore never to have impatient desires of any thing in this world, but to leave it to God to fit us with such an estate and condition as he sees best for us, and there let us quietly and contentedly rest ; yea, though it be such as of all others we should least have wished for ourselves. And this surely cannot but appear very reasonable to any that hath humility : for that having taught him, that God is infinitely wise, and he very foolish, he can never doubt but that it is much more for his good that God should choose for him than he for himself ; even as it is much more for the child's good to have the parent choose for it, than to be left to those silly choices it would make for itself. For how many times would it cut, and burn, and mischief itself if it might have every thing it desires ? And such children are we, we many times eagerly desire those things which would undo us if we had them. Thus many times we wish for wealth, and honour, and beauty, and the like, when, if we had them, they would only prove snares to us ; we should be drawn into sin by them. And

SUBMISSION TO  
GOD'S WISDOM.

IN HIS COM-  
MANDS.

IN HIS DISPO-  
SALS.

this God, who knows all things, sees, though we do not, and therefore often denies us those things which he sees will tend to our mischief; and it is his abundant mercy that he doth so. Let us therefore, whenever we are disappointed of any of our aims and wishes, not only patiently but joyfully submit to it, as knowing that it is certainly best for us, it being chosen by the unerring wisdom of our heavenly Father.

**11. A seventh Duty to God, is HONOUR;** that is, the HONOUR. paying him such a reverence and respect as belongs to so great a Majesty. And this is either inward or outward. The inward is the exalting him in our hearts, having always the highest and most excellent esteem of him. The outward is the manifesting and showing forth that inward; and that is the first general in the whole course of our lives, the living like men that do indeed carry that high esteem of God. Now you know if we bear any special Reverence but to a Man, we will be careful not to do any foul or base thing in his presence; and so if we do indeed honour God, we shall abhor to do any unworthy thing in his sight. But God sees all things, and therefore there is no way to shun the doing it in his sight if we do it at all; therefore if we do thus reverence him, we must never at any time do any sinful thing.

**12. But besides this general way of honouring God,** there are many particular acts by which we may honour him; and these acts are divers, according to the several particulars about GOD. which they are exercised. For we are to pay this honour not only immediately to himself, but also by a due estimation and account of all those things that nearly relate or belong to him. Those are especially six: first, his House; secondly, his Revenue or Income (as I may say); thirdly, his Day; fourthly, his Word; fifthly, his Sacraments; and sixthly, his Name; and every one of these is to have some degree of our reverence and esteem.

**13. First, his House;** that is, the Church: which being IN HIS HOUSE. the place set apart for his public worship, we are to look on it, though not as holy in respect of itself, yet in respect of its use, and therefore must not profane it by employing it to uses of our own. This Christ hath taught us by that act of his, MATT. xxi. 12, in driving the buyers and sellers out of the Temple, saying, *My house*

*is called the house of Prayer:* and again, JOHN ii. 16, *Make not my Father's house a house of Merchandise.* By which it is clear, Churches are to be used only for the services of God, and we are to make that the only end of our coming thither, and not to come to Church as to a Market to make bargains or despatch business with our neighbours, as is too common among many. But whenever thou enterest the Church, remember that it is the House of God, a place where he is in an especial manner present, and therefore take the counsel of the wise man, ECCLES. v. 1, and *keep thy foot when thou goest into the house of God;* that is, behave thyself with that godly awe and reverence which belongs to that great Majesty thou art before. Remember that thy business there is to converse with God, and therefore shut out all thoughts of the world, even of thy most lawful business, which, though they be allowable at another time, are here sinful. How fearful a guilt is it then, to entertain any such thoughts as are in themselves wicked? It is like the treason of Judas, who pretended indeed to come to kiss his Master, but brought with him a band of soldiers to apprehend him, MATT. xxvi. We make show, in our coming to Church, of serving and worshipping God, but we bring with us a train of his enemies to provoke and despite him. This is a wickedness that may outvie the profaneness of these days, in turning Churches into Stables; for sinful and polluted thoughts are much the worse sort of beasts.

14. The second thing to which respect belongs, is his revenue or income; that is, whatsoever is his peculiar possessions, set apart for the maintenance of those that attend his service;

IIIIS POSSES-  
SIONS.

those were the Priests in time of the Law, and Ministers of the Gospel now with us. And whatever is thus set apart, we must look on with such respect as not to dare to turn it to any other use. Of this sort some are the free-will offerings of men, who have sometimes of their own accord given some of their goods or land to this holy use; and whatsoever is so given can neither by the person that gave, nor any other, be taken away, without that great sin of sacrilege.

15. But besides these, there was among the Jews, and hath always been in all Christian nations, something allotted, by the law of the nation, for the support and maintenance of those that attend the service of God. And it is but just and

necessary it should be so, that those who by undertaking that calling are taken off from the ways of gaining a livelihood in the world, should be provided for by them whose souls they watch over. And, therefore, it is most reasonable which the Apostle urges in this matter, 1 COR. ix. 11, *If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?* That is, it is most reasonable for men to grudge the bestowing a few carnal things, the outward necessaries of this temporal life, on them from whom they receive spiritual things, even instruction and assistance towards the obtaining of an eternal life.

16. Now whatsoever is thus appointed for this use, may

**THE GREAT SIN OF SACRILEGE.** by no means be employed to any other. And, therefore, those tithes which are here

by law allotted for the maintenance of the ministry, must by no means be kept back, nor any tricks or shifts used to avoid the payment either in whole or in part. For first, it is certain, that it is as truly theft as any other robbery can be, ministers having right to their tithes by the same law which gives any other man right to his estate. But then secondly, it is another manner of robbery than we think of, it is a robbing of God, whose service they were given to maintain; and that you may not doubt the truth of this, it is no more than God himself hath said of it, MAL. iii. 8. *Will a man rob God? yet ye have robbed me; yet ye say, Wherein have we robbed thee? In tithes and offerings.* Here it is most plain that in God's account the withholding tithes is a robbing of him. And if you please, you may in the next verse see what the gain of this robbery amounts to, *Ye are cursed with a curse.* A curse is all is gotten by it; and common experience shows us, that God's vengeance doth in a remarkable manner pursue this sin of sacrilege, whether it be that of withholding tithes, or the other of seizing on those possessions which have been voluntarily consecrated to God.

**THE PUNISHMENT.** Men think to enrich themselves by it, but it usually proves di-

rectly contrary; this unlawful gain becomes such a canker in the estate, as often eats out even that we had a just title to. And therefore, if you love (I will not say your souls, but) your estates, preserve them from that danger by a strict care never to meddle with any thing set apart for God.

17. A third thing wherein we are to express our reverence to God, is the hallowing of the Times set apart for his Service. He who hath given all our time requires some part of it to be paid back again, as a rent or tribute of the whole. Thus the Jews kept holy the seventh day, and we Christians the Sunday or Lord's day: the Jews were in their Sabbath especially to remember the creation of the world, and we in ours, the Resurrection of Christ by which a way is made for us into that better world we expect hereafter. Now this day thus set apart is to be employed in the Worship and Service of God, and that first more solemnly and publicly in the Congregation, from which no man must then absent himself without a just cause: and secondly, privately at home, in praying with and instructing our families, or else in the yet more private duties of the closet; a man's own private prayers, reading, meditation, and the like.

And that we may be at leisure for these, a rest from all worldly business is commanded; therefore let no man think that a bare rest from labour is all that is required of him on the Lord's day, but the time which he saves from the works of his calling, he is to lay out on those spiritual duties. For the Lord's day was never ordained to give us a pretence for idleness, but only to change our employment from worldly to heavenly; much less was it meant that by our rest from our callings, we should have more time free to bestow upon our sins, as too many do, who are more constant on that day at the Ale-house than the Church. But this rest was commanded, first, to shadow out to us that rest from sin which we are bound to all the days of our lives. And secondly, to take us off from our worldly business, and to give us time to attend the service of God, and the need of our souls.

18. And surely, if we rightly consider it, it is a very great benefit to us, that there is such a set time thus weekly returning for that purpose. We are very intent and busy upon the world; and if there were not some such time appointed to our hands, it is to be doubted we should hardly allot any ourselves: and then what a starved condition must these poor souls of ours be in, that shall never be afforded a meal? Whereas now, there is a constant diet provided for them: every Sunday, if we will conscientiously employ it, may be a festival day to them, may bring them in such spiritual

food as may nourish them to eternal life. We are not to look on this day with grudging, like those in AMOS viii. 5, who ask, *When will the Sabbath be gone, that we may set forth wheat?* as if that time were utterly lost, which were taken from our worldly business. But we are to consider it as the gainfullest, as the joyfulness day of the week, a day of harvest, wherein we are to lay up in store for the whole week, nay, for our whole lives.

19. But besides this of the weekly Lord's day, there are

**THE FEASTS OF THE CHURCH.** other times which the Church hath set apart for the remembrance of some special mercies of God, such as the Birth and

Resurrection of Christ, the Descent of the Holy Ghost, and the like; and these days we are to keep in that manner which the Church hath ordained, to wit in the solemn worship of God, and in particular thanksgiving for that special blessing we then remember. And surely, whoever is truly thankful for those rich mercies cannot think it too much to set apart some few days in a year for that purpose.

But then we are to look that our Feasts be truly spiritual, by employing the day thus holily, and not make it an occasion of intemperance and disorder, as too many, who consider nothing in Christmas and other good times, but the good cheer and jollity of them. For that is doing despite instead of honour to Christ, who came to bring all purity and soberness into the world, and, therefore, must not have that coming of his remembered in any other manner.

20. Other days there are also set apart in memory of the Apostles, and other Saints, wherein we are to give hearty thanks to God for his graces in them; particularly that they were made instruments of revealing to us Christ Jesus, and the way of salvation, as you know the Apostles were by their preaching throughout the world. And then farther we are to meditate on those examples of holy life they have given us, and stir up ourselves to the imitation thereof. And whosoever does uprightly set himself to make these uses of these several Holy-days will have cause, by the benefit he shall find from them, to thank, and not to blame, the Church for ordering them.

21. Another sort of days there are, which we are likewise to observe, and those are days of Fasting and Humiliation; and whatever of this kind the Church enjoins, whether constantly at set times of

the year, or upon any special and more sudden occasion, we are to observe in such manner as she directs ; that is, not only a bare abstaining from meat, which is only the body's punishment ; but in afflicting our souls, humbling them deeply before God, in a hearty confessing and bewailing of our own and the nation's sins, and earnest prayer for God's pardon and forgiveness, and for the turning away of those judgments, which those sins have called for : but above all, in *turning ourselves from our sins, loosing the bands of wickedness*, as Isaiah speaks, Chap. lviii. 6 ; and exercising ourselves in works of mercy, *dealing our bread to the hungry*, and the like, as it there follows.

22. Fourthly, we are to express our reverence to God, by honouring his Word ; and this we must GOD'S WORD. certainly do if we do indeed honour him, there being no surer sign of our despising any person than the setting light by what he says to us ; as on the contrary, if we value one, every word he speaks will be of weight with us. Now this Word of God is expressly contained in the holy Scriptures, the Old and New Testament, where he speaks to us, to show us THE HOLY SCRIP- his Will and our duty. And therefore to TURES. this Word of his we are to bear a wonderful respect, to look upon it as the rule by which we must frame all the actions of our life ; and to that end to study it much, to read in it as often as we can ; if it may be, never to let a day pass us without reading or hearing some part of it read.

23. But then that is not all : we must not only read, but we must mark what we read ; we must diligently observe what Duties there are which God commands us to perform, what faults they are which God there charges us not to commit ; together with the rewards promised to the one, and the punishment threatened to the other. When we have thus marked, we must lay them up in our memory ; not so loosely and carelessly that they shall presently drop out again ; but we must so fasten them there by often thinking and meditating on them, that we may have them ready for our use. Now that use is the directing of our lives ; and, therefore, whenever we are tempted to the committing of evil, we are then to call to mind, this is the thing which in such a Scripture is forbidden by God, and all his vengeance threatened against it ; and so in like manner, when any opportunity is offered us of doing good, to remember,

this is the duty which I was exhorted to in such a Scripture, and such glorious rewards promised to the doing of it: and by these considerations strengthen ourselves for resistance of the evil and performance of the good.

24. But besides this of the written Word, it hath pleased God to provide yet farther for our instruction by his Ministers, whose office it is to teach us God's Will, not by saying any thing contrary to the written Word (for whatsoever is so can never be God's Will,) but by explaining it, and making it easier to our understandings, and then applying it to our particular occasions, and exhorting and stirring us up to the practice of it; all which is the end at which first their catechizing and then their preaching aimeth. And to this we are to bear also a due respect by giving diligent heed thereto, not only being present at catechizing and sermons, and either sleep out the time or think of somewhat else, but carefully marking what is said to us; and surely, if we did but rightly consider how much it concerns us, we should conclude it very reasonable for us to do so.

25. For first, as to that of Catechizing, it is the laying the foundation upon which all Christian practice must be built; for that is the teaching us our duty, without which it is impossible for us to perform it. And though it is true that the Scriptures are the fountains, from whence this knowledge of duty must be fetched, yet there are many who are not able to draw it from this Fountain themselves, and therefore it is absolutely necessary it should be thus brought to them by others.

26. This catechizing is generally looked upon as a thing belonging only to the youth; and so indeed it ought, not because the oldest are not to learn, if they be ignorant, but because all children should be so instructed, that it should be impossible for them to be ignorant when they come to years. And it nearly concerns every parent, as they will free themselves from the guilt of their children's eternal undoing, that they be careful to see them instructed in all necessary things; to which purpose, it will be fit early to teach them some short Catechism, of which sort none so fit as the Church Catechism; yet are they not to rest on these endeavours of their own, but also to call in the Minister's help, that he may build them up farther in Christian knowledge.

27. But, alas! it is too sure that Parents have very much

neglected this Duty, and by that means it is that such multitudes of men and women that are call Christians, know no more of Christ, or any thing that concerns their own Souls, than the merest Heathen.

28. But although it were their Parents' fault that they were not instructed when they were young, yet it is now their own, if they remain still ignorant; and it is sure it will be their own ruin and misery if they wilfully continue so. Therefore whoever it be, of what age or condition soever, that is in this ignorant estate, or in any such degree of it that he wants any part of necessary knowledge, let him as he loves his soul, as ever he would escape eternal damnation, seek out for instruction, and let no fear of shame keep any from it; for, first, it is certain the shame belongs only to the wilful continuing in ignorance, to which the desire of learning is directly contrary, and is so far from a shameful, that it is a most commendable thing, and will be sure to be so accounted by all wise and good men. But secondly, suppose some profane, senseless people should deride it, yet sure that shame were in all reason to be undergone joyfully, rather than venture on that confusion of face which will at the day of Judgment befall those who, to avoid a little false shame amongst them, have gone on in a wilful ignorance of their duty, which ignorance will be so far from excusing any sins they shall commit, that it adds one great and heavy sin to all the rest, even the despising that knowledge which is offered to them. How heinous a sin that is, you may learn in the first Chapter of the Proverbs, where *hatting knowledge*, verse 29, is said to be the thing that draws down those sad vengeance forementioned, even God's forsaking men, laughing at their calamity instead of helping them: which is of all other conditions in the world the most miserable; and surely they are madly desperate that will run themselves into it.

29. As for those who have already this foundation laid by the knowledge of the grounds of Christian Religion, there is yet for them a farther help provided by PREACHING. And it is no more than needs, for God knows, those that understand their duty well enough are too apt to forget it; nay, sometimes by the violence of their own lusts to transgress it even when they do remember it; and, therefore, it is very useful we should be put in mind of it to prevent our forgetting, and also often exhorted and

assisted to withstand those lusts which draw us to those transgressions. And to these purposes preaching is intended, first, to warn us to be upon our guard against our spiritual enemy, and then to furnish us with weapons for the fight; that is, such means and helps as may best enable us to beat off temptations and get the victory over them.

30. Since, therefore, this is the end of Preaching, we must not think we have done our duty, when we have heard a sermon, though never so attentively, but we must lay up in our hearts those instructions and advices we there meet with, and use them faithfully to that end of overcoming our sins. Therefore, whenever thou comest to the Physician of the Soul, do as thou wouldest with the Physician of thy Body; thou comest to him not only to hear him talk and tell thee what will cure thee, but also to do according to his directions: and if thou dost not so here, thou art as vain as he that expects a bare receipt from his doctor shall cure him, though he never make use of it. Nay, thou art much more vain and ridiculous; for that, though it will do him good, it will do him no harm; he shall never be the worse for having been taught a medicine, though he use it not: but in these spiritual receipts it is otherwise; if we use them not to our good, they will do us a great deal of harm, they will rise up in judgment against us, and make our condemnation so much the heavier. Beware, therefore, not to bring that danger upon thyself; but when thou hast heard a Sermon, consider with thyself what directions there were in it for enabling thee to eschew evil, or to do good. And if there were any thing especially concerned thine own bosom sin, lay that close to thy heart, and all the week after make it matter of meditation: think of it even whilst thou art at thy work, if thou wantest other time! and not only think of it, but set to the practice of it, do what thou wert advised to, for the subduing sins, and quickening grace to thee. Finally, look carefully to practice the counsel of the Apostle, JAMES i. 22. *Be ye doers of the Word, not hearers only, deceiving your own souls.* To hope for good from the Word without doing it, is, it seems, nothing but a deceiving ourselves: let us never, therefore, measure our godliness by the number of Sermons which we hear, as if the hearing many were the certain mark of a good Christian; but by the store of fruit we bring forth by them, without which all our hearing will serve but to bring us into that heavier por-

tion of stripes, which belongs to him *that knows his Master's will, and doeth it not*, LUKE xii. 47. But this reverence which is due to preaching we must not pay to all that is now-a-days called so, for God knows there are many *false Prophets gone out into the world*, as the Apostle speaks, 1 JOHN iv. 1. And now, if ever, is that advice of his necessary, *To try the spirits whether they be of God*. But what I have said I mean only of the preaching of those who first have a lawful calling to the office ; and secondly, frame their doctrine according to the right rule, the written Word of God. But if any man say, he is not able to judge whether the doctrine be according to the Word or no, let him at least try it by the common known rules of duty which he doth understand, and if he find it a doctrine giving men liberty to commit those things which are by all acknowledged sins, such as rebellion, injustice, unmercifulness, uncleanness, or the like, he may conclude it is utterly contrary to God and his Word, and then abhorrence, and not reverence, belongs to it.

31. Fifthly, we are to express our honouring of God by reverencing his Sacraments ; those are two, THE SACRA-  
MENTS. Baptism, and the Supper of the Lord.— And this we do, first, by our high esteem of them : secondly, by our reverent usage of them : we are first to prize them at a high rate, looking on them as the instruments of bringing to us the greatest blessings we can receive. The first of them, Baptism, that enters us into covenant with God, makes us members of Christ, and so gives us right to all those precious benefits that flow from him, to wit, pardon of sins, sanctifying grace, and heaven itself, upon condition we perform our parts of the covenant. And as for the Lord's Supper, that is not only a sign and remembrance of Christ and his Death ; but it is actually the giving Christ, and all the fruits of his death, to every worthy receiver ; and, therefore, there is a most high estimation and value due to each of them.

32. And not only so ; but in the second place we must show our reverence in our usage of them ; OF BAPTISM. and that first, Before ; secondly, At ; thirdly, After the time of receiving them. It is true that the Sacrament of Baptism being now administered to us, when we are Infants, it is not to be expected of us, that we should in our own persons do any thing, either before or at the time

of receiving it; those performances were strictly required of all persons who were baptized when they were of years. But for us, it suffices to give us this right to Baptism, that we are born within the pale of the Church, that is, of Christian parents: and all that is required at that time is, what we can only perform by others, they in our stead promising that when we come to years we will perform our parts of the Covenant. But by how much the less we are then able to do so much, the greater bond lies on us to perform those after-duties required of us, by which we are to supply the want of the former.

33. Now if you would know what those duties are, look over those promises which your Godfathers and Godmothers then made in your name, and you may then learn them. I

**THE VOW OF BAPTISM.** cannot give you them in a better form than that of our Church's Catechism, which tells us, *That our Godfathers and Godmothers did promise and vow three things in our names; first, that we should forsake the Devil and all his works, and pomps and vanities of this wicked world, and all the sinful lusts of the flesh.* Where, by the Devil, is meant, first, the worshipping of all false gods, which is indeed but worshipping the Devil. A sin, which at the time of Christ's coming into the world was very common, most part of mankind then living in that vile idolatry. And therefore when Baptism was first ordained, it was but needful to make the forsaking of those false gods a principal part of the vow. And though those false worships are now much rarer, yet there was one special part of them, which may be feared to be yet too common among us, and that is all sorts of uncleanness, which though we do not make ceremonies of our religion, as the Heathens did of theirs, yet the committing thereof is a most high provocation in God's eyes, such as drew him to destroy whole *cities with fire and brimstone*, as you may read, GEN. xix. nay, the *whole world with water*, GEN. vi. and will not fail to bring down judgments, and strange ones, on any that continue therein; and therefore the forsaking them well deserves to be looked on as an especial part of this promise. Besides this, all dealing with the Devil is here vowed against, whether it be by practising witchcraft ourselves, or consulting with those that do, upon any occasion whatever, as the recovery of our health, our goods, or whatever else; for this is a degree of

the former sin, it is the forsaking of the Lord, and setting up the Devil for our God, whilst we go to him in our needs for help.

34. But we also renounce all the works of the Devil ; and those are either in general all those that the Devil tempts us to, or else those particular kinds of sin which have most of his image on them ; that is, those which he himself most practises, such are pride (which brought him from being an Angel of light to the accursed condition he is now in) and lying ; he is, as our Saviour saith, JOHN viii. 44, *A liar, and the father of it* ; and such also are malice and envy, especially killing and destroying of others, for he was a *murderer from the beginning*, JOHN viii. 44. But above all, there is nothing wherein we become so like him, as in tempting and drawing others to sin, which is his whole trade and business ; and if we make it any part of ours, we become like that *roaring lion, that goes about seeking whom he may devour*, 1 PET. v. 8.

35. The second thing we vow to forsake, is the *pomps and vanities of this wicked world*. By the pomps and vanities there are several things meant ; some of them such as were used by the Heathens in some unlawful sports of theirs, wherein we are not now so much concerned, there being none of them remaining among us ; but besides that, there is meant all excess, either in diet, or sports, or apparel, when we keep not those due measures, which either by the general rules of sobriety, or the particular circumstances of our qualities and callings, we are bound to. Next, by the wicked world, we may understand, first, the wealth and greatness of the world, which though we do not so totally renounce, that it is unlawful for a Christian to be either rich or great, yet we thus far promise to forsake them, that we will not set our hearts upon them, nor either get or keep them by the least unlawful means. Secondly, by the wicked world, we may understand, the companies and customs of the world, which, so far as they are wicked, we here renounce ; that is, we promise never to be drawn by company to the commission of a sin, but rather to forsake the most delightful company than to be ensnared by it : nor yet by custom ; but rather venture the shame of being thought singular, ridiculous persons, walk as it were in a path by ourselves, than put ourselves into that *broad way that leads to destruction*, by giving ourselves over to any sinful custom

how common soever it be grown. If this part of our Vow were but thoroughly considered, it would arm us against most of the temptations the world offers, company and custom being the two special instruments by which it works on us.

36. A third thing we renounce, is all the sinful lusts of the flesh ; where the flesh is to be understood in that sense wherein the Scripture often uses it, for the fountain of all disordered affections. For though those unclean desires which we ordinarily call the lusts of the flesh are here meant, yet they are not the only things here contained, there being divers other things which the Scripture calls the *works of the flesh*. I cannot better inform you of them than by setting down the list St Paul gives of them, GAL. v 19, 20, 21, *Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these, adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like.* This with those other descriptions, you will find scattered in several places of Scripture, will show you there are many things contained in this part of your Vow, the forsaking all the sinful lusts of the flesh.

37. The second thing our Godfathers and Godmothers promised for us, was, that *we should believe all the Articles of the Christian Faith.* These we have summed up together in that which we call the Apostles' Creed, which since we promise to believe, we are supposed also to promise to learn them, and that not only the words, but likewise the plain sense of them ; for who can believe what he either never heard of, or knows not any thing of the meaning of it ? Now by this believing is meant not only the consenting to the truth of them, but also the living like them that do believe : as, for example, our believing that God created us should make us live in that subjection and obedience to him, which becomes creatures to their Creator ; the believing that Christ redeemed us should make us yield up ourselves to him as his purchase, to be disposed wholly by him, and employed only in his service ; the believing a judgment to come should give us care so to walk that we may not be condemned in it ; and our believing the life everlasting should make us diligent so to employ our short moment of time here, that our everlasting life may be a life of joy, not of misery to us. In this manner from all the articles of the

Creed, we are to draw motives to confirm us in all Christian practice, to which end it is that our learning and believing of them tends, and therefore without it we are very far from making good this part of our Vow, the *believing all the Articles of the Christian Faith.*

38. The last part of our Vow is, that we *should keep God's holy will and Commandments, and walk in the same all the days of our lives.* Where by *our keeping God's holy will and Commandments,* is meant our doing of all those things which he hath made known to us to be his will we should perform; wherein he hath given us his holy Word to instruct us, and teach us, what it is that he requires of us; and now he expects that we should faithfully do it without favouring ourselves in the breach of any one of his commands. And then in this entire obedience we must walk *all the days of our lives:* that is, we must go on in a constant course of obeying God; not only fetch some steps in his way, but walk in them; and that not for some part of our time, but *all the days of our lives,* never turn out of them, but go on constantly in them, as long as we live in this world.

39. Having now thus briefly explained to you this Vow made at your BAPTISM, all I shall add concerning it, is only to remember you how nearly you are concerned in the keeping it: and that first, in respect of justice; secondly, in respect of advantage and benefit. That you are in justice bound to it, I need say no more but that it is a promise, and you know justice requires of every man the keeping of his promise. But then this is of all other promises the most solemn and binding, for it is a Vow, that is, a promise made to God; and, therefore, we are not only unjust, but foresworn, whenever we break any part of it.

THE STRICT OBLIGATION OF THIS VOW OF BAPTISM.

40. But secondly, we are highly concerned to keep it, in respect of our own benefit. I told you before, that Baptism entered us into a Covenant with God; now a Covenant is made up of two parts, that is, something promised by the one party, and something by the other of the parties that make the Covenant. And if one of them break his part of the Covenant, that is, perform not what he hath agreed to, he can in no reason look that the other should make good his. And so it is here, God doth indeed promise those

benefits before mentioned, and that is his part of the Covenant. But then we also undertake to perform the several things contained in this Vow of Baptism, and that is our part of it; and unless we do indeed perform them, God is not tied to make good his, and so we forfeit all those precious benefits and advantages, we are left in that natural and miserable estate of ours, *children of wrath, enemies to God, and heirs of eternal damnation.* And now what can be the pleasure that any or all sins can afford us, that can make us the least degree of recompense for such a loss, the loss of God's favour and grace here, and the loss of our own souls hereafter? For as our Saviour saith, MARK viii. 36, *What shall it profit a man if he gain the whole world and lose his own soul?* Yet this mad bargain we make whenever we break any part of this our Vow of Baptism. It, therefore, most nearly concerns us to consider sadly of it, to remember that every sin we commit is a direct breach of this our Vow; and, therefore, when thou art tempted to any sin, seem it never so lightly, say not of it as Lot did of Zoar, GEN. xix. 20, *Is it not a little one?* But consider that whatever it is, that thou hast in thy Baptism vowed against it; and then, be it never so little, it draws a great one at the heels of it, no less than that of being foresworn, which whoever commits, God hath in the third Commandment pronounced, *He will not hold him guiltless.* And that we may the better keep this Vow, it will be very useful often to repeat to ourselves the several branches of it, that so we may still have it ready in our minds to set against all temptations; and surely it is so excellent a weapon, that if we do not either cast it aside, or use it very negligently, it will enable us, by God's help, to put to flight our spiritual adversary. And this is that reverence we are to pay to this first Sacrament, that of Baptism.

## SUNDAY III.

Of the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper. Of Preparation before, as Examination; Of Repentance, Faith, Obedience, of Duties to be done at the Receiving and afterwards, &c.

Now follows the reverence due to the Sacrament of the **LORD'S SUPPER**; and in this I must follow my first division, and set down, first, what is to be done before; secondly, at; and, thirdly, after the time of receiving; for in this Sacrament we cannot be excused from any one of these, though in the former we are.

2. And first, for that which is to be done before, St. Paul tells us, it is Examination, 1 COR. xi. 28, *But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread and drink of that cup.* But before I proceed to the particulars of this Examination, I must in the general tell you, that the special business we have to do in this Sacrament, is to repeat and renew that Covenant we made with God in our Baptism, which we having many ways grievously broken, it pleases God, in his great mercy, to suffer us to come to the renewing of it in this Sacrament, which, if we do in sincerity of heart, he hath promised to accept us, and give us all those benefits in this, which he was ready to bestow in the other Sacrament, if we had not by our own fault forfeited them. Since then, the renewing of our Covenant is our business at this time, it follows that these three things are necessary towards it: first, that we understand what the Covenant is; secondly, that we consider what our breaches of it have been; and thirdly, that we resolve upon a strict observance of it, for the rest of our life. And the trying ourselves in every one of these particulars, is that examination which is required of us before we come to this Sacrament.

3. And first, we are to examine whether we understand what this Covenant is: this is exceeding necessary, as being the foundation of both the other; for it is neither possible to discover our past sins, nor to settle purposes against them for the future, without it. Let this therefore, be your first

THE LORD'S  
SUPPER.

THINGS TO BE  
DONE BEFORE  
RECEIVING.

EXAMINATION.

business: Try whether you rightly understand what that Covenant is, which you entered into at your Baptism, what be the Mercies promised on God's part, and the Duties on yours. And, because the Covenant made with each of us in Baptism is only the applying to our particulars the Covenant made by God in Christ with all mankind in general, you are to consider whether you understand that; if you do not, you must immediately seek for instruction in it. And till we have means of gaining better, look over what is briefly said in the instance to this Treatise, concerning the **SECOND COVENANT**, which is the foundation of that Covenant which God makes with us in our Baptism. And because you will there find, that obedience to all God's commands is the condition required of us, and is also that which we expressly vow in our Baptism, it is necessary you should likewise know what those commands of God are. Therefore, if you find you are ignorant of them, never be at rest till you have got yourself instructed in them, and have gained such a measure of knowledge as may direct you to do that *Whole Duty of Man* which God requires. And the giving thee this instruction is the only aim of this Book, which, the more ignorant thou art, the more earnestly I shall intreat thee diligently to read. And if thou hast hitherto approached to this Holy Sacrament in utter ignorance of these necessary things, bewail thy sin in so doing, but presume not to come again, till thou hast, by gaining this necessary knowledge, fitted thyself for it, which thou must hasten to do. For though no man must come to the Sacrament in such ignorance, yet if he wilfully continue in it, that will be no excuse to him for keeping from this Holy Table.

4. The second part of our examination is concerning our breaches of this Covenant; and here thou wilt find the use of that knowledge I speake of. For there is no way of discovering what our sins have been, but by trying our actions by that which should be the rule of them, the Law of God. When, therefore, thou settest to this part of examination, remember what are the several branches of thy duty, and then **SEVERAL SORTS.** ask thy own heart in every particular, how thou hast performed it. And content not thyself with knowing in general, that thou hast broken God's law, but do thy utmost to discover in what particulars thou hast done so. Recall, as well as thou canst, all the passages of thy life,

and in each of them consider what part of that duty hath been transgressed by it. And that not only in the grosser act, but in word also; nay, even in thy most secret thoughts: for though man's law reaches not to them, yet God's doth; so that whatever he forbids in the act, he forbids likewise in the thoughts and desires, and sees them as clearly as our most public acts. This particular search is exceeding necessary: for there is no promise of forgiveness of any sin but only to him that confesseth and forsaketh it. Now to both these it is necessary that we have a direct and particular knowledge of our sins. For how can he either confess his sin, that knows not his guilt of it? or how can he resolve to forsake it, that discerns not himself to have formerly cleaved to it? Therefore, we may surely conclude, that this examination is not only useful, but necessary towards a full and complete repentance; for he that does not take this particular view of his sins, will be likely to repent but by halves, which will never avail him towards his pardon; nothing but an entire forsaking of every evil way being sufficient for that. But surely of all other times it concerns us, that when we come to the Sacrament our repentance be full and complete; and, therefore, this strict search of our own hearts is then especially necessary. For, although it be true, that it is not possible by all our diligence to discover or remember every sin of our whole lives, and, though it be also true, that what is so unavoidably hid from us, may be forgiven without any more particular confession than that of David, PSALM xix. 12, *Cleanse thou me from my secret faults:* yet this will be no plea for us, if they come to be secret only, because we are negligent in searching. Therefore take heed of deceiving thyself in this weighty business, but search thy soul to the bottom, without which it is impossible that the wounds thereof should ever be thoroughly cured.

5. And as you are to inquire thus narrowly concerning the several sorts of sins, so also must you concerning the degrees of them, for there are divers circumstances which increase and heighten the sin. Of this sort there are many; as first, when we sin against knowledge; that is, when we certainly know such a thing to be a sin, yet for the present pleasure or profit (or whatever other motive) adventure on it. This is by Christ himself adjudged to be a great heightening of the sin, *He that knows his Master's will and doth it not, shall be beaten with many stripes,* LUKE xii. 47. Se-

condly, when we sin with deliberation; that is, when we do not fall into it of a sudden, ere we are aware, but have time to consider of it, this is another degree of the sin. But thirdly, a yet higher is, when we do it against the resistances and checks of our own conscience, when that at the time tells us, this thing thou oughtest not to do: nay, lays before us the danger as well as the sin of it, yet in spite of these admonitions of conscience, we go on and commit the sin; this is a huge increase of it, such as will raise the least sin into a most high provocation. For it is plain, a sin thus committed must be a wilful one, and then, be the matter of it never so light, it is most heinous in God's eyes. Nay, this is a circumstance of such force, that it may make an indifferent action, that is in itself no sin, become one. For though my conscience should err in telling me such a thing were unlawful, yet so long as I were so persuaded, it were sin for me to do that thing; for in that case, my will consists to the doing a thing which I believe to be displeasing to God, and God (who judges us by our wills, not understandings,) imputes it to me as a sin, as well as if the thing were in itself unlawful. And, therefore, surely we may conclude, that any thing which is in itself sinful is made much more so by being committed against the checks of conscience. A fourth aggravation of a sin is when it hath been often repeated, for then there is not only the guilt of so many more acts, but every act grows also so much worse, and more inexcusable. We always judge thus in faults committed against ourselves: we can forgive a single injury more easily than the same when it hath been repeated, and the oftener it hath been so repeated, the more heinous we account it. And so surely it is in faults against God also. Fifthly, the sins which have been committed after vows and resolutions of amendment are yet more grievous; for that contains also the breaking of those promises. Somewhat of this there is in every wilful sin, because every such is a breach of that vow we make at Baptism. But besides that, we have since bound ourselves by new vows, if at no other time, yet surely at our coming to the Lord's Supper, that being (as was formerly said) purposely to repeat our vows of Baptism. And the more of these vows we have made, so much the greater is our guilt, if we fall back to any sin we then renounced. This is a thing very well worth weighing; and, therefore, examine thyself particularly at thy approach to the Sacrament con-

cerning thy breaches of former vows made at the Holy Table. And if upon any other occasion, as sickness, trouble of mind, or the like, thou hast at any time made any other, call thyself to a strict account how thou hast performed them also, and remember, that every sin committed against such vows is, besides its own natural guilt, a Perjury likewise. Sixthly, a yet higher step is, when a sin hath been so often committed, that we are come to a custom and habit of it: and that is indeed a high degree.

6. Yet even of Habits some are worse than others; as first, if it be so confirmed that we are come to a hardness of heart, have no sense at all of the sin: or, secondly, if we go on in it against any extraordinary means used by God to reform us, such as sickness, or any other affliction which seems to be sent on purpose for our reclaiming. Or, thirdly, if all reproofs and exhortations either of ministers or private friends work not on us, but either make us angry at our reprovers, or set us on defending the sin. Or, lastly, if this sinful habit be so strong in us as to give us a love to the sin, not only in ourselves but in others: if, as the Apostle saith, Rom. i. 32, *We do not only do the things, but take pleasure in them that do them*, and therefore, entice and draw as many as we can into the same sins with us: then it is risen to the highest step of wickedness, and is to be looked on as the utmost degree both of sin and danger. Thus you see how you are to examine yourselves concerning your sins, in each of which you are to consider how many of these heightening circumstances there have been, that so you may aright measure the heinousness of them.

7. Now the end of this examination is, to bring you to such a sight of your sins, as may truly humble you, make you sensible of your own danger, that have provoked so great a Majesty, who is able so sadly to revenge himself upon you. And that will surely even to the most carnal heart appear a reasonable ground of sorrow. But that is not all; it must likewise bring you to a sense and abhorrence of your baseness and ingratitude, that have thus offended so good and gracious a God, that have made such unworthy and unkind returns to those tender and rich mercies of his. And this consideration especially must melt your hearts into a deep sorrow and contrition, the degree whereof must be in some measure answerable to the degree of your sins. And the greater it

is, provided it be not such as shuts up the hope of God's mercy, the more acceptable it is to God, who hath promised not to *despise a broken and contrite heart*, PSALM li. 17. And the more likely it will be also to bring us to amendment; for if we have once felt what the smart of a wounded Spirit is, we shall have the less mind to venture upon sin again.

8. For when we are tempted with any of the short pleasures of sin, we may then out of our own experience set against them the sharp pains and terrors of an accusing conscience, which will to any that hath felt them be able infinitely to outweigh them. Endeavour therefore to bring yourselves to this melting temper, to this deep unfeigned sorrow, and that not only for the danger you have brought upon yourself; for though that be a consideration which may and ought to work sadness in us, yet where that alone is the motive of our sorrow, it is not that sorrow which will avail us for pardon; and the reason of it is clear, for that sorrow proceeds only from the love of ourselves, we are sorry because we are like to smart. But the sorrow of a true penitent must be joined also with the love of God, and that

will make us grieve for having offended

**CONTRITION.** him, though there were no punishment to fall upon ourselves. The way then to stir up this sorrow in us, is first, to stir up our love of God, by repeating to ourselves the many gracious acts of his mercy towards us, particularly that of his sparing us, and not cutting us off in our sins. Consider with thyself how many and how great provocations thou hast offered him, perhaps in a continued course of many years wilful disobedience, for which thou mightest with perfect justice have been ere this sent quick into hell. Nay, possibly thou hast before thee many examples of less sinners than thou art, who have been suddenly snatched away in the midst of their sins. And what cause canst thou give, why thou hast thus long escaped, but only because his eye hath spared thee? And what cause of that sparing, but his tender compassions towards thee, his unwillingness that thou shouldst perish? This consideration, if it be pressed home upon thy soul, cannot choose (if thy heart be not as hard as the nether millstone) but awake somewhat of love in thee towards this gracious, this long-suffering God, and that love will certainly make it appear to thee, that it is an *evil thing and bitter, that thou hast forsaken the Lord*, JER. ii. 19. That thou hast made such wretched requitals of so great mercy;

it will make thee both ashamed and angry at thyself that thou hast been such an unthankful creature. But if the consideration of this one sort of mercy, God's forbearance only, be such an engagement and help to this godly sorrow, what will then be the multitude of those other mercies which every man is able to reckon up to himself? And therefore let every man be as particular in it as he can, call to mind as many of them as he is able, that so he may attain to the greater degree of true contrition.

9. And to all these endeavours must be added earnest prayers to God, that he by his holy Spirit would show you your sins, and soften your hearts, that you may thoroughly bewail and lament them.

10. To this must be joined an humble confession of sins to God, and that not only in general, but also in particular, as far as your memory of them will reach, and that with all those heightening circumstances of them, which you have by the forementioned examination discovered. Yea, even secret and forgotten sins must in general be acknowledged, for it is certain there are multitudes of such; so that it is necessary for every one of us to say with David, PSALM xix. 12, *Who can understand his errors? Cleanse thou me from my secret faults.* When you have thus confessed your sins with this hearty sorrow, and sincere hatred of them, you may then (and not before) be concluded to feel so much of your disease, that it will be seasonable to apply the remedy.

11 In the next place, therefore, you are to look on him whom *God hath set forth to be the propitiation for our sins*, ROM. iii. 25. Even FAITH.  
*Jesus Christ, that Lamb of God, which taketh away the sins of the world*, JOHN i. 29. And earnestly beg of God, that by his most precious blood your sins may be washed away: and that God would for his sake be reconciled to you. And this you are to believe will surely be done, if you do for the rest of your time forsake your sins, and give yourselves up sincerely to obey God in all his commands. But without that, it is vain to hope any benefit from Christ, or his sufferings. And therefore the next part of your preparation must be the setting those resolutions of obedience, which I told you was the third thing you are to examine yourselves of before you approach to the holy Sacrament.

**12.** Concerning the particulars of this Resolution, I need say no more, but that it must answer every **RESOLUTIONS OF OBEDIENCE.** part and branch of our duty ; that is, we must not only in general resolve that we will observe God's Commandments, but we must resolve it for every Commandment by itself ; and especially where we have found ourselves most to have failed heretofore, there especially to renew our resolutions. And herein it nearly concerns us to look that these resolutions be sincere and unfeigned, and not only such slight ones as people use out of custom to put on at their coming to the Sacrament, which they never think of keeping afterwards. For this is a certain truth, that whosoever comes to this holy Table without an entire hatred of every sin, comes unworthily ; and it is as sure, that he that doth entirely hate all sin, will resolve to forsake it : for you know forsaking naturally follows hatred, no man willingly abides with a thing or person he hates. And therefore he that doth not so resolve, as that God the searcher of hearts may approve it as sincere, cannot be supposed to hate sin, and so cannot be a worthy receiver of that holy Sacrament. Therefore try your resolutions thoroughly, that you deceive not yourselves in them ; it is your own great danger if you do ; for it is certain you cannot deceive God, nor gain acceptation from him by any thing which is not perfectly hearty and unfeigned.

**13.** Now as you are to resolve on this new obedience, so **OF THE MEANS.** you are likewise to resolve on the means, which may assist you in the performance of it. And therefore consider in every duty what are the means that may help you in it, and resolve to make use of them, how uneasy soever they be to your flesh ; so on the other side consider what things they are, that are likely to lead you to sin, and resolve to shun and avoid them : this you are to do in respect of all sins whatever, but especially in those whereof you have formerly been guilty. For there it will not be hard for you to find by what steps and degrees you were drawn into it, what company, what occasion it was that ensnared you, as also to what sort of temptations you are aptest to yield. And therefore you must particularly fence yourself against the sin, by avoiding those occasions of it.

**14.** But it is not enough that you resolve you will do all this hereafter, but you must instantly set to it, and begin the

course by doing at the present whatsoever you have opportunity of doing. And there are several things, which you may, nay, must do at the present, before you come to the Sacrament.

15. As first you must cast off every sin, not bring any one unmortified lust with you to that Table ; for it is not enough to purpose to cast them off afterwards, but you must then actually do it by withdrawing all degrees of love

PRESENT RE-  
NOUNCING OF  
SIN.

and affection from them ; you must then give a bill of divorce to all your old beloved sins, or else you are in no way fit to be married to Christ. The reason of this is clear ; for this Sacrament is our spiritual nourishment ; now before we can receive spiritual nourishment we must have spiritual life, (for no man gives food to a dead person.) But whosoever continues not only in the act, but in the love of any one known sin, hath no spiritual life, but is, in God's account, no better than a dead carcass, and therefore cannot receive that spiritual food. It is true, he may eat the bread and drink the wine, but he receives not Christ, but instead of him, that which is most dreadful ; the Apostle will tell you what, 1 Cor. xi. 29, *He eats and drinks his own damnation.* Therefore you see how great a necessity lies on you thus actually to put off every sin, before you come to this Table.

16. And the same necessity lies on you for a second thing to be done at this time, and that is, the putting your soul into a heavenly and Christian temper ; by possessing it with all those graces which may render it acceptable in the eyes of God. For when you have turned out Satan and his accursed train, you must not let your soul lie empty ; if you do, Christ tells you, LUKE xi. 26, *He will quickly return again, and your last estate shall be worse than your first.* But you must by earnest prayer invite into it the holy Spirit with his Graces, or, if they be in some degree there already, you must pray that he will yet more fully possess it, and you must quicken and stir them up.

EMBRACING  
VIRTUE.

17. As for example, you must quicken your Humility, by considering your many and great sins : your Faith, by meditating on God's promises to all penitent sinners : your love to God, by considering his mercies, especially those remembered in the Sacrament, his giving Christ to die for us ;

QUICKENING OF  
GRACES.

and your love to your neighbor, nay, to your enemies, by considering that great example of his suffering for us that were enemies to him. And it is most particularly required of us when we come to this Table, that we copy out this pattern of his, in a perfect forgiveness of all that have offended us; and not only forgiveness but such a kindness also, as will express itself in all offices of love and friendship to them.

18. And if you have formerly so quite forgot that blessed CHARITY. example of his, as to do the direct contrary; if you have done any unkindness or injury to any person, then you are to seek forgiveness from him: and to that end, first acknowledge your fault, and secondly, restore to him, to the utmost of your power, whatsoever you have deprived him of, either in goods or credit. This reconciliation with our brethren is absolutely necessary towards the making any of our services acceptable with God, as appears by that precept of Christ, MAT. v. 23, 24, *If thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee, leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.* Where you see, that though the gift be already at the altar, it must rather be left there unoffered, than be offered by a man that is not at perfect peace with his neighbour. And if this charity be so necessary in all our services, much more in this, where, by a joint partaking in the same holy mysteries, we signify our being united and knit not only to Christ our head, but also to each other, as fellow-members. And, therefore, if we come with any malice in our hearts, we commit an act of the highest hypocrisy, by making a solemn profession in the Sacrament, of that charity and brotherly love, whereof our hearts are quite void.

19. Another most necessary grace at this time is that of DEVOTION. Devotion; for the raising whereof we must allow ourselves some time to withdraw from our worldly affairs, and wholly to set ourselves to this business of preparation; one very special part of which preparation lies in raising up our souls to a devout and heavenly temper. And to that it is most necessary that we cast off all thoughts of the world, for they will be sure, as so many clogs, to hinder our souls in their mounting towards heaven. A special exercise of this devotion is Prayer, wherein we

must be very frequent and earnest at our coming to the Sacrament, this being one great instrument wherein we must obtain all those other graces required in our preparation. Therefore, be sure this be not omitted: for if you use never so much endeavour besides, and leave out this, it is the going to work in your own strength, without looking to God for his help, and then it impossible you should prosper in it: *For we are not able of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves, but our sufficiency is of God,* 2 COR. iii. 5.—Therefore, be instant with him so to assist you with his grace, that you may come so fitted to this Holy Table, that you may be partakers of the benefits there reached out to all worthy receivers.

20. These and all other spiritual graces our souls must be clothed with when we come to this feast, NECESSITY OF THESE GRACES. for this is that wedding-garment without which, whosoever comes, is like to have the entertainment mentioned in the parable of him who came to the marriage without a *wedding garment*, MATT. xxii. 13, *who was cast into utter darkness, where is weeping and gnashing of teeth;* for, though it is possible, he may sit it out at the present, and not be snatched from the table, yet St. Paul assures him, *he drinks damnation to himself*, and how soon it may fall on him is uncertain: but it is sure it will, if repentance prevent it not, and as sure, that whenever it does come, it will be *intolerable: for who among us can dwell with everlasting burnings?* ISAIAH xxxiii. 14.

21. I shall add but one thing more concerning the things which are to be done before the Sacrament, THE USEFULNESS OF A SPIRITUAL GUIDE. and that is an advice, that if any person upon a serious view of himself cannot satisfy his own soul of his sincerity, and so

doubts whether he may come to the Sacrament, he do not rest wholly on his own judgment in the case; for if he be a truly humbled soul, it is likely he may judge too hardly of himself; if he be not, it is odds, but if he be left to the satisfying his own doubts, he will quickly bring himself to pass too favourable a sentence. Or whether he be the one or the other, if he comes to the Sacrament in that doubt, he certainly plunges himself into farther doubts and scruples, if not into sin; on the other side, if he forbear because of it, if that fear be a causeless one, then he groundlessly ab-

sents himself from that Holy Ordinance, and so deprives his soul of the benefits of it. Therefore, in the midst of so many dangers which attend the mistake of himself, I would, as I said before, exhort him not to trust to his judgment, but to make known his case to some discreet and godly minister, and rather be guided by his, who will probably (if the case be duly and without any disguise discovered to him) be better able to judge of him than he of himself. This is the counsel the Church gives in the Exhortation before the Communion, where it is advised, that if any, by other means there forementioned, *cannot quiet his own conscience, but require farther counsel and comfort*, then *let him go to some discreet and learned minister of God's word, and open his grief, that he may receive such ghostly counsel, advice, and comfort, that his conscience may be relieved, &c.* This is surely such advice as should not be neglected, neither at the time of coming to the Sacrament, nor any other, when we are under any fear or reasons of doubt concerning the state of our souls. And for want of this, many have run into very great mischief, having let the doubt fester so long, that it hath either plunged them into deep distresses of conscience, or, which is worse, they have to still that disquiet within them, betaken themselves to all sinful pleasures, and so quite cast off all care of their souls.

22. But to all this, it will perhaps be said, that this cannot

**NOT TO BE  
ASHAMED TO DIS-  
COVER OURSELVES  
TO ONE.** be done without discovering the nakedness and blemishes of the soul, and there is shame in that; and, therefore, men are unwilling to do it. But to that I answer, that it is very unreasonable that should be a hindrance; for, first, I suppose you are to choose only such a person as will faithfully keep any secret you shall commit to him, and so it can be no public shame you can fear. And if it be in respect of that single person, you need not fear that neither; for supposing him a godly man, he will not think the worse of you, but the better, that you are so desirous to set all right between God and your soul. But if indeed there were shame in it, yet as long as it may be a means to cure both your trouble and your sin too (as certainly godly and faithful counsel may tend much to both) that shame ought to be despised, and it is sure it would, if we loved our souls as well as our bodies: for in bodily diseases, be they never so foul or shameful, we count him a fool who will

rather miss the cure than discover it; and then it must here be so much a greater folly, by how much the soul is more precious than the body.

23. But God knows it is not only doubtful persons to whom this advice might be useful; there are others of another sort, whose confidence is their disease, who presume very groundlessly of the goodness of their estates: and for those it were most happy, if they could be brought to hear some more equal judgments than their own in this so weighty a business. The truth is, we are generally so apt to favour ourselves, that it might be very useful for the most, especially the more ignorant sort, sometimes to advise with a spiritual guide; to enable them to pass right judgments on themselves; and not only so, but to receive directions how to subdue and mortify those sins they are most inclined to, which is a matter of so much difficulty, that we have no reason to despise any means that may help us in it.

24. I have now gone through those several parts of duty we are to perform *before* our receiving; in the next place, I am to tell you, what is to be done *at* the time of receiving. When thou art at the Holy Table, first humble thyself in an unfeigned acknowledgment

AS NECESSARY TO  
THE CONFIDENT  
AS TO THE  
DOUBTFUL.

of thy great unworthiness to be admitted there; and to that purpose remember again, between God and thine own soul, some of thy greatest and foulest sins, thy breaches of former vows made at that table, especially since thy last receiving. Then meditate on those bitter Sufferings of Christ, which are set

AT THE TIME OF  
RECEIVING.

MEDITATION OF  
THY UNWORTHI-  
NESS.

out to us in the Sacrament: when thou seest the bread broken, remember how his

THE SUFFERINGS  
OF CHRIST.

blessed body was torn with nails upon the Cross; when thou seest the wine poured out, remember how his precious Blood was spilt there; and then consider, it was thy sins that caused both. And here think how unworthy a wretch thou art to have done that which occasioned such torments to Him; how much worse than his very crucifiers. They

crucified him once, but thou hast, as much as in thee lay, crucified him daily. They crucified him because they knew him not, but thou hast known both what he is in himself, the *Lord of Glory*, and what he is to thee, a most tender

and merciful Saviour, and yet thou hast still continued thus to crucify him afresh. Consider this, and let it work in thee, first a great sorrow for thy sins past, and then a great hatred and a firm resolution against them for the time to come.

**25.** When thou hast awhile thus thought on these sufferings **THE ATONEMENT** of Christ for the increasing thy humility **WROUGHT BY THEM.** and contrition; then in the second place think of them again, to stir up thy Faith; look on him as the Sacrifice offered up for thy sins, for the appeasing of God's wrath, and procuring his favour and mercies toward thee. And, therefore, believingly, yet humbly beg of God to accept of that satisfaction made by his innocent and beloved Son, and for the merits thereof to pardon thee whatever is past, and to be fully reconciled to thee.

**26.** In the third place consider them again to raise thy **THE THANKFULNESS OWING FOR THEM.** thankfulness. Think how much both of shame and pain he there endured, but especially those great agonies of his Soul; which drew from him that bitter cry, *My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?* MATT. xxvii.

**46.** Now all this he suffered only to keep thee from perishing. And, therefore, consider what unexpressible thanks thou owest him; and endeavour to raise thy Soul to the most zealous and hearty thanksgiving; for this is a principal part of duty at this time, the praising and magnifying that mercy which hath redeemed us by so dear a price. Therefore, it will here well become thee to say with David, *I will take the Cup of Salvation, and will call upon the Name of the Lord.*

**27.** Fourthly, look on these sufferings of Christ to stir up **THE GREAT LOVE OF CHRIST IN THEM.** this love; and surely there cannot be a more effectual means of doing it; for here the love of Christ to thee is most manifest, according to that of the Apostle, 1 JOHN iii.

**16,** *Hereby perceive we the love of God towards us, because he laid down his life for us.* And that even the highest degree of love; for, as himself tells us, JOHN xv. 13, *Greater love than this hath no man, than that a man lay down his life for his friend.* Yet even greater love than this had he; for he not only died, but died the most painful and most reproachful death, and that not for his friends, but for his

utter enemies. And, therefore, if after all this love on his part there be no return of love on ours, we are worse than the vilest sort of men, for even the publicans, MATT. v. 46, *love those that love them.* Here, therefore, chide and reproach thyself that thy love to him is so faint and cool, when his to thee was so zealous and affectionate. And endeavour to enkindle this holy flame in thy Soul, to love him in such a degree, that thou mayest be ready to copy out his example, to part with all things, yea, even life itself whenever he calls for it, that is, whosoever thy obedience to any command of his shall lay thee open to those sufferings. But in the mean time to resolve never again to make any league with his enemies, to entertain or harbour any sin in thy breast. But if there have any such hitherto remained with thee, make this the season to kill and crucify it; offer it up at this instant, a sacrifice to him who was sacrificed for thee, and particularly for that very end, that *he might redeem thee from all iniquity.* Therefore, here make thy solemn resolutions to forsake every sin, particularly those into which thou hast most frequently fallen. And that thou mayest indeed perform those resolutions, earnestly beg of this crucified Saviour that he will, by the power of his death, mortify and kill all thy corruptions.

28. When thou art about to receive the Consecrated Bread and Wine, remember that God now offers to seal to thee that New Covenant made with mankind in his Son. For since he gives that his Son in the Sacrament, he gives with him all the benefits of that Covenant, to wit, pardon of sins, sanctifying grace, and a title to an eternal inheritance. And here be astonished at the infinite goodness of God, who reaches out to thee so precious a treasure. But then remember that this is all but on condition that thou perform thy part of the Covenant. And therefore settle in thy soul the most serious purpose of obedience, and then with all possible devotion join with the minister in that short, but excellent prayer, used at the instant of giving the Sacrament, *The body of our Lord, &c.*

29. So soon as thou hast received, offer up thy devoutest praises for that great mercy, together with thy most earnest prayers for such assistance of God's Spirit as may enable thee to

THE BENEFITS OF  
THE NEW COVE-  
NANT SEALED IN  
THE SACRAMENT.

UPON RECEIVING  
GIVE THANKS.

perform the vow thou hast now made. Then remembering that Christ is *a propitiation not for our sins only, but also for the sins of the whole world*; let thy charity reach as far as his hath done, and pray for all mankind that every one may receive the benefit of that Sacrifice of his; commend also to God the estate of the Church, that particularly whereof thou art a member. And forget not to pray for all to whom thou owest obedience, both in Church and State; and so go on to pray for such particular persons as either thy relations or their wants shall present to thee. If there be any collection for the poor (as there always ought to be at this time) give freely according to thy ability; or if by the default of others, there be no such collection, yet do thou privately design something towards the relief of thy poor brethren, and be sure to give it, the next fitting opportunity that offers itself. All this thou must contrive to do in the time that others are receiving, that so when the public prayers after the administration begin, thou mayest be ready to join in them, which thou must likewise take care to do with all devotion; thus much for behaviour at the time of receiving.

**30. Now follows the third and last thing, that is, what thou art to do *after thy Receiving*. That**

**AFTER THE SA-  
CRAMENT.**

which is immediately to be done is, as soon as thou art retired from the congregation, to offer up again to God thy Sacrifice of Praise for all those precious mercies conveyed to thee in that holy Sacrament, as also humbly to entreat the continued assistance of his grace to enable thee to make good all those purposes of obedience thou hast now made. And in whatsoever thou knowest thyself most in danger, either in respect of any former habit, or natural inclination, there especially desire and earnestly beg his aid.

**31. When thou hast done thus, do not presently let thyself loose to thy worldly cares and business.**

**NOT PRESENTLY  
TO FALL TO  
WORLDLY AF-  
FAIRS.**

But spend all that day either in meditating, praying, reading, good conferences, or the like; so as may best keep up that holy flame which is enkindled in our heart. Afterwards, when thy calling requires thee to fall to thy usual affairs, do it; but yet still remember that thou hast a greater

business than that upon thy hands ; that is, the performing of all those promises thou so lately madest to God : and therefore, whatever thy outward employments are, let thy heart be set on that, keep all the particulars of thy resolutions in memory, and, whenever thou art tempted to any of thy old sins, then consider, this is the thing thou so solemnly vowedst against ; and withal remember, what a horrible guilt it will be, if thou shouldst now wilfully do any thing contrary to that vow ; yea, and what a horrible mischief also it will be to thyself. For at thy receiving, God and thou entered into Covenant, into a league of friendship and kindness. And as long as thou keepest in that friendship with God, thou art safe, all the malice of men or devils can do thee no harm ; for as the Apostle saith, ROM. viii. 31, *If God be for us, who can be against us ?* but if thou breakest this league (as thou certainly dost, if thou yieldest to any wilful sin) then God and thou are enemies, and if all the world then were for thee, it could not avail thee.

32. Nay, thou wilt get an enemy within thine own bosom, thy conscience accusing and upbraiding thee ; and when God and thine own conscience are thus against thee, thou canst not but be extremely miserable even in this life, besides that fearful expectation of wrath which awaits thee in the next. Remember all this when thou art set upon by any temptation ; and then sure thou canst not but look upon that temptation as a cheat that comes to rob thee of thy peace, thy God, thy very soul ; and then sure it will appear as unfit to entertain it, as thou wouldest think it to harbour one in thy house who thou knowest came to rob thee of what is dearest to thee.

33. And let not any experience of God's mercy in pardoning thee heretofore, encourage thee again to provoke him : for, besides that it is the highest degree of wickedness and unthankfulness, to make that *goodness of his which should lead thee to repentance* an encouragement in thy sin ; besides this, I say, the oftener thou hast been pardoned, the less reason thou hast to expect it again, because thy sin is so much the greater for having been committed against so much mercy. If a king have

TO KEEP THY RESOLUTIONS STILL IN MEMORY.

THE DANGER OF BREAKING THEM.

MAKING GOD THY ENEMY.

THY OWN CONSCIENCE.

GOD'S FORMER PARDONS NO ENCOURAGEMENT TO SIN.

several times pardoned an offender, yet if he still return to commission of the same fault, the king will at last be forced, if he have any love to justice, to give him up to it. Now, so is it here: God is as well just as merciful, and his justice will at last surely and heavily avenge the abuse of his mercy; and there cannot be a greater abuse of his mercy, than to sin in hope of it: so that it will prove a miserable deceiving of thyself thus to presume upon it.

34. Now this care of making good thy Vow must not abide with thee some few days only, and **THE OBLIGATION** then be cast aside, but it must continue **OF THIS VOW** with thee all thy days. For if thou break **PERPETUAL.** thy Vow, it matters not, whether sooner or later. Nay, perhaps the guilt may in some respects be more, if it be late; for if thou hast for a good while gone on in the observance of it, that shows the thing is possible to thee; and so thy after-breaches are not of infirmity, because thou canst not avoid them, but of perverseness, because thou wilt not. Besides, the use of Christian walking must needs make it more easy to thee. For, indeed, all the difficulty of it is but from the custom of the contrary; and, therefore, if after some acquaintance with it, when thou hast overcome somewhat of the hardness, thou shalt then give it over, it will be most inexcusable. Therefore, be careful all the days of thy life to keep such a watch over thyself, and so to avoid all occasions of temptations, as may preserve thee from all wilful breaches of this vow.

35. But though the obligation of every such single vow **YET OFTEN TO** reach to the utmost day of our lives, yet **BE RENEWED.** are we often to renew it, that is, we are often to receive the Holy Sacrament; for that being the means of conveying to us so great and unvaluable benefits, and it being also a command of Christ, that we should *do this in remembrance of him*, we are in respect both of reason and duty to omit no fit opportunity of partaking of that Holy Table. I have now showed you what that reverence is which we are to pay to God in his Sacrament.

## SUNDAY IV.

Honour due to God's Name: Sins against it; Blasphemy; Swearing; of Assertory, Promissory, Unlawful Oaths; of Perjury, vain Oaths, and the Sins of them, &c.

THE last thing wherein we are to express our reverence to him, is the honouring of his Name.— HONOUR DUE TO Now what this honouring of his Name is, GOD'S NAME. we shall best understand by considering what are the things by which it is dishonoured, the avoiding of which will be our way of honouring it.

The first is, all Blasphemies, or speaking any evil thing of God, the highest degree whereof is cursing him; or if we do not speak it with our mouths, yet if we do it in our hearts by thinking any unworthy thing of him, it is looked on by God, who sees the heart, as the vilest dishonour. But there is also a blasphemy of the actions, that is, when men who profess to be the servants of God live so wickedly that they bring up an evil report of him whom they own as their Master and Lord. This Blasphemy the Apostle takes notice of, ROM. ii. 24, where he tells those who profess to be observers of the law, *that by their wicked actions, the Name of God was blasphemed among the Gentiles.* Those Gentiles were moved to think ill of God, as the favourer of sin, when they saw those, who called themselves his servants, commit it.

A second way of dishonouring God's Name is by swearing, and that is of two sorts, either by false Oaths, or else by rash and light ones. A false Oath may also be of two kinds, as first, that by which I affirm somewhat, or secondly, that by which I promise. The first is, when I say such or such a thing was done so or so, and confirm this saying of mine with an Oath; if then I know there be not perfect truth in what I say, this is a flat perjury, a downright being foresworn: nay, if I swear to the truth of that whereof I am only doubtful, though the thing should happen to be true, yet it brings upon me the guilt of

perjury ; for I swear at a venture, and the thing might, for ought I know, be as well false as true ; whereas, I ought never to swear any thing, the truth of which I do not certainly know.

2. But besides this sort of Oaths by which I affirm any thing, there is the other sort, that by which **PROMISSORY.** I promise somewhat. And that promise may be either to God or man. When it is to God, we call it a Vow, of which I have already spoken, under the heads of the Sacraments. I shall now only speak of that to man, and this may become a false oath, either at or after the time of taking it. At the time of taking, it is false, if either I have then no real purpose of making it good, or else take it in a sense different from that which I know he to whom I make the promise understands it ; for the use of Oaths, being to assure the persons to whom they are made, they must be taken in their sense. But if I were never so sincere at the taking the Oath, if afterwards I do not perform it, I am certainly perjured.

3. The nature of an Oath being then thus binding, it nearly concerns us to look that the matter **UNLAWFUL OATHS.** of our Oaths be lawful, for else we run ourselves into a woful snare. For example, suppose I swear to kill a man, if I perform my Oath, I am guilty of murder ; if I break it, of perjury. And so I am under the necessity of sinning one way or other ; but there is nothing puts us under a greater degree of this unhappy necessity, than when we swear two Oaths, whereof the one is directly cross and contradictory to the other. For if I swear to give a man my whole estate, and afterwards swear to give all or part of that estate to another, it is certain I must break my Oath to one of them, because it is impossible to perform it to both, and so I must be under a necessity of being foresworn. And into this unhappy strait every man brings himself that takes any Oath which crosses some other which he hath formerly taken ; which should make all, that love either God or their own souls, resolve never thus miserably to entangle themselves by taking one oath cross and thwarting to another. But it may perhaps here be asked, what a person that hath already brought himself into such a condition shall do ; I answer, he must first heartily repent of the great sin of taking the unlawful Oath, and then

stick only to the lawful, which is all that is in his power towards the repairing his fault, and qualifying him for God's pardon for it.

4. Having said this concerning the kinds of this sin of Perjury, I shall only add a few words to show you how greatly God's Name is dishonoured by it. In all Oaths, you know, God is solemnly called to witness the truth of that which is spoken ; now if the thing be false, it is the basest affront and dishonour that can possibly be done to God. For it is in reason to signify one of these two things, either that we believe he knows not whether we say true or no (and that is to make him no God, to suppose him to be as deceivable and easy to be deluded as one of our ignorant neighbours,) or else that he is willing to countenance our lies ; the former robs him of that great attribute of his, his knowing all things, and is surely a great dishonouring of him, it being even amongst men accounted one of the greatest disgraces, to account a man fit to have cheats put upo him ; yet even so we deal with God, if we venture to forswear upon a hope that God discerns it not. But the other is yet worse, for the supposing him willing to countenance our lies, is the making him a party in them ; and is not only the making him no God (it being impossible that God should either lie himself, or approve it in another,) but is the making him like the very Devil, *for he it is that is a liar, and the father of it,* JOHN viii. 44. And surely I need not say more to prove that this is the highest degree of dishonouring God's Name.

5. But if any yet doubt the heinousness of this sin, let him but consider what God himself says of it in the third commandment, where he solemnly professes *he will not hold him guiltless that taketh his Name in vain* ; and sure the adding that to this commandment, and none of the rest, is the marking this out for a most heinous guilt. And if you look into ZECH. v. you will there find the punishment is answerable, even to the utter destruction, not only of the man but his house also. Therefore, it concerns all men, as they love either their temporal or eternal welfare, to keep them most strictly from this sin.

But besides this of forswearing, I told you there was another sort of Oaths by which God's Name is dishonoured :

GOD GREATLY  
DISHONoured  
BY PERJURY.

**VAIN OATHS.** those are the vain and light Oaths, such as are so usual in our common discourse, and are expressly forbidden by Christ, MATT. v. 34. *But I say unto you, Swear not at all, neither by Heaven, for it is God's throne, nor by the Earth, for it is his footstool:* where you see we are not allowed to swear even by mere creatures, because of the relation they have to God. How great a wickedness is it then to profane his holy name by rash and vain Oaths ! This is a sin that is (by I know not what charm of Satan's) grown into a fashion among us; and now its being so draws daily more men into it. But it is to be remembered that when we shall appear before God's Judgment-seat, to answer for those profanations of his Name, it will be no excuse to say, it was the fashion to do so ; it will rather be an increase of our guilt, that we have by our own practice helped to confirm that wicked custom, which we ought to have beat down and discountenanced.

**6. And sure,** whatever this profane age thinks of it, this is a sin of a very high nature. For besides that it is a direct breach of the precept of Christ, it shows first, a very mean and low esteem of God : every oath we swear is the appealing to God to judge the truth of what we speak : and, therefore, being of such greatness and majesty, requires that the matter concerning which we thus appeal to him should be of great weight and moment, somewhat wherein either his own glory or some considerable good of man is concerned. But when we swear in common discourse, it is far otherwise ; and the triflingest or lightest thing serves for the matter of an oath ; nay, often men swear to such vain and foolish things, as a considering person would be ashamed barely to speak. And is it not a great despising of God to call him solemnly to judge in such childish, such wretched matters ? God is the great King of the world ; now though a king be to be resorted unto in weighty cases, yet sure he would think himself much despised, if he should be called to judge between boys at their childish games : and God knows many things whereto we frequently swear, are not of greater weight ; and, therefore, are a sign that we do not rightly esteem of God.

**7. Secondly,** this common swearing is a sin which leads directly to the former of forswearing ; for he that by the use of swearing hath made Oaths so familiar to him, will be likely to

**THEY LEAD TO  
PERJURY.**

take the dreadfulest Oath without much consideration. For how shall he that swears hourly, look upon an Oath with any reverence? And he that doth not, it is his chance, not his care, that is to be thanked, if he keep from Purjury. Nay, farther; he that swears commonly is not only prepared to forswear when a solemn Oath is tendered him, but in all probability does actually forswear himself often in those sudder Oaths: for supposing them to come from a man ere he is aware (which is the best can be said of them,) what assurance can any man have who swears ere he is aware, that he shall not lie so too? And if he doth both together, he must necessarily be forsworn. But he that observes your common swearers will be put past doubt that they are often forsworn; for they usually swear indifferently to things true or false, doubtful or certain. And I doubt not but if men who are guilty of this sin, would but impartially examine their own practice, their hearts would second me in this observation.

8. Thirdly, this is a sin to which there is no temptation; there is nothing either of pleasure or profit got by it: most other sins offer us somewhat either of the one or the other, but this is utterly empty of both. So that in this sin the Devil does not play the merchant for our souls, as in others he does; he doth not so much as cheapen them, but we give them freely into his hands without any thing in exchange. There seems to be but one thing possible for men to hope to gain by it, and that is, to be believed in what they say, when they thus bind it by an oath. But this also they constantly fail of; for there are none so little believed as the common swearers. And good reason, for he that makes no conscience thus to profane God's Name, why shall any man believe he makes any of lying? Nay, their forwardness to confirm every the slightest thing by an oath, rather gives jealousy that they have some inward guilt of falseness, for which that oath must be the cloak. And thus you see in how little stead it stands them, even to this only purpose for which they can pretend it useful: and to any other advantage it makes not the least claim, and therefore is a sin without temptation, and consequently without excuse; for it shows the greatest contempt, nay, unkindness to God, when we will provoke him thus, without any thing to tempt us to it. And therefore though the commonness of this sin hath made it pass

NO TEMPTA-  
TION TO THEM.

but for a small one, yet it is very far from being so either in itself, or in God's account.

9. Let all therefore who are not yet fallen into the custom of this sin be most careful never to yield to the least beginnings

**NECESSITY OF  
ABSTAINING  
FROM THEM.** of it ; and for those who are so miserable as to be already ensnared in it, let them immediately, as they tender their souls, get

out of it. And let no man plead the hardness of leaving an old custom, as an excuse for his continuing in it, but rather the longer he hath been in it, so much the more haste let him make out of it, as thinking it too much that he hath so long gone on in so great a sin. And if the length of the custom have increased the difficulty of leaving it, that is in all reason to make him set immediately to the casting it off, lest that difficulty at last grow to an impossibility ; and the harder he finds it at the present, so much

**MEANS FOR IT.** the more diligent and watchful he must be in the use of all those means, which may tend to the overcoming that sinful habit. Some few of those means it will not be amiss here to mention.

10. First, let him possess his mind fully of the heinousness of the sin, and not to measure it only according to the common rate of the world. And when he is fully persuaded of the guilt, then let him add to that, the consideration of the danger, as that it puts him out of God's favour at the present, and will, if he continue in it, cast him into hell for ever. And sure if this were but thoroughly laid to heart, it would restrain this sin. For I would ask a man, that pretends impossibility of leaving the custom, whether if he were sure he should be hanged the next oath he swore, the fear of it would not keep him from swearing ? I can scarce believe any man in his wits so little master of himself, but it would. And then surely damning is so much worse than hanging, that in all reason the fear of that ought to be a much greater restraint. The doubt is, men do either not heartily believe that this sin will damn them, or, if they do, they look on it as a thing a great way off, and so are not much moved with it ; but both these are very unreasonable. For the first, it is certain, that every one that continues wilfully in any sin is so long in a state of damnation, and therefore this being so continued in must certainly put a man in that condition. For the second, it is very possible he may be deceived in

thinking it so far off, for how knows any man that he shall not be struck dead with an oath in his mouth ? Or if he were sure not to be so, yet eternal damnation is surely to be dreaded above all things, be it at what distance soever.

11. A second means is to be exactly true in all thou speakest ; that all men may believe thee on thy bare word, and then thou wilt never have occasion to confirm it by an oath, to make it more credible, which is the only colour or reason can at any time be pretended for swearing.

12. Thirdly, observe what it is that most betrays thee to this sin, whether drink, or anger, or the company and example of others, or whatever else ; and then, if ever thou mean to forsake this sin, forsake those occasions of it.

13. Fourthly, endeavour to possess thy heart with a continual reverence of God ; and if that once grow into a custom with thee, it will quickly turn out that contrary one of profaning.

Use and accustom thyself therefore to this reverence of God, and particularly to such a respect to his Name, as, if it be possible, never to mention it without some lifting up of thy heart to him. Even in thy ordinary discourse, whenever thou takest his Name into thy mouth, let it be an occasion of raising up thy thoughts to him, but by no means permit thyself to use it in idle by-words, or the like. If thou dost accustom thyself to pay this reverence to the bare mention of his Name, it will be an excellent fence against the profaning it in oaths.

14. A fifth means is a diligent and constant watch over thyself, that thou thus *offend not with thy tongue*, without which all the former will come to nothing : And the last means is prayer, which must be added to all thy endeavours ; therefore

pray earnestly, that God will enable thee to overcome this wicked custom ; say with the Psalmist, *Set a watch, O Lord, over my mouth, and keep the door of my lips :* and if thou dost sincerely set thyself to the use of means for it, thou mayst be assured God will not be wanting in his assistance. I have been the longer on this, because it is so reigning a sin. God in his mercy give all that are guilty of it, a true sight of the heinousness of it !

TRUTH IN  
SPEAKING.

FORSAKING THE  
OCCASIONS.

REVERENCE OF  
GOD.

WATCHFULNESS.

PRAAYER.

**15.** By these several ways of dishonouring God's Name, you may understand what is the duty of honouring it, viz. a strict abstaining from every one of these, and that abstinence founded on an awful respect and reverence to that sacred Name, which is Great, Wonderful, and Holy, **PSALM xcix. 3.** I have now passed through the several branches of that great Duty of Honouring of God.

---

## SUNDAY V.

Of Worship due to God's Name. Of Prayer, and its several parts. Of public Prayers in the Church, in the Family. Of private Prayer. Of Repentance, &c. Of Feasting.

**THE** eighth duty we owe to God is **WORSHIP**; this is that great duty by which especially we acknowledge his God-head, worship being proper only to God, **WORSHIP.** and therefore it is to be looked on as a most weighty duty. This is to be performed, first, by our Souls; secondly, by our Bodies. The Soul's part is **Praying.** Now prayer is a speaking to God, and there are divers parts of it, according to the different things about which we speak.

**2.** As first, there is **Confession**; that is, the acknowledging our sins to God. And this may be **CONFESSiON.** either general or particular: the general is, when we only confess in gross that we are sinful; the particular, when we mention the several sorts and acts of our sins. The former is necessary to be always a part of our solemn prayers, whether public or private. The latter is proper for private prayer, and there the oftener it is used the better; yea, even in our daily private prayer it will be fit constantly to remember some of our greatest and foulest sins, though never so long since past. For such we should never think sufficiently confessed and bewailed. And this bewailing must always go along with confession; we must be heartily sorry for the sins we confess, and from our sins acknowledge our own great unworthiness in having committed them. For our confession is not intended to instruct God, who knows our sins much better than ourselves do;

but it is to humble ourselves, and therefore we must not think to have confessed aright till that be done.

3. The second part of prayer is Petition ; that is, the begging of God whatsoever we want, either for our Souls or Bodies. For our Souls, we must first beg pardon of sins, and that for the sake of Jesus Christ, who shed his blood to obtain it. Then we must also beg the grace and assistance of God's Spirit to enable us to forsake our sins, and to walk in obedience to him. And herein it will be needful particularly to beg all the several virtues, as Faith, Love, Zeal, Purity, Repentance, and the like ; but especially those which thou most wantest : and, therefore, observe what thy wants are ; and if thou beest proud, be most instant in praying for humility ; if lustful, for chastity ; and so for all other graces, according as thou findest thy needs. And in all these things that concern thy Soul, be very earnest and importunate ; take no denial from God, nor give over, though thou do not presently obtain what thou suest for.— But if thou hast never so long prayed for a grace, and yet findest it not, do not grow weary of praying, but rather search what the cause may be which makes thy prayer so ineffectual ; see if thou do not thyself hinder them ; perhaps thou prayest to God to enable thee to conquer some sin, and yet never goest about to fight against it, never makest any resistance, but yieldest to it as often as it comes, nay, puttest thyself in its way, in the road of all temptations. If it be thus, no wonder though thy prayers avail not, for thou wilt not let them. Therefore amend this, and set to the doing of thy part sincerely, and then thou needest not fear but God will do his.

4. Secondly, we are to petition also for our Bodies ; that is, we are to ask of God such necessaries of life as are needful to us, while we live here. But these only, in such a degree and measure, as his wisdom sees best for us ; we must not presume to be our own carvers, and pray for all that wealth or greatness which our own vain hearts may perhaps desire, but only for such a condition, in respect of outward things, as he sees may most tend to those great ends of our living here, the glorifying him, and the saving of our own souls.

5. A third part of prayer is Deprecation ; that is, when

**DEPRECATION.****OF SIN.**

we pray to God to turn away some evil from us. Now the evil may be either the evil of sin, or the evil of punishment. The evil of Sin is that we are especially to pray against, most earnestly begging of God, that he will, by the power of his grace, preserve us from falling into sin. And whatever sins they are, to which thou knowest thyself most inclined, there be particularly earnest with God to preserve thee from them. This is to be done daily, but then more especially, when we are under any present temptation, and in danger of falling into any sin; in which case, we have reason to cry out as St. Peter did when he found himself sinking, *Save, Lord, or I perish*, humbly beseeching him either to withdraw the temptation, or strengthen us to withstand it, neither of which we can do for ourselves.

6. Secondly, we are likewise to pray against the evil of **PUNISHMENT.** Punishment, but principally against spiritual punishments, as the anger of God, the withdrawing of his grace, and eternal damnation. Against these we can never pray with too much earnestness. But we may also pray against temporal punishments, that is, any outward affliction; but this with submission to God's will, according to the example of Christ, MATT. xxvi. 39. *Not as I will, but as thou wilt.*

7. A fourth part of prayer is Intercession, that is, praying for others. This in general we are to do **INTERCESSION.** for all mankind, as well strangers as acquaintance, but more particularly those to whom we have any especial relation, either public, as our governors, both in church and state, or private, as parents, husbands, wife, children, friends, &c. We are also to pray for all that are in affliction, and such particular persons as we discern especially to be so: yea, we are to pray for those that have done us injury, those that *despitefully use and persecute us*, for it is expressly the command of Christ, MATT. v. 44. And that whereof he hath likewise given us the highest example in praying even for his very crucifiers, LUKE xxiii. 34. *Father, forgive them.* For all these sorts of persons we are to pray, and that for the very same good things we beg of God for ourselves, that God would give them, in their several places and callings, all spiritual and temporal blessings which he sees wanting to them, and turn away from them all evil, whether of sin or punishment.

8. The fifth part of prayer is Thanksgiving; that is, the praising and blessing God for all his mercies, whether to our own persons, and those that immediately relate to us, or to the church and nation whereof we are members, or yet more general to all mankind; and this for all his mercies, both spiritual and temporal. In the spiritual, first, for those wherein we are all in common concerned, as the giving of his Son, the sending of his Spirit, and all those means he hath used to bring sinful men unto himself. Then secondly, for those mercies we have in our own particulars received; such are the having been born within the pale of the church, and so brought up in Christian religion, by which we have been partakers of those precious advantages of the word and sacraments, and so have had, without any care or pains of ours, the means of eternal life put into our hands. But besides these, there is none of us but have received other spiritual mercies from God.

9. As first, God's patience and long-suffering, waiting for our repentance, and not cutting us off in our sins. Secondly, his calls and invitations of us to that repentance, not only outward, in the ministry of the word, but also inward, by the motions of his Spirit. But then if thou be one that hath by the help of God's grace been wrought upon by these calls, and brought from a profane or worldly, to a Christian course of life, thou art surely in the highest degree tied to magnify and praise his goodness, as having received from him the greatest of mercies.

SPIRITUAL  
MERCIES.

10. We are likewise to give thanks for temporal blessings, whether such as concern the public, as the prosperity of the church or nation, and all remarkable deliverances afforded to either; or else such as concern our particulars, such are all the good things of this life which we enjoy; as health, friends, food, raiment, and the like: also, for those minutely preservations whereby we are by God's gracious providence kept from danger, and the especial deliverances which God hath given us in the time of greatest perils. It will be impossible to set down the several mercies which every man receives from God, because they differ in kind and degree between one man and another. But it is sure that he which receives least hath yet enough to employ his whole life in praises to God. And it will be very fit for every man to consider the several passages of his

TEMPORAL.

life, and the mercies he hath in each received, and so to gather a kind of list or catalogue of them, at least the principal of them, which he may always have in his memory, and often with a thankful heart repeat before God.

11. These are the several parts of Prayer, and all of them

**PUBLIC PRAYERS IN THE CHURCH.** to be used both publicly and privately.—The public use of them is first, that in the Church, where all meet to join in those prayers wherein they are in common concerned. And in this (where the prayers are such as they ought to be) we should be very constant, there being an especial blessing promised to the joint requests of the faithful; and he that without a necessary cause absents himself from such public prayers, cuts himself off from the church, which hath always been thought so unhappy a thing, that it is the greatest punishment the governors of the church can lay upon the worst offender; and, therefore, it is a strange madness for men to inflict it upon themselves.

12. A second sort of public prayer is that in a family,

**IN THE FAMILY.** where all that are members of it join in their common supplications; and this also ought to be very carefully attended to, first by the Master of the Family, who is to look that there be such prayers, it being as much his part thus to provide for the souls of his children and servants, as to provide food for their bodies. Therefore there is none, even the meanest householder, but ought to take this care. If either himself or any of his family can read, he may use some prayers out of some good book; if it be the service book of the church, he makes a good choice: if they cannot read, it will then be necessary they should be taught without book some form of prayer which they may use in the family, for which purpose again some of the prayers of the church will be very fit, as being most easy for their memories, by reason of their shortness, and yet containing a great deal of matter. But what choice soever they make of prayers, let them be sure to have some, and let no man that professes himself a Christian keep so heathenish a family as not to see God be daily worshipped in it. But when the master of a family hath done his duty in this providing, it is the duty of every member of it to make use of that provision, by being constant and diligent at those Family Prayers.

13. Private or secret Prayer is that which is used by a

man alone, apart from all others, wherein we are to be more particular, according to our particular needs, than in public it is fit

PRIVATE  
PRAYER.

to be. And this of private prayer is a duty which will not be excused by the performance of the other of public.— They are both required, and one must not be taken in exchange for the other. And whoever is diligent in public prayers, and yet negligent in private, it is much to be feared he rather seeks to approve himself to men than to God ; contrary to the command of our Saviour, MATT. vi. who enjoins this private prayer, this *praying to our Father in secret*, from whom alone we are to expect our reward, and not from the vain praises of men.

14. Now this duty of Prayer is to be often performed, by none seldomer than evening and morning, it being most necessary that we should thus begin and end all our works with God, and

FREQUENCY IN  
PRAYER.

that not only in respect of the duty we owe him, but also in respect of ourselves, who can never be either prosperous or safe, but by committing ourselves to him ; and, therefore, should tremble to venture on the perils either of day or night without his safeguard. How much oftener this duty is to be performed, must be judged according to the business or leisure men have ; where, by business, I mean not such business as men unprofitably make to themselves, but the necessary business of a man's calling, which with some will not afford them much time for set and solemn Prayer. But even these men may often in a day lift up their hearts to God in some short prayers even whilst they are at their work. As for those that have more leisure, they are in all reason to bestow more time upon this duty. And let no man that can find time to bestow upon his vanities, nay, perhaps his sins, say he wants leisure for Prayer, but let him now endeavour to redeem what he hath misspent, by employing more of that leisure in this duty for the future : and surely if we did but rightly weigh how much it is our own advantage to perform this duty, we should think it wisdom to be as frequent as we are ordinarily seldom in it.

ADVANTAGES  
OF PRAYER.

15. For first, it is a great Honour for us poor worms of the earth to be allowed to speak so freely to the Majesty of Heaven. If a king should but vouchsafe to let one of his meanest subjects talk familiarly

HONOUR.

and freely with him, it would be looked on as a huge honour ; that man how despicable soever he were before, would then be the envy of all his neighbours ; and there is little question he would be willing to take all opportunities of receiving so great a grace. But alas ! this is nothing to the honour is offered us, who are allowed, nay invited, to speak to and converse with the King of Kings, and therefore, how forward should we in all reason be to it !

16. Secondly, it is a great Benefit, even the greatest that can be imagined ; for Prayer is the instrument of fetching down all good things to us, whether spiritual or temporal ; no prayer, that is qualified as it ought to be, but is sure to bring a blessing according to that of the wise man, ECCLUS. xxxv. 17. *The prayer of the humble pierceth the clouds, and will not turn away till the Highest regard it.* You would think him a happy man that had once certain means of helping him to whatever he wanted, though it were to cost him much pains and labour ; now this happy man thou mayest be if thou wilt. Prayer is the never-failing means of bringing thee, if not all that thou thinkest thou wantest, yet all that indeed thou dost, that is, all that God sees fit for thee. And therefore be there never so much weariness to thy flesh in the duty, yet, considering in what continual want thou standest of something or other from God, it is madness to let that uneasiness dishearten thee, and keep thee from this so sure means of supplying thy wants.

17. But in the third place, this duty is in itself so far PLEASANTNESS. from being uneasy, that it is very pleasant. God is the fountain of happiness, and

*at his right hand are pleasures for evermore,* PSALM xvi. 11. And therefore the nearer we draw to him, the happier we must needs be, the very joys of heaven arising from our nearness to God. Now in this life we have no way of drawing so near to him as by this of Prayer, and therefore surely it is that which in itself is apt to afford abundance of delight and pleasure ; if it seem otherwise to us, it is from some distemper of our own hearts, which like a sick palate cannot relish the most pleasant meat. Prayer is a pleasant

CARNALITY ONE  
REASON OF ITS  
SEEMING OTHER-  
WISE.

duty, but it is withal a spiritual one ; and therefore if thy heart be carnal, if that be set either on the contrary pleasures of the flesh, or dross of the word ; no marvel then, if thou taste no pleasantness in it, if, like

the Israelites, thou despise manna, while thou longest after the flesh-pots of Egypt. Therefore, if thou find a weariness in this duty, suspect thyself, purge and refine thy heart from the love of all sin, and endeavour to put it into a heavenly and spiritual frame, and then thou wilt find this no unpleasant exercise, but full of delight and satisfaction. In the mean time, complain not of the hardness of the duty, but of the untowardness of thy own heart.

18. But there may also be another reason of its seeming unpleasant to us, and that is want of use. You know there are many things, which seem uneasy at the first trial, which yet after we are accustomed to them seem very delightful ; and if this be thy case, then thou knowest a ready cure, viz. to use it oftener, and so this consideration naturally enforces the exhortation, of being frequent in this duty.

19. But we are not only to consider how often, but how well we perform it. Now, to do it well, we are to respect, first, the matter of our Prayers, to look that we ask nothing that is unlawful, as revenge upon our enemies, or the like. Secondly, the manner : and that must be first in Faith ; we must believe, that if we ask as we ought, God will either give us the thing we ask for, or else something which he sees better for us : and then secondly in Humility ; we must acknowledge ourselves utterly unworthy of any of those good things we beg for, and therefore sue for them only for Christ's sake ; Thirdly, with Attention ; we must mind what we are about, and not suffer ourselves to be carried away to the thought of other things. I told you at the first, that Prayer was the business of the Soul ; but if our minds be wandering, it is the work only of the tongue and lips, which make it in God's account no better than vain babbling, and so will never bring a blessing on us. Nay, as Jacob said to his mother, GEN. xxvii. 12, it will be more likely to bring a curse on us than a blessing, for it is a profaning one of the most solemn parts of God's service, it is a piece of hypocrisy, the *drawing near to him with our lips, when our hearts are far from him*, and a great slighting and despising that dreadful Majesty we come before ; and as to ourselves, it is a most ridiculous folly, that

we who come to God upon such weighty errands, as are all the concernments of our souls and bodies, should in the midst forget our business, and pursue every the lightest thing that either our own vain fancies or the Devil, whose business it is here to hinder us, can offer to us. It is just as if a malefactor, that comes to sue for his life to the king, should in the midst of his supplications happen to espy a butterfly, and then should leave his suit, and run a chase after that butterfly: would you not think it a pity a pardon should be cast away upon so wretched a creature? And sure it will be as unreasonable to expect that God should attend and grant those suits of ours, which we do not at all consider ourselves.

**20.** This wandering in Prayer is a thing we are much concerned to arm ourselves against, it being  
**HELPS AGAINST** that to which we are naturally wonderfully  
**WANDERING.** prone. To that end it will be necessary  
**CONSIDERATION** first to possess our hearts, at our coming to prayers, with the  
**OF GOD'S** greatness of that Majesty we are to approach, that so we may dread to be vain  
**MAJESTY.** and trifling in his presence. Secondly, we are to consider the great concernment  
of the things we are to ask, some whereof are such that if  
**OUR NEEDS.** we should not be heard, we were of all creatures the most miserable; and yet this  
wandering is the way to keep us from being heard. Thirdly,  
**PRAYER FOR** we are to beg God's aid in this particular:  
**GOD'S AID.** and therefore when thou settest to prayer, let thy first petition be for this grace of  
Attention.

**21.** Lastly, be as watchful as is possible over thy heart in time of prayer, to keep out all wandering  
**WATCHFULNESS.** thoughts; or, if any have gotten in, let them not find entertainment, but as soon as ever thou discernest them, suffer them not to abide one moment, but cast them out with indignation, and beg God's pardon for them. And if thou dost thus sincerely and diligently strive against them, either God will enable thee in some measure to overcome, or he will in his mercy pardon thee what thou canst not prevent. But if it be through thy own negligence, thou art to expect neither, so long as that negligence continues.

**22.** In the fourth place, we must look our prayers be with  
**WITH ZEAL.** Zeal and Earnestness; it is not enough that we so far attend them as barely to

know what it is we say ; but we must put forth all the affection and devotion of our souls, and that according to the several parts of prayer before mentioned. It is not the cold, faint request that will ever obtain from God ; we see it will not from ourselves ; for if a beggar should ask relief from us, and do it in such a scornful manner that he seemed indifferent whether he had it or no, we should think he had either little want, or great pride ; and so have no heart to give him. Now, surely the things we ask from God are so much above the rate of an ordinary alms, that we can never expect they should be given to slight and heartless petitions. No more in like manner will our sacrifice of praise and thanksgiving ever be accepted by him, if it be not offered from a heart truly affected with the sense of his mercies ; it is but a kind of formal complimenting which will never be approved by him who requires the heart, and not the lips only. And the like may be said of all the other parts of prayer. Therefore be careful, when thou drawest nigh to God in prayer, to raise up thy soul to the highest pitch of Zeal and earnestness thou art able. And because of thyself alone thou art not able to do any thing, beseech God that he will inflame thy heart with this heavenly fire of devotion, and when thou hast obtained it, beware that thou neither quench it by any wilful sin, nor let it go out again for want of stirring it up and employing it.

23. Fifthly, we must pray with Purity, I mean, we must purge our hearts from all affections to sin.

WITH PURITY.

This is surely the meaning of the apostle, 1 TIM. ii. 8, when he commands men to *lift up holy hands in prayer*, and he there instances in one special sort of sin, wrath and doubting ; where by doubting is meant those unkind disputes and contentions which are so common amongst men. And surely he that cherishes that or any other sin in his heart, can never lift up those holy hands which are required in this duty. And then sure his prayers, be they never so many or earnest, will little avail him. The Psalmist will tell him he shall not be heard, PSALM lxvi. 18, *If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear me.* Nay, Solomon will tell him yet worse, that his prayers are not only vain, but abominable, PROV. xv. 8, *The sacrifice of the wicked is an abomination to the Lord.* And thus to have our prayers turned into sin, is one of the heaviest things that can befall any man. We see it is set down in

that sad catalogue of curses, PSALM cix. 7. Therefore let us not be so cruel to ourselves as to pull it upon our own heads, which we certainly do if we offer up prayers from an impure heart.

**24.** In the last place, we must direct our prayers to right **THE RIGHT ENDS**; and that either in respect of the prayer itself, or the things we pray for; first, we must pray not to gain the praise of devotion amongst men, like those hypocrites, MATT. vi. 5, nor yet only for company or fashion sake to do as others do: but we must do it, first, as an act of worship to God; secondly, as an acknowledgment that he is that great spring from whence alone we expect all good things; and thirdly, to gain a supply of our own or others' needs. Then in respect of the things prayed for; we must be sure to have no ill aims upon them; we must not ask that we *may consume it upon our lusts*, JAMES iv. 3, as those do who pray for wealth, that they may live in riot and excess; and for power, that they may be able to mischief their enemies, and the like. But our end in all must be God's glory first, and next that, our own and others' salvation; and all other things must be taken in only as they tend to those; which they can never do if we abuse them to sin. I have now done with that first part of worship, that of the Soul.

**25.** The other is that of the Body, and that is nothing else **BODILY WORSHIP.** but such humble and reverent gestures in our approaches to God, as may both express the inward reverence of our Souls, and may also pay him some tribute for our very Bodies, with which the Apostle commands us to glory God, as well as with our Souls; and good reason, since he hath created and redeemed the one as well as the other: whosoever, therefore, thou offerest thy prayers unto God, let it be with all lowliness as well of body as of mind, according to that of the Psalmist, PSA. xcv. 6, *O come and let us worship, let us fall down and kneel before the Lord our Maker.*

**26.** The ninth DUTY to God is REPENTANCE: that this **REPENTANCE.** is a duty to God we are taught by the Apostle, ACTS xx. 21, where speaking of repentance, he styles it repentance towards God. And there is good reason this should be a duty to him, since there is no sin we commit but is either mediately or immediately

against him. For though there be sins both against ourselves and our neighbours, yet they being forbidden by God, they are also breaches of the commandments, and so sins against him.

This repentance is, in short, nothing but a turning from Sin to God, the casting off all our former evils, and instead thereof, constantly practising all those Christian duties which God requireth of us. And this is so necessary a duty, that without it we certainly perish : we have Christ's word for it, LUKE xiii. 5, *Except ye repent ye shall all likewise perish.*

27. The directions for performing the several parts of this Duty have been already given in the preparation to the Lord's Supper, and thither I refer the reader. Only I shall here mind him that it is not to be looked upon as a Duty to be practised only at the time of receiving the Sacrament. For this being the only remedy against the poison of sin, we must renew it as often as we repeat our sins, that is daily. I mean we must every day repent of the sins of that Day. For what Christ saith of other evils is true also of this, *Sufficient to the day is the evil thereof;* we have sins enough of each day to exercise a daily repentance ; and, therefore, every man must thus daily call himself to account.

28. But as it is in accounts, they who constantly set down their daily expenses have yet some set Time of casting up the whole sum, as at the end of the week or month ; so should it also be here, we should set aside some time to humble ourselves solemnly before God for the sins, not of that day only, but of our whole lives. And the frequenter these times are the better. For the oftener we thus cast up our accounts with God, and see what vast debts we are run in to him, the more humbly shall we think of ourselves, and the more shall thirst after his mercy, which two are the special things that must qualify us for his pardon. He therefore that can assign himself one day in the week for this purpose, will take a thriving course for his soul. Or if any man's state of life be so busy as not to afford him to do it so often, let him yet come as near to that frequency as is possible for him, remembering always,

A TURNING  
FROM SIN TO  
GOD.

TIMES FOR  
THIS DUTY.

DAILY.

AT SET TIMES.

that none of his worldly employments can bring him in near so gainful a return as this spiritual one will do ; and therefore, it is very ill husbandry to pursue them to the neglect of this.

29. Besides these constant times, there are likewise occasional times for the performance of this **IN THE TIME OF AFFLICTION.** duty ; such especially are the times of Calamity and Affliction ; for when any such befalls us, we are to look on it as a message sent from Heaven to call us to this duty ; and, therefore, must never neglect it when we are thus summoned to it, lest we be of the number of them who *despise the chastisements of the Lord,* HEB. xii. 5.

30. There is yet another time of repentance, which in the **AT DEATH.** practice of men hath gotten away the custom from all those, and that is the time of Death, which, it is true, is a time very fit to renew our repentance, but sure not proper to begin it ; and it is a most desperate madness for men to defer it till then. For to say the mildest of it, it is the venturing our souls upon such miserable uncertainties, as no wise man would trust with any thing of the least value.

For first, I would ask any man that means to repent at his **THE DANGER OF DEFERRING IT** Death, how he knows he shall have an hour's time for it ? Do we not daily see men snatched away in a moment ? And **TILL THEN.** who can tell that it shall not be his own case ? But secondly, suppose we have a more leisurely death, that some disease give him warning of its approach, yet perhaps he will not understand that warning, but will still flatter himself, as very often sick people do, with hopes of life to the last : and so his death may be sudden to him, though it comes by never so slow degrees. But again, thirdly, if he do discern his danger, yet how is he sure he shall then be able to repent ? Repentance is a grace of God, not at our command ; and it is just and usual with God, when men have a long time refused and rejected that grace, resisted all his calls and invitations to conversion and amendment, to give them over, at last, to the hardness of their own hearts, and not to afford them any more of that grace they have so despised. Yet suppose, in the fourth place, that God in his infinite patience should still continue the offer of that grace to thee, yet thou that hast resisted, it may be, thirty, or forty,

or fifty years together, how thou knowest that thou shalt put off that habit of resistance upon a sudden, and make use of the grace afforded ? It is sure thou hast many more advantages towards the doing it now, than thou wilt have then.

THE DISADVANTAGES OF A DEATH-BED REPENTANCE.

31. For first, the longer Sin hath kept possession of the heart, the harder it will be to drive it out. It is true, if repentance were nothing but a present ceasing from the acts of Sin, the death-bed were fittest for it, for then we are disabled from committing most sins ; but I have formerly showed you, repentance contains much more than so, there must be in it a sincere hatred of sin, and love of God. Now how unlikely is it that he which hath all his life loved sin, cherished it in his bosom, and on the contrary, abhorred God and goodness, should in an instant quite change his affections, hate that sin he loved, and love God and goodness, which before he utterly hated ?

THE CUSTOM OF SIN.

32. And secondly, the Bodily Pains that attend a death-bed will direct thee, and make thee unable to attend the work of repentance, which is a business of such weight and difficulty, as will employ all our powers, even when they are the freshest.

BODILY PAINS.

33. Consider those disadvantages thou must then struggle with, and then tell me what hope there is thou shalt then do that, which now upon much easier terms thou wilt not. But in the third place, there is a danger behind, beyond all these, and that is, that the repentance which death drives a man to, will not be a true repentance ; for in such a case it is plain it is only the fear of hell puts him on it, which, though it may be a good beginning, where there is time after to perfect it; yet where it goes alone, it can never avail for salvation. Now that death-bed repentiaces are often only of this sort, is too likely, when it is observed, that many men who have seemed to repent when they have thought death approaching, have yet, after it hath pleased God to restore them to health, been as wicked (perhaps worse) as ever they were before ; which shows plainly that there was no real change in them ; and then surely had such a man died in that seeming repentance, God, *who tries the heart*, would not have accepted it, which he saw was unsincere. When

DANGER OF UNSINCERITY.

all these dangers are laid together, it will surely appear a most desperate adventure for any man to trust to a death-bed repentance. Nor is it ever the less for that example of the penitent thief, LUKE xxii. 43, which is by many so much depended on. For it is sure his case and ours differ widely; he had never heard of Christ before, and so more could not be expected of him than to embrace him as soon as he was tendered to him: but we have had him offered, nay, pressed upon us from our cradles, and yet have rejected him. But if there were not this difference, it is but a faint hope can be raised only from a single example, and another we find not in the whole Bible. The Israelites, we read, were *fed with manna from heaven*; but would you not think him stark mad that should out of expectation of the like, neglect to provide himself any food? Yet it is full as reasonable to depend upon this example as the other. I conclude all in the words of the wise man, ECCLES. xii. 1, *Remember thy Creator in the days of thy youth, before the evil days come.*

34. To this duty of repentance, Fasting is very proper to be annexed. The Scripture usually joins **FASTING.** them together; among the Jews, the great day of atonement was to be kept with fasting, as you may see by comparing LEVIT. xvi. 31, with ISA. lviii. 5. And this by God's especial appointment. And in the prophets when the people are called upon to repent and humble themselves, they are also called on to Fast. Thus it is, JOEL ii. 12, *Therefore now thus saith the Lord, Turn ye unto me with all your hearts, with fasting, and with weeping, &c.* Yea, so proper hath fasting been accounted to humiliation, that we see even wicked Ahab would not omit it in his, 1 KINGS xxi. 27, nor the heathen Ninevites in theirs, JONAH iii. 5. Nor is it less fit or less acceptable since Christ, than it was before him. For we see he supposes it as a duty sometimes to be performed, when he gives directions to avoid vain-glory in it, MATT. vi. 6. And also assures us that if it be performed as it ought, not to please men but God, it will surely be rewarded by him. And accordingly we find it practised by the saints. *Anna, LUKE ii. 37, served God with fasting and prayer:* where it is observable, that it is reckoned as a service of God, fit to be joined with prayers. And the Christians of the first times were generally very frequent in the practice of it. Now, though Fasting be

especially proper to a time of humiliation, yet it is not so restrained to it, but it may be seasonable, whensoever we have any extraordinary thing to request from God. Thus when Esther was to endeavour the deliverance of her people from destruction, she and all the Jews kept a solemn Fast, ESTHER iv. 16. And thus when Paul and Barnabas were to be ordained Apostles, there was Fasting joined to prayer, ACTS xiii. 3. And so it will be very fit for us whensoever we have need of any extraordinary directions or assistance from God, whether concerning our temporal or spiritual concernments, thus to quicken our prayers by Fasting. But above all occasions, this of humiliation seems most to require it; for besides the advantages of kindling our zeal, which is never more necessary than when we beg for pardon of sins, Fasting carries in it somewhat of revenge, which is reckoned as a special part of repentance, 2 COR. vii. 11.—For by denying our bodies the refreshment of our ordinary food, we do inflict somewhat of punishment upon ourselves for our former excesses, or whatever other sins we at that time accuse ourselves of; which is a proper effect of that indignation which every sinner ought to have against himself. And truly he that is so tender of himself, that he can never find in his heart so much as to miss a meal, by way of punishment for his faults, shows he is not much fallen out with himself for committing them; and so wants that indignation which the Apostle in the fore-named texts mentions as a part of true repentance.

35. There is no doubt but such holy revenges upon ourselves for sins are very acceptable to God; yet we must not think that either those, or any thing else we can do, can make satisfaction for our offences; for that nothing but the blood of Christ can do. And, therefore, on that, and not on any of our performances we must depend for pardon. Yet since that blood shall never be applied to any but penitent sinners, we are as much concerned to bring forth all the fruits of repentance, as if our hopes depended on them only.

36. How often this duty of Fasting is to be performed, we have no direction in Scripture. That must be allotted

FASTING A  
REVENGE UPON  
OURSELVES.

SUCH REVENGES  
ACCEPTABLE  
WITH GOD.

YET NO SATIS-  
FACTION FOR  
SINS.

**TIMES OF  
FASTING.**

by men's own piety, according as their health or other considerations will allow. But as it is in humiliation, the frequenter

returns we have of set times for it, the better; so it is likewise in Fasting, the oftener, the better, so it be not hurtful either to our healths, or to some other duty required of us. Nay, perhaps Fasting may help some men to more of those times for humiliation, than they would otherwise gain. For perhaps there are some who cannot, without a manifest hindrance to their calling, allow a whole day to that work, yet such an one may at least afford that time he would otherwise spend in eating; and so Fasting will be doubly useful towards such a man's humiliation, both by helping him in the duty, and gaining him time for it.

**37. I have now gone through the first branch of our Duty to God; to wit, the acknowledging him for our God. The second is, the having no other, of which I need say little, as it is a forbidding of that grosser sort of heathenish**

idolatry, the worshipping of idols, which though it were once common in the world, yet is now so rare, that it is not likely any that shall read this will be concerned in it. Only I must say, that to pay divine worship to any creature, be it saint or angel, yea, or the image of Christ himself, is a transgression against this second branch of our Duty to God, it being the imparting that to a creature which is due only to God; and, therefore, is strictly to be abstained from.

**38. But there is another sort of idolatry, of which we are generally guilty, and that is, when we pay those affections of Love, Fear, Trust, and the like, to any creature in a higher degree than we do to God: for that is the setting up that thing, whatsoever it is, for our God. And this inward kind of Idolatry is that which provokes God to jealousy, as well as the outward of worshipping an idol. I might enlarge much upon this, but because some severals of it have been touched on in the former discourse, I suppose it needless; and, therefore, shall now proceed to the second head of Duty, that to Ourselves.**

## SUNDAY VI.

Duty to Ourselves: of Sobriety; of Humility; the great Sin of Pride; of Vain-glory, the Danger, Folly; the Means to prevent it: of Meekness, &c.

THIS DUTY TO OURSELVES is by St. Paul in the forementioned text, TITUS ii. 12, summed up in this one word soberly. Now, by soberly, is meant our keeping within those due bounds which God hath set us. My business will therefore be to tell you what are the particulars of this sobriety: and that first, in respect of the soul; secondly, in respect of the body. The sobriety of the soul stands in right governing its passions and affections; and to that are many virtues required. I shall give you the particulars of them.

2. The first of them is Humility, which may well have the prime place, not only in respect of the excellency of the virtue, but also of its usefulness towards the obtaining of all the rest. This being the foundation on which all others must be built. And he that hopes to gain them without this, will prove but like that foolish builder Christ speaks of, LUKE vi. 49, *who built his house on the sand*. Of the humility towards God I have already spoken, and showed the necessity of it: I am now to speak of Humility, as it concerns ourselves, which will be found no less necessary than the former.

3. This Humility is of two sorts: the first is, the having a mean and low opinion of ourselves; the second is, the being content that others should have so of us. The first of these is contrary to pride, the other to vain-glory. And that both these are absolutely necessary to Christians, I am now to show you; which will, I conceive, best be done by laying before you, first, the sin; secondly, the danger; thirdly, the contrary vices.

4. And first for Pride; the Sin of it is so great that it cast the angels out of Heaven, and therefore, if we may judge of sin by the punishment, it was not only the first, but the greatest sin that ever the devil himself hath been guilty of; but we need no better proof of the heinousness of it, than

THE GREAT SIN  
OF PRIDE.

the extreme hatefulness of it to God; which besides that instance of his punishing the Devil, we may frequently find in the Scriptures, PROV. xvi. 5, *Every one that is proud in heart is an abomination to the Lord.* And again chap. vi. 16, where there is mention of several things the Lord hates, a proud look is set at the first of them: so JAMES iv. 6, *God resisteth the proud;* and divers other texts there are to the same purpose, which shows the great hatred God bears to this sin of Pride. Now since it is certain, God, who is all goodness, hates nothing but as it is evil, it must needs follow, that where God hates in so great a degree, there must be a great degree of evil.

5. But secondly, Pride is not only very sinful, but very

**THE DANGER.**

dangerous: and that first, in respect of drawing us to other sins; secondly, of betraying us to punishments. First, pride draws us to other sins, wherein it shows

**DRAWING INTO  
OTHER SINS.**

itself indeed to be the direct contrary to

humility; for as that is the root of all virtue, so is this of all vice. For he that is proud sets himself up as his own God, and so can never submit himself to any other rules or laws than what he makes to himself. The ungodly, says the Psalmist, *is so proud that he careth not for God,* PSALM x.

4. Where you see, it is his pride that makes him despise God. And when a man is once come to that, he is prepared for the commission of all sins. I might instance in a multitude of particular sins that naturally flow from this of pride; as first anger, which the wise man sets as the effect of pride, PROV. xxi. 24, calling it proud wrath; secondly, strife and contention; which he again notes to be the offspring of Pride, PROV. xiii. 10, *Only by pride cometh contention.* And both these are indeed most natural effects of pride; for he that thinks very highly of himself, expects much submission and observance from others, and therefore cannot but rage and quarrel whenever he thinks it not sufficiently paid. It would be infinite to mention all the fruits of this bitter root; I shall name but one more, and that is, that pride not only betrays us to many sins, but also makes them incurable in us, for it hinders the working of all remedies.

6. Those remedies must either come from God or man;

**FRUSTRATING OF  
REMEDIES.** if from God, they must be either in the way of meekness and gentleness, or else of sharpness and punishment. Now if

God by his goodness essay to lead a proud man to repentance, he quite mistakes God's meaning, and thinks all the mercies he receives are but the reward of his own desert, and so long it is sure he will never think he needs repentance. But if on the other side God use him more sharply and lay afflictions and punishments upon him, those in a proud heart work nothing but murmurings and hating of God, as if he did him injury in those punishments. As for the remedies that can be used by man, they again must be either by way of correction or exhortation. Corrections from man will sure never work more on a proud heart, than those from God ; for he that can think God unjust in them will much rather believe it of man. And exhortations will do as little ; for let a proud man be admonished though never so mildly and lovingly, he looks on it as a disgrace ; and therefore instead of confessing or amending the fault, he falls to reproaching his reprobate as an overbusy or censorious person, and for that greatest and most precious act of kindness, looks on him as his enemy. And now one that thus stubbornly resists all means of cure, must be concluded in a most dangerous estate.

7. But besides this danger of sin, I told you there was another, that of Punishment ; and of this there will need little proof, when it is considered, that God is the proud man's professed enemy, that he hates and resists him, as appeared in the texts forecited ; and then there can be little doubt, that he which hath so mighty an adversary shall be sure to smart for it. Yet besides this general ground of conclusion, it may not be amiss to mention some of those texts which particularly threaten this sin, as PROV. xvi. 18, *Pride goeth before destruction, and an haughty spirit before a fall;* again, PROV. xvi. 5, *Every one that is proud in heart is an abomination to the Lord ; though hand join in hand, yet they shall not be unpunished.* The decree it seems is unalterable, and whatever endeavours are used to preserve the proud man, they are but vain, for he shall not go unpunished. And this is very remarkable in the story of Nebuchadnezzar, DAN. iv. who though a king, the greatest in the world, yet for his pride was driven from among men to dwell and feed with beasts. And it is most frequently seen, that this sin meets with very extraordinary judgments even in this life. But if it should not, let not the proud man think that he hath

BETRAYING TO  
PUNISHMENT.

escaped God's vengeance, for it is sure there will be a most sad reckoning in the next; for if God spared not the angels for this sin, but cast them into Hell, let no man hope to speed better.

8. In the third place I am to show you the great Folly of this sin; and to do that it will be necessary to consider the several things whereof men used to be proud: they are of three sorts, either those which we call the goods of Nature or the goods of Fortune, or the goods of Grace.

9. By the goods of Nature, I mean beauty, strength, wit, and the like; and the being proud of any of these is a huge folly. For first, we are very apt to mistake and think ourselves handsome or witty when we are not, and

IN RESPECT OF THE GOODS OF NATURE.  
then there cannot be a more ridiculous folly than to be proud of what we have not; and such every one esteems it in another man, though he never supposes it in his own case, and so never discerns it in himself. And therefore there is nothing more despicable amongst all men, than a proud fool; yet no man that entertains high opinions of his own wit, but is in danger to be thus deceived, a man's own judgment of himself being of all others the least to be trusted. But secondly, suppose we be not out in judging, yet what is there in any of these natural endowments which is worth the being proud, there being scarce any of them which some creature or other hath not in a greater degree than man? How much does the whiteness of the lily and the redness of the rose exceed the white and red of the fairest face! What a multitude of creatures is there that far surpass man in strength and swiftness! And divers others there are, which, as far as concerns any useful end of theirs, act much more wisely than most of us; and are therefore oftentimes in scripture proposed to us by way of example. It is therefore surely great unreasonableness for us to think highly of ourselves for such things as are common to us with beasts and plants. But thirdly, if they were as excellent as we fancy them, yet they are not at all durable, they are impaired and lost by sundry means; a frenzy will destroy the rarest wit; a sickness decay the freshest beauty, the greatest strength; or however, old age will be sure to do all. And therefore to be proud of them is again a folly in this respect. But lastly, whatever they are, we gave them not to ourselves. No man can think he did

any thing towards the procuring his natural beauty or wit, and so can with no reason value himself for them.

10. In the second place, the folly is as great to be proud of the goods of Fortune ; by them I mean wealth and honour, and the like ; for it is sure, they add nothing of true worth to the man ; somewhat of outward pomp and bravery they may help him to, but that makes no change in the person. You may load an ass with money, or deck him with rich trappings, yet still you will not make him a whit the nobler kind of beast by either of them. Then, secondly, these are things we have no hold of, they vanish many times ere we are aware ; he that is rich to-day, may be poor to-morrow, and then will be the less pitied by all in his poverty, the prouder he was when he was rich. Thirdly, we have them all, but as Stewards, to lay out for our Master's use, and therefore should rather think how to make our accounts, than pride ourselves in our receipts. Lastly, whatever of these we have, they, as well as the former, are not owing to ourselves. But if they be lawfully gotten, we owe them only to God, whose blessing it is that maketh rich, Prov. x. 22. If unlawfully, we have them upon such terms that we have very little reason to brag of them. And thus you see, in these several respects, the folly of this second sort of pride.

11. The third is that of the goods of Grace ; that is, any virtue a man hath. And here I cannot say, but the things are very valuable, they being infinitely more precious than all the world, yet nevertheless this is of all the rest the highest folly. And that not only in the foregoing respect, that we help not ourselves to it, grace being above all things most immediately God's work in us, but especially in this, that the being proud of grace is the sure way to lose it. God, who gives grace to the humble, will take it from the proud. For if, as we see in the parable, MATT. xxv. 28, the talent was taken from him who had only put it to no use at all, how shall he hope to have it continued to him that hath put it to so ill, that instead of trading with it for God, hath trafficked with it for Satan ? And as he will lose the Grace for the future, so he will lose all the Reward of it for the time past. For let a man have done never so many good acts, yet if he be proud of them, that pride shall be charged on

him to his destruction, but the good shall never be remembered to his reward. And this proves it to be a most wretched folly to be proud of grace. It is like that of children that pull those things in pieces they are most fond of, but yet much worse than that of theirs, for we not only lose the thing (and that the most precious that can be imagined,) but we must also be eternally punished for doing so, there being nothing that shall be so sadly reckoned for in the next world as the abuse of Grace ; and certainly there can be no greater abuse of it, than to make it serve for an end so directly contrary to that for which it was given, it being given to make us humble, not proud, to magnify God, not ourselves.

**12. Having showed you thus much of this sin, I suppose  
MEANS OF HU- it will appear very necessary to be eschewed ; to which purpose it will be useful to  
MILITY.** consider what hath been already said concerning it, and that so seriously as may work in thee not some slight dislike, but a deep and irreconcilable hatred of the sin : secondly, to be very watchful over thine own heart, that it cherish not any beginnings of it ; never suffer it to feed on the fancy of thine own worth ; but whenever any such thought arises, beat it down immediately with the remembrance of some of thy follies or sins, and so make this very motion of pride an occasion of humility. Thirdly, never to compare thyself with those thou thinkest more foolish or wicked than thyself, that so thou mayest like the Pharisee, LUKE xviii. 11, extol thyself for being better ; but if thou wilt compare, do it with the Wise and Godly ; and then thou wilt find thou comest so far short as may help to pull down thy high esteem of thyself. Lastly, to be very earnest in prayer, that God would root out all degrees of this sin in thee, and make thee one of those poor in spirit, MATT. v. 3, to whom the blessing even of Heaven itself is promised.

**13. The second contrary to humility, I told you was  
VAIN-GLORY.** Vain-glory ; that is, a great thirst after the praise of men. And first, that this is a sin,  
**THE SIN.** I need prove no otherwise, than by the words of our Saviour, JOHN v. 44, *How can ye believe, that receive honour one of another?* Where it appears, that it is not only a sin, but such an one as hinders the receiving of Christ into the heart ; for so believing there signifies. This then in the second place shows you likewise the great danger-

ousness of this sin, for if it be that which keeps Christ out of the heart, it is sure it brings infinite danger, since all our safety, all our hope of escaping the wrath to come, stands in receiving him. But besides the authority of this text, common experience shows, that wherever this sin hath possession, it endangers men to fall into any other. For he that so considers the praise of men, that he must at no hand part with it, whenever the greatest sins come to be in fashion and credit (as God knows many are now-a-days,) he will be sure to commit them, rather than run the disgrace of being too single and precise ; I doubt there are many consciences can witness the truth of this, so that I need say no more to prove the danger of this sin.

## THE DANGER.

14. The third thing I am to show is the folly of it, and that will appear first, by considering what it is we thus hunt after, nothing but a little air, a blast, the breath of men, it brings us in nothing of real advantage ; for I am made never the wiser nor the better for a man's saying I am wise and good. Besides, if I am commended, it must be either before my face or behind my back : if the former, it is very often flattery, and so the greatest abuse that can be offered, and then I must be very much a fool to be pleased with it. But if it be behind my back, I have not then so much as the pleasure of knowing it ; and, therefore, it is a strange folly thus to pursue what is so utterly gainless. But secondly, it is not only gainless, but painful and uneasy also. He that eagerly seeks praise is not at all master of himself, but must suit all his actions to that end, and instead of doing what his own reason and conscience, (nay, perhaps his worldly conveniency) directs him to, he must take care to do what will bring him in commendations, and so enslave himself to every one that hath but a tongue to commend him. Nay, there is yet a further uneasiness in it, and that is, when such a man fails of his aim, when he misses the praise, and perhaps meets with the contrary reproach, (which is no man's lot more often than the vain-glorious, nothing making a man more despised) than what disturbances and disquiets, and even tortures of mind is he under ! A lively instance of this you have in Achitopel, 2 SAM. xvii. 23, who had so much of this, upon Absalom's despising his counsel, that he chose to rid himself of it, by hanging himself. And sure this painfulness that thus attends

## THE FOLLY.

this sin, is sufficient proof of the folly of it. Yet this is not all, it is yet further very hurtful. For if this vain-glory be concerning any good or Christian action, it destroys all the fruit of it; he that prays or gives alms to be seen of men, MATT. vi. 2, must take that as his reward, *Verily I say unto you, they have their reward*; they must expect none from God, but the portion of those hypocrites, that *love the praise of men more than the praise of God*. And this is a miserable folly to make such an exchange. It is like the dog in the fable, who seeing in the water the shadow of that meat he held in his mouth, catched at the shadow, and so let go his meat. Such dogs, such unreasonable creatures are we, when we thus let go the eternal rewards of Heaven to catch at a few good words of men. And yet we do not only lose those eternal joys, but procure to ourselves the contrary eternal miseries, which is sure the highest pitch of folly and madness. But if the vain-glory be not concerning any virtuous action, but only some indifferent thing, yet even there also it is very hurtful; for vain-glory is a sin that, wheresoever it is placed, endangers our eternal estate, which is the greatest of all mischiefs. And even for the present it is observable, that of all other sins it stands the most in its own light, hinders itself of that very thing it pursues. For there are very few that thus hunt after praise, but they are discerned to do so, and that is sure to eclipse whatever praise-worthy thing they do, and bring scorn upon them instead of reputation. And then certainly we may justly condemn this sin of folly, which is so ill a manager even of its own design.

15. You have seen how wretched a thing this vain-glory is in these several respects, the serious **HELPS AGAINST VAIN-GLORY.** consideration whereof may be one good means to subdue it; to which it will be necessary to add, first, a great watchfulness over thyself; observe narrowly whether in any Christian duty thou at all considerest the praise of men, or even in the most indifferent action, look whether thou have not too eager a desire of it, and if thou findest thyself inclined that way, have a very strict eye upon it, and wherever thou findest it stirring, check and resist it, suffer it not to be the end of thy actions. But in all matters of Religion let thy Duty be the Motive; in all indifferent things of common life, let Reason direct thee; and though thou mayest so far consider in those things the

opinion of men, as to observe the rules of common decency yet never think any praise that comes in to thee from any thing of the kind, worth the contriving for. Secondly, set up to thyself another aim, viz., that of pleasing God : let that be thy inquiry when thou goest about any thing ; whether it be approved by him. And then thou wilt not be at leisure to consider what praise it will bring thee from men. And surely he that weighs of how much more moment it is to please God, who is able eternally to reward us, than man, whose applause can never do us any good, will surely think it reasonable to make the former his only care.— Thirdly, if at any time thou art praised, do not be much overjoyed with it, nor think a jot the better of thyself ; but if it be Virtue thou art praised for, remember it was God that wrought it in thee, and give him the glory, never thinking any part of it belongs to thee. If it be some indifferent action, then remember that it cannot deserve praise, as having no goodness in it : but if it be a bad one, (as amongst men such are sometimes likeliest to be commended) then it ought to set thee a trembling instead of rejoicing, for then that woe of our Saviour's belongs to thee, LUKE vi. 26, *Woe unto you when men speak well of you, for so did their fathers to the false prophets* ; and there is not a greater sign of a hardened heart, than when men can make their sins the matter of their glory. In the last place, let thy prayers assist in the fight with this corruption.

16. A second VIRTUE is MEEKNESS, that is a calmness and quietness of spirit, contrary to the rages and impenitencies of Anger. This virtue may be exercised, either in respect of God, or his neighbour. That towards God, I have already spoken of, under the head of Humility, and that towards our neighbour, I shall hereafter. All I have here to say of it is, how it becomes a duty to ourselves ; that it does, in respect of the great advantages we reap by it ; which, in mere kindness to ourselves, we are to look after. And to prove that it brings us this great advantage, I need say no more, but that this meekness is that to which Christ hath pronounced a blessing, MATT. v. 5, *Blessed are the meek* ; and not only in the next world, but even in this too, *they shall inherit the earth*. Indeed, none but the meek person hath the true enjoyment of any thing in the world ; for the angry and impatient are like sick

ADVANTAGES OF  
IT.

people, who, we use to say, cannot enjoy the greatest prosperities ; for let things be never so fair without, they will raise storms within their own breasts. And surely whoever hath, either in himself or others, observed the great uneasiness of this passion of anger, cannot choose but think meekness a most pleasant thing.

17. Besides, it is also a most honourable thing, for it is that whereby we resemble Christ, *learn of me*, saith he, *for I am meek and lowly in heart*, MATT. xi. 29. It is also that whereby we conquer ourselves, overcome our own unruly passions, which of all victories is the greatest and most noble. Lastly, it is that which makes us behave ourselves like men, whereas anger gives us the fierceness and wildness of savage beasts. And accordingly the one is by all esteemed and loved ; whereas the other is hated and abhorred, every man shunning a man in rage as they would a furious beast.

18. Farther yet, Meekness is the sobriety of the mind, whereas anger is the direct madness ; it puts a man wholly out of his own power, and makes him do such things as himself in his sober temper abhors ; how many men have done those things in their rage which they have repented all their lives after ? And therefore surely as much as a man is more honourable than a beast, a sober man than a mad man ; so much hath this virtue of Meekness the advantage of honour above the contrary vice of Anger.

19. Again, Meekness makes any condition tolerable and easy to be endured. He that meekly bears any suffering, takes off the edge of it that it cannot wound him ; whereas he that frets and rages at it, whets it and makes it much sharper than it would be ; nay in some cases makes that so, which would not else be so at all. As particularly in the case of reproachful words, which in themselves can do us no harm, they neither hurt our bodies nor lessen our estates, the only mischief they can do us is to make us angry, and then our anger may do us many more ; whereas he that meekly passes them by is never the worse for them, nay the better ; for he shall be rewarded by God for that patience. Much more might be said to recommend this virtue to us, in respect of our own present advantage, but I suppose this may suffice to persuade men to esteem of it. The harder matter will be to gain them to the practice of it, wherein men pretend I know not what difficulties of natural constitutions, and the like ; yet sure there is no man of so choleric a temper, but

if he did heartily set about it, would find it were not impossible in some good measure to subdue it; but then he must be diligent in using means to that end. Divers of these means there are, I shall mention some few.

20. As first, the imprinting deep in our minds the loveliness and benefits of Meekness, together with the ugliness and mischiefs of anger. MEANS OF OB-TAINING IT. Secondly, to set before us the example of Christ, who endured all reproaches, yea, torments with perfect patience, that was *led as a sheep to the slaughter*, ISAIAH liii. 7, *That when he was reviled, reviled not again, when he suffered, threatened not*, 1 PET. ii. 23. And if he, the Lord of Glory, suffered thus meekly and unjustly from his own creatures, with what face can we ever complain of any injury done to us? Thirdly, to be very watchful to prevent the very first beginnings of anger, and to that purpose to mortify all inward peevishness and frowardness of mind, which is a sin in itself, though it proceed no further, but will also be sure, if it be cherished, to break out into open effects of anger. Therefore whenever thou findest the least arising of it within thee, make as much haste to check it, as thou wouldst to quench a fire in thy house; but be sure thou bring no fuel to it, by entertaining any thoughts that may increase it. And at such time especially keep a most strict watch over thy tongue, that it break not out into angry speeches, for that breath will fan the fire, not only in thine adversary, but thyself too; therefore though thy heart be hot within, stifle the flame, and let it not break out; and the greater the temptation is, the more earnestly lift up thy heart to God to assist thee to overcome it. Fourthly, often remember how great punishments thy sins have deserved, and then, whether thy sufferings be from God or man, thou wilt acknowledge them to be far short of what is due to thee, and therefore wilt be ashamed to be impenitent at them.

21. The third virtue is CONSIDERATION, and this in a most special manner we owe to our souls. For without it we shall, as rash unadvised people are used to do, rush them into infinite perils. Now this Consideration is either of our State, or of our Actions. By our State, I mean OF OUR STATE. what our condition is to God-ward, whether it be such that we may reasonably conclude ourselves in his favour. This

it much concerns us to consider and examine : and that not by those easy rules men are apt to frame to themselves, as whether they believe that Christ died for their sins ; that they are of the number of the elect, and shall certainly be saved : if these and the like were all that were required to put us into God's favour, none but some melancholy person could ever be out of it ; for we are apt enough generally to believe comfortably of ourselves. But the Rules God hath given us in his Word are those by which we must be tried

**THE RULE BY WHICH TO TRY OUR STATE.** at the last day, and therefore are certainly the only safe ones by which to try ourselves now. And the sum of those are, that whosoever continues in any one wilful sin, is not in his favour, nor can, if he do so die, hope for any mercy at his hand.

22. Now it is highly necessary we should consider what our condition is in this respect : for since our life is nothing but a puff of breath in our nostrils, which may for aught we know be taken from us the next minute, it nearly concerns us to know how we are provided for another world, that so in case we want at present that oil in our lamps wherewith we are to meet the bridegroom, MATT. xxv. 8, we may timely get it, and not for want of it be ever shut out like the foolish virgins from his presence. The neglect of this Consideration

**THE DANGER OF INCONSIDER- ATION.** hath undone many souls, some by too easy a belief that they were in a good condition, without considering and trying themselves by the foregoing Rule, but presuming either upon some slight outward performances, or upon such a false faith as I even now described ; others by the wretched careless going on, without so much as asking themselves what their condition is, but hope they should do as well as their neighbours, and so never inquiring farther ; which wretched carelessness will as certainly undo the spiritual, as the like would do the temporal estate ; yet in that every man is wise enough to foresee, that a man that never takes any accounts of his estate, to see whether he be worth something or nothing, will be sure to be a beggar in the end. But in this far weightier matter we can generally be thus improvident.

23. The second thing we are to consider is our Actions, and those either before or after we are to consider before we

act, and not to do any thing rashly or headily ; but first, to advise with our consciences, whether this be lawful to be done, for he that follows his own inclination, and does every thing which that moves him to, shall be sure to fall into a multitude of sins. Consider soberly, and be assured of the lawfulness of the thing before thou venture to do it. This advisedness is in all worldly things accounted so necessary a part of wisdom, that no man is accounted wise without it ; a rash man we look upon as the next degree to a fool. And yet it is sure, there is not so much need of looking about us in any thing as in what concerns our souls, and that not only in respect of the great value of them above all things else, but also in regard of the great danger they are in, as hath been showed more at large in the beginning of the treatise.

OUR ACTIONS.

BEFORE WE DO  
THEM.

Therefore consider soberly, and be assured of the lawfulness of the thing before thou venture to do it. This advisedness is in all worldly things accounted so necessary a part of wisdom, that no man is accounted wise without it ; a rash man we look upon as the next degree to a fool. And yet it is sure, there is not so much need of looking about us in any thing as in what concerns our souls, and that not only in respect of the great value of them above all things else, but also in regard of the great danger they are in, as hath been showed more at large in the beginning of the treatise.

24. Secondly, we are to consider the actions when they are past also, that is, we are to examine whether they have been such as are allowable by the Laws of Christ. This is very necessary whether they be good or bad ; if they be good, the recalling them helpeth us to the comfort of a good conscience, and that comfort again encourageth us to go on in the like ; and besides it stirs us up to thankfulness to God, by whose grace alone we were enabled to do them. But if they be bad, then it is especially necessary that we thus examine them, for without this it is impossible we should ever come to amendment, for unless we observe them to have been amiss, we can never think it needful to amend, but shall still run on from one wickedness to another, which is the greatest curse any man can lie under.

25. The oftener therefore we use this Consideration, the better, for the less likely it is that any of our sins shall escape our knowledge. It is much to be wished that every man would thus every night try the actions of the day, that so, if he have done any thing amiss, he may soon check himself for it, and settle his resolutions against it, and not let it grow on to a habit and course. And that he may also early beg God's pardon, which will the easier be had the sooner it is asked, every delay of that being a great increase of the sin. And surely whoever means to take an account of himself at all, will find this the easier course ; it being much easier to

AFTER THEY ARE  
DONE.FREQUENCY OF  
CONSIDERATION.

do it so a little at a time, and while passages are fresh in his memory, than to take the account of a long time together.

**DANGER OF OMITTING IT.** Now if it be considered, that every wilful sin must have a particular repentance before it can be pardoned, methinks men should tremble to sleep without that repentance; for what assurance hath any man that lies down in his bed, that he shall ever rise again? And then how dangerous is the condition of that man that sleeps in an unrepented sin! The weighing of these several Motives may be a means, by God's blessing, to bring us to the practice of this duty of Consideration in all the parts of it.

---

## SUNDAY VII.

Of Contentedness and the Contraries to it; Murmuring, Ambition, Covetousness, Envy; Helps to Contentedness. Of Duties which concern our Bodies: of Chastity, &c.; Helps to it. Of Temperance.

**THE fourth Virtue is CONTENTEDNESS,** and this surely is a duty we must owe to ourselves, it being that without which it is impossible to be happy. This Contentedness is a well-pleasedness with that condition, whatever it is, that God hath placed us in, not murmuring and repining at our lot, but cheerfully welcoming whatsoever God sends. How great, and withal how pleasant a virtue this is, may appear by the contrariety it hath to several great and painful vices; so that where this is rooted in the heart, it subdues not only some such single sin, but a cluster of them together.

**2. And first, it is contrary to all Murmuring in general,** which is a sin most hateful to God, as may appear by his sharp punishments of it on the Israelites in the wilderness, as you may read in several places of the books of Exodus and Numbers. And surely it is also very painful and uneasy to a man's self; for if, as the Psalmist saith, it be a *joyful and pleasant thing to be thankful*. we may by the rule of contraries conclude, it is a sad and unpleasant thing to be murmuring; and, I doubt not, every man's own experience will confirm the truth of it.

3. Secondly, it is contrary to Ambition: the ambitious man is always disliking his present condition, and that makes him so greedy to seek **TO AMBITION.** a higher: whereas, he that is content with his own, lies quite out of the road of his temptation. Now Ambition is not only a great sin in itself, but it puts men upon many other: there is nothing so horrid, which a man that eagerly seeks greatness will stick at; lying, perjury, murder, or any thing will down with him, if they seem to tend to his advancement. And the uneasiness of it is answerable to the sin. This none can doubt of, that considers what a multitude of fears and jealousies, cares, and distractions there are, that attend ambition in its progress, besides the great and public ruins that usually befall it in the end. And, therefore, sure Contentedness is in this respect as well a happiness as a virtue.

4. Thirdly, it is contrary to Covetousness; this the Apostle witnesseth, HEB. xiii. 5, *Let your conversation be without covetousness, and be content with such things as you have:* **TO COVETOUSNESS.**

where you see contentedness is set as the direct contrary to covetousness. But of this there needs not other proof than common experience: for we see the covetous man never thinks he hath enough; and, therefore, can never be content; for no man can be said to be so, that thirsts after any thing he hath not. Now that you may see how excellent and necessary a virtue this is that secures us against covetousness, it will not be amiss a little to consider the nature of that sin.

5. That it is a very great crime, is most certain, for it is contrary to the very foundation of all good life, I mean those three great Duties, to God, to ourselves, to our neighbours. First, it is so contrary to our Duty to God, that Christ himself tells us, LUKE xvi. 13, *We cannot serve God and Mammon:* he that sets his heart upon wealth, must necessarily take it off from God. And this we daily see in the covetous man's practice: he is so eager in the gaining of riches, that he hath no time or care to perform duty to God; let but a good bargain, or opportunity of gain come in his way, Prayer and all duties of Religion must be neglected to attend it. Nay, when the committing the greatest sin against God may be likely either to

**COVETOUSNESS  
CONTRARY TO  
OUR DUTY TO  
GOD.**

get or save him ought, his love of wealth quickly persuades him to commit it.

6. Secondly, it is contrary to the duty we owe ourselves, and that both in respect of our Souls and **TO OURSELVES.** Bodies. The covetous man despises his Soul, sells that to eternal destruction for a little pelf: for so every man does that by any unlawful means seeks to enrich himself; nay, though he do it not by unlawful means, yet if he have once set his heart upon wealth, he is that covetous person upon whom the Apostle hath pronounced, *that he shall not enter into the kingdom of God*, 1 COR. vi. 10.— Nor doth he only offend against his Soul, but his Body too; for he often denies that those necessary refreshments it wants, and for which his wealth (as far as concerns himself) was given him. This is so constantly the custom of rich misers, that I need not prove it to you.

7. In the third place, Covetousness is contrary to the duty we owe to our Neighbours. And that in **TO OUR NEIGHBOURS.** both the parts of it, Justice and Charity: he that loves money immoderately, will not care whom he cheats and defrauds, so he may bring in gain to himself; and from hence spring those many tricks of deceit and cozenage so common in the world. As for Charity, that is never to be hoped for from a covetous man, who dreads the lessening of his own heaps more than the starving of his poor brother. You see how great a sin this is, that we may well say of it as the Apostle doth, 1 TIM. vi. 10, *The love of money is the root of all evil.* And it is not much less uneasy than wicked, for between the care of getting and the fear of losing, the covetous man enjoys no quiet hour. Therefore, every man is deeply concerned, as he tenders his happiness either in this world or the next, to guard himself against this sin; which he can no way do, but by possessing his heart with this virtue of Contentedness.

8. In the fourth place, it is contrary to Envy; for he that is content with his own condition hath no temptation to envy another's. How unchristian a sin this of envy is, shall hereafter be showed. At the present, I need say no more, but that it is also a very uneasy one, it frets and gnaws the very heart of him that harbours it. But the worse this sin is, the more excellent still is this grace of con-

tentedness, which frees us from it. I suppose I have said enough to make you think this is a very lovely and desirable virtue. And sure it were not impossible to be gained by any, that would but observe these few directions.

9. First, To consider that whatever our estate and condition in any respect be, it is that which is allotted us by God; and, therefore, is certainly the best for us, he being much better able to judge for us, than we for ourselves; and, therefore, to be displeased at it, is in effect to say, we are wiser than he. Secondly, consider throughly the vanity of all worldly things, how very little there is in them; while we have them; and how uncertain we are to keep them; but above all, in how little stead they will stand us at the day of death or judgment, and then thou canst not think any of them much worth the desiring, and so wilt not be discontented for want of them. Thirdly, suffer not thy fancy to run on things thou hast not; many have put themselves out of love with what they have, only by thinking what they want. He that sees his neighbour possess somewhat, which himself hath not, is apt to think how happy he should be, if he were in that man's condition, and in the mean time never thinks of enjoying his own, which yet perhaps in many respects may be much happier than that of his neighbour's which he so much admires. For we look but upon the outside of other men's conditions, and many a man that is envied by his neighbours, as a wonderful happy person, hath yet some secret trouble, which makes him think much otherwise of himself. Therefore, never compare thy condition in any thing with those thou countest more prosperous than thyself, but rather do it with those thou knowest more unhappy, and then thou wilt find cause to rejoice in thine own portion. Fourthly, consider how far thou art from deserving any good thing from God, and then thou canst not but with Jacob, GEN. xxxii. 10, confess that thou art *not worth the least of those mercies* thou enjoyest, and instead of murmuring that they are no more, wilt see reason to admire, and praise the bounty of God, that they are so many. Fifthly, be often thinking of the joys laid up for thee in Heaven: look upon that as thy home, on this world only as an Inn, where thou art fain to take up in thy passage; and then as a Traveller expects not the same conveniences at an Inn, that he hath at home; so thou hast reason to be content with whatever entertainment

HELPS TO CON-  
TENTEDNESS.

thou findest here, knowing thou art upon thy journey to a place of infinite happiness, which will make an abundant amends for all the uneasiness and hardship thou canst suffer in the way. Lastly, pray to God, from whom all good things do come, that he will to all his other blessings add this of a contented mind, without which thou canst have no taste or relish of any other.

10. A fifth Duty is DILIGENCE : this is made up of two parts, watchfulness, and industry, and both DILIGENCE. these we owe to our Souls.

11. First, Watchfulness, in observing all the dangers that threaten them. Now since nothing can WATCHFULNESS endanger our souls, but sin, this watchfulness is principally to be employed against AGAINST SIN.! that: and as in a besieged city where there is any weak part, there it is necessary to keep the strongest guard ; so it is here, wherever thou findest thy inclinations such as are most likely to betray thee into sin, there it concerns thee to be especially watchful : observe, therefore, carefully to what sins either thy natural temper, thy company, or thy course of life do particularly incline thee, and watch thyself very narrowly in those ; yet do not so lay out all thy care on those, as to leave thyself open to any other, for that may give Satan as much advantage on the other side ; but let thy watch be general, against all sin, though in a special manner against those which are like oftenest to assault thee.

12. The second part of diligence, is Industry or Labour ; and this also we owe to our souls, for without INDUSTRY IN IMPROVING GIFTS. out it they will as little prosper as the vine-yard of the sluggard ; which Solomon describes, PROV. xxiv. 30. For there is a

husbandry of the Soul, as well as of the estate, and the end of the one, as the other, is the increasing and improving of its riches. Now the riches of the Soul are either Natural or Divine. By the natural I mean its faculties or reason, wit, memory, and the like ; by the Divine I mean the graces of God, which are not the Soul's Natural portion, but are given immediately by God ; and both these we are to take care to improve, they being both talents intrusted to us for that purpose.

13. The way of improving the Natural is by employing OF NATURE. them so, as may bring in most honour to God : we must not let them lie idle by us

through sloth, neither must we overwhelm them with intemperance and brutish pleasures, which is the case of too many, but we must employ them, and set them on work. But then we must be sure it be not in the Devil's service ; like many, who set their wit only to the profaning of God, or cheating their neighbours, and stuff their memories with such filthiness, as should never once enter their thoughts ; our use of them must be such, as may bring in most glory to God, most benefit to our neighbours, and may best fit us to make our accounts, when God shall come to reckon with us for them.

14. But the other part of the Soul's riches is yet more precious, that is, Grace ; and of this we must be especially careful, to husband and improve it. This is a duty expressly commanded us by the Apostle, 2 PET. iii. 18, *Grow in grace.* And again, in the first chapter of that epistle, verse 5, *Give all diligence to add to your Faith virtue, and to virtue knowledge, &c.*— Now the especial means of improving grace is by employing it, that is, by doing those things for the enabling of us, whereunto it was given us : this is a sure means, not only in respect of that easiness, which a custom of any thing brings in the doing of it, but principally, as it hath the promise of God, who hath promised, MATT. xxv. 29, that *to him that hath* (that is, hath made use of what he hath) *shall be given, and he shall have abundance.* He that diligently and faithfully employs the first beginnings of grace, shall yet have more, and he that in like manner husbands that more, shall yet have a greater degree ; so that what Solomon saith of temporal riches, is also true of spiritual, *The hand of the diligent maketh rich.*

15. Therefore whenever thou findest any good motions in thy heart, remember that is a season for this spiritual husbandry : if thou hast but a check of conscience against any sin thou livest in, drive that on till it come to a hatred ; and then that hatred, till it come to resolution ; then from that resolution, proceed to some endeavours against it. Do this faithfully, and sincerely, and thou shalt certainly find the grace of God assisting thee, not only in every of these steps, but also enabling thee to advance still higher, till thou come to some victory over it. Yet to this industry thou must not fail to add thy prayers also, there being a promise that God will give the holy spirit to them that ask it, LUKE xi. 13.

And therefore they that ask it not, have no reason to expect it. But it must be asked with such an earnestness, as is some way answerable to the value of the thing, which being infinitely more precious than all the world, both in respect of its own worth, and its usefulness to us, we must beg it with much more zeal and earnestness, than all temporal blessings, or else we show ourselves despisers of it.

16. Having directed you to the means of improving grace, I shall to quicken you to it mention the **THE DANGER OF THE CONTRARY.** great danger of the contrary, and that is not as in other things, the losing only those further degrees, which our industry might have helped us to, but it is the losing even of what we already have ; *For from him that hath not* (that is again, hath not made use of what he hath) *shall be taken away even that which he hath,* MATT. xxv. 29. God will withdraw the grace, which he sees so neglected, as we see in that parable ; the Talent was taken from him that had only hid it in a Napkin, and had brought in no gain to his Lord. And this is a most sad punishment, the greatest that can befall any man, before he comes to hell, indeed it is some kind of foretaste of it, it is the delivering him up to the power of the devil, and it is the banishing him from the face of God, which are not the least parts of the misery of the damned. And it is also the binding a man over to that fuller portion of wretchedness in another world ; for that is the last doom of the unprofitable servant, MATT. xxv. 30, *Cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.* You see there are no light dangers that attend this neglect of grace, and therefore if we have any love, nay, any common pity to our souls, we must set ourselves to this industry. I have now done with those VIRTUES which respect our SOULS, I come now to those which concern our BODIES.

17. The first of which is CHASTITY or PURITY, which may well be set in the front of the duties **CHASTITY.** we owe to our bodies, since the Apostle, 1 COR. vi. 18, sets the contrary as the especial sin against them, *He that committeth fornication, sinneth against his own body.*

18. Now this virtue of Chastity consists in a perfect abstaining from all kinds of uncleanness ; not only that of adultery, and fornication, but all other more unnatural sorts of it committed either upon ourselves or with any other.

In a word, all acts of that kind are utterly against Chastity, save only in lawful marriage. And even there men are not to think themselves let loose to please their brutish appetites, but are to keep themselves within such rules of moderation, as agree to the ends of marriage, which being these two, the begetting of Children, and the avoiding of fornication, nothing must be done which may hinder the first of these ends ; and the second aiming only at the subduing of lust, the keeping men from any sinful effects of it, is very contrary to that end to make marriage an occasion of heightening and inflaming it.

19. But this virtue of Chastity reacheth not only to the restraining of the grosser act, but to all lower degrees : it sets a guard upon our eyes, according to that of our Saviour, MATT. v. 28, *He that looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery*

UNCLEANNESS  
FORBIDDEN IN  
THE VERY LOW-  
EST DEGREES.

*with her already in his heart ;* and upon our hand, as appears by what Christ adds in that place, *If thy hand offend thee, cut it off ;* so also upon our tongues, that they speak no immodest or filthy words, *Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth,* EPHES. iv. 29. Nay upon our very thoughts and fancies ; we must not entertain any foul or filthy desires, not so much as the imagination of any such thing. Therefore he that forbears the grosser act, and yet allows himself in any of these, it is to be suspected that it is rather some outward restraint that keeps him from it than the conscience of the sin. For if it were that, it would keep him from these too, these being sins also, and very great ones in God's sight. Besides, he that lets himself loose to these, puts himself in very great danger of the other, it being much more easy to abstain from all, than to secure against the one, when the other is allowed. But above all, it is to be considered that even these lower degrees are such as make men very odious in God's eyes, who seeth the heart, and loves none that are not pure there.

20. The loveliness of this Virtue of Chastity needs no other way of describing, than by considering the loathsomeness and mischiefs of the

THE MISCHIEFS  
OF IT.

contrary sin, which is, first, very brutish ; those desires are but the same that the beasts have, and then how far are they sunk below the nature of men, that can boast of their sins of that kind, as of their special excellency ? When if that be the measure, a goat is the most excellent

creature. But indeed they that eagerly pursue this part of bestiality, do often leave themselves little, besides their human shape, to difference them from beasts : this sin so clouds

**TO THE SOUL.** the understanding, and defaceth the reasonable soul. Therefore Solomon very well describes the young man that was going to the harlot's house, PROV. vii. 22, *He goeth after her as an ox goeth to the slaughter.*

21. Nor, secondly, are the effects of it better to the body than to the mind. The many foul and filthy, besides painful diseases, which often follow this sin, are sufficient witnesses how mischievous it is to the Body. And alas, how many are there that have thus made themselves the devil's martyrs ! suffered such torments in the pursuit of this sin, as would exceed the invention of the greatest tyrant ! Surely they that pay thus dear for damnation, very well deserve to enjoy the purchase.

22. But thirdly, besides the natural fruits of this sin ; it is attended with very great and heavy judgments from God ; the most extraordinary and miraculous judgment that ever befell any place, fire and brimstone from heaven upon Sodom and Gomorrah, was for this sin of uncleanness. And many examples likewise of God's vengeance may be observed upon particular persons, for this sin. The incest of Amnon cost him his life, as you may read, 2 SAM. xiii. Zimri and Cosbi were slain in the very act, NUMB. xxv. 8. And no person that commits the like, hath any assurance it shall not be his own case. For how secretly soever it be committed, it cannot be hid from God, who is the sure avenger of all such wickedness. Nay, God hath very particularly threatened this sin, 1 COR. iii. 17, *If any man defile the Temple of God, him shall God destroy.* This sin of uncleanness is a kind of sacrilege, a polluting those bodies, which God hath chosen for his temples, and therefore no wonder, if it be thus heavily punished.

23. Lastly, this sin shuts us out from the kingdom of Heaven, wherein no impure thing can enter. And we never find any list of those sins which bar men thence, but this of uncleanness hath a special place in it. Thus it is, GAL. v. 19, and so again, 1 COR. vi. 9. If we will thus pollute ourselves, we are fit company only for those black spirits, the devil and his

angels, and therefore with them we must expect our portion, where our flames of lust shall end in flames of fire.

24. All this laid together, may surely recommend the virtue of Chastity to us, for the preserving of which we must be very careful, first to

HELPS TO  
CHASTITY.

check the beginnings of the temptation, to cast away the very first fancy of lust with indignation ; for if you once fall to parley and talk with it, it gains still more upon you, and then it will be harder to resist : therefore your way in this temptation is to fly rather than fight with it. This is very necessary, not only that we may avoid the danger of proceeding to act the sin, but also in respect of the present fault of entertaining such fancies, which of itself, though it should never proceed further, is as hath been showed, a great abomination before God. Secondly, have a special care to fly idleness, which is the proper soil for these filthy weeds to grow in, and keep thyself always busied in some innocent or virtuous employment : for then these fancies will be less apt to offer themselves. Thirdly, never suffer thyself to recall any unclean passages of thy former life with delight, for that is to act over the sin again, and will be so reckoned by God ; nay, perhaps thus deliberately to think of it, may be a greater guilt than a rash acting of it. For this both shows thy heart to be set upon filthiness, and is also a preparation to more acts of it. Fourthly, forbear the company of such light and wanton persons, as either by the filthiness of their discourse, or any other means may be a snare to thee. Fifthly, pray earnestly that God would give thee the Spirit of Purity, especially at the time of any present temptation. Bring the unclean devil to Christ to be cast out, as did the man in the gospel ; and if it will not be cast out with prayer alone, add fasting to it ; but be sure thou do not keep up the flame by any high or immoderate feeding. The last remedy, when the former prove vain, is marriage, which becomes a duty to him that cannot live innocently without it. But even here there must be care taken, lest this, which should be for his good, become not to him an occasion of falling for want of sobriety in the use of marriage. But this I have touched on already, and therefore need add no more but an earnest entreaty, that men would consider seriously of the foulness and danger of this sin of uncleanness, and not let the commonness of it lessen their

hatred of it, but rather make them abhor that shameless impudence of the world, that can make light of this sin against which God hath pronounced such heavy curses : *Whoremongers and adulterers God will judge*, HEB. xiii. 4 ; and so he will certainly do all sorts of unclean persons whatsoever.

**25. The second Virtue that concerns our bodies, is TEMPERANCE.** and the exercises of that are divers : as, first, Temperance in eating ; secondly, in drinking ; thirdly, in sleep ; fourthly, in recreation ; fifthly, in apparel. I shall speak of them severally ; and first, of Temperance in Eating. This temperance is observed when our eating is agreeable to those ends to which eating is by God and nature designed ; those are first, the being ; secondly, the well-being of our bodies.

**26. Man is of such a frame, that eating becomes necessary to him for the preserving his life ; hunger being a natural disease which will prove deadly if not prevented, and the only physic for it is eating, which is therefore become a necessary means of keeping us alive. And that is the first end of eating, and as men use not to take physic for pleasure, but remedy, so neither should they eat.**

**27. But secondly, God hath been so bountiful as to provide not only for the being, but the well-being of our bodies ; and, therefore, we are not tied to such strictness, that we may eat no more than will just keep us from starving, but we may also eat whatsoever either for kind or quantity most tends to the health and welfare of them. Now that eating which is agreeable to these ends is within the bounds of temperance, as on the contrary, whatsoever is contrary to them is a transgression against it ; he, therefore, that sets up to himself other ends of eating, as either the pleasing of his taste, or (what is yet worse) the pampering of his body, that he may the better serve his lust, he directly thwarts and crosses these ends of God : for he that hath those aims doth that which is very contrary to health, yea, to life itself, as appears by the many diseases and untimely deaths which surfeiting and uncleanness daily bring on men.**

28. He, therefore, that will practise this Virtue of Temperance, must neither eat so much, nor of any such sorts of meat (provided he can have other) as may be hurtful to his health : what the sorts or qualities shall be, is impossible to set down, for that differs according to the several constitutions of men : some men may with temperance eat a great deal, because their stomachs require it ; when another may be guilty of intemperance in eating but half so much, because it is more than is useful to him. And so also for the sort of meat, it may be niceness and luxury for some to be curious in them, when yet some degree of it may be necessary to the infirmities of a weak stomach, which not out of wantonness but disease cannot eat the coarser meats. But I think it may in general be said, that to healthful bodies the plainest meats are generally the most wholesome ; but every man must in this be left to judge for himself ; and that he may do it aright, he must be careful that he never suffer himself to be enslaved to his palate, for that will be sure to satisfy itself, whatever becomes of health or life.

RULES OF TEM-  
PERANCE IN  
EATING.

29. To secure him the better, let him consider, First, how unreasonable a thing it is that the whole body should be subjected to this one sense of tasting, that it must run all hazards only to please that. But it is yet much more so, that the diviner part, the soul, should also be thus enslaved ; and yet thus it is in an intemperate person, his very soul must be sacrificed to this brutish appetite ; for the sin of intemperance, though it be acted by the body, yet the soul must share in the eternal punishment of it. Secondly, consider how extreme short and vanishing this pleasure is, it is gone in a moment ; but the pains that attend the excess of it are much more durable, and then surely it agrees not with that common reason, wherewith, as men we are indued, to set our hearts upon it. But then in the third place, it agrees yet worse with the temper of a Christian, who should have his heart so purified and refined with the expectation of those higher and spiritual joys he looks for in another world, that he should very much despise these gross and brutish pleasures, which beasts are as capable of as we, and to them we may well be contented to leave them, it being the highest their natures can reach to ; but for us who have so much more excellent hopes, it is an intolerable shame that we should account them as any part of

our happiness. Lastly, the sin of Gluttony is so great and dangerous, that Christ thought fit to give an especial warning against it. *Take heed to yourselves that your hearts be not over-charged with surfeiting, &c.* LUKE xxi. 34. And you know what was the end of the rich glutton, LUKE xvi. He that had *fared deliciously every day*, at last wants *a drop of water to cool his tongue*. So much for the first sort of temperance, that of eating.

---

## SUNDAY VIII.

Of Temperance in Drinking. False Ends of Drinking, viz. Good-fellowship, putting away Cares, &c.

**THE second is Temperance in Drinking;** and the ends of eating and drinking being much the same, **TEMPERANCE IN DRINKING.** I can give no other direct rules in this, than

what were given in the former, to wit, that we drink neither of such sorts of liquor, nor in such quantities as may not agree with the right ends of drinking, the preserving our lives and healths; only in this there will be need of putting in one caution; for our understandings being in more danger to be hurt by drinking than meat, we must rather take care to keep that safe, and rather not drink what we might safely in respect of our health, if it be in danger to distemper our reason. This I say, because it is possible some men's brains may be so weak that their heads cannot bear that ordinary quantity of drink which would do their bodies no harm. And whoever is of this temper, must strictly abstain from that danger of drink, or that sort of it which he finds hath that effect, yea, though it do in other respects appear not only safe but useful to his health. For though we are to preserve our healths, yet we are not to do it by sin, as drunkenness most certainly is.

**2. But alas!** of those multitudes of drunkards we have in the world, this is the case but of very **FALSE ENDS OF DRINKING.** few, most of them going far beyond what their health requires, yea, or can bear, even to the utter destruction thereof. And, therefore, it is plain, men have set up to themselves some other ends of drinking than those allowable ones forementioned; it may not be

amiss a little to explain what they are, and withal to show the unreasonableness of them.

3. The first, and most owned, is that which they call Good-Fellowship ; one man drinks to keep another company at it. But I would ask such a one, whether if that man were drinking rank poison he would pledge him for company ? If he say he would not, I must tell him, that by the very same, nay, far greater reasons, he is not to do this. For immoderate drinking is that very poison ; perhaps it doth not always work death immediate (yet there want not many instances of its having done even that, very many have died in their drunken fit) but that the custom of it does usually bring men to their ends, is past doubt ; and, therefore, though the poison work slowly, yet it is still poison. But however, it doth at the present work that which a wise man would more abhor than death ; it works madness, and frenzy turns the man into a beast, by drowning that reason which should difference him from one. Certainly the effects of drink are such, that had being drunk been first enjoined as a punishment, we should have thought him a more than ordinary tyrant that had invented it.

4. A second end of drinking is said to be the maintaining of friendship and kindness amongst men. But this is strangely unreasonable, that men should do that towards the maintaining of friendship, which is really the greatest mischief that can be done to any man. Did ever any think to befriend a man by helping to destroy his estate, his credit, his life ? Yet he that thus drinks with a man does this and much more ; he ruins his reason, yea, his soul, and yet this must be called the way of preserving of friendship. This is so ridiculous, that one would think none could own it but when he were actually drunk. But besides, alas ! experience shows us, that this is fitter to beget quarrels than preserve kindness, as the many drunken brawls we every day see, with the wounds, and sometimes murders that accompany them, do witness.

5. A third end is said to be the cheering of their spirits, making them merry and jolly. But sure if the mirth be such that reason must be turned out of doors before it begin, it will be very little worth ; one may say with Solomon, ECCLES. ii. 2, *The laughter of such fools is madness.* And sure

GOOD-FELLOW-  
SHIP.

PRESERVING OF  
KINDNESS.

CHEERING THE  
SPIRITS.

they that will be drunk to put themselves in this temper, must by the same reason be glad of a frenzy, if they could but be sure it would be of the merry sort. But little do these merry folks think what sadness they are all this while heaping up to themselves, often in this world, when by some mad pranks they play in their jollity, they bring mischief upon themselves ; but, however, certainly in another, where this mirth will be sadly reckoned for.

6. A fourth end is said to be the putting away of cares : but  
**PUTTING AWAY CARES.** I shall ask what those cares are ? Be they such as should be put away ? Perhaps they are some checks and remorses of conscience, which must be thus charmed. And I doubt this hath proved too effectual with many to the laying them asleep. But this is the wickedest folly in the world ; for if thou thinkest not these checks to have something considerable in them, why do they trouble thee ? But if thou do, it is impossible thou canst hope this can long secure thee from them. Thou mayest thus stop their mouths for awhile, but they will one day cry the louder for it. Suppose a thief or a murderer knew he were pursued to be brought to justice, would he, think you, to put away the fear of being hanged, fall to drinking, and in the mean time take no care for his escape ? Or would you not think him desperately mad, if he did ? Yet this is the very case here, thy conscience tells thee of thy danger, that thou must ere long be brought before God's judgment-seat ; and is it not madness for thee, instead of endeavouring to get thy pardon, to drink away the thought of thy danger ? But in the second place, suppose these cares be some worldly ones, and such as are fit to be put away ; then for shame do not so disgrace thy Reason, thy Christianity, as not to let them be as forcible to that end as a little drink. Thy reason will tell thee it is in vain to care, where care will bring no advantage : and thy Christianity will direct thee to one on whom thou mayest *safely cast all thy cares, for he careth for thee*, 1 PET. v. 7. And therefore unless thou meanest to renounce being both a man and a Christian, never betake thee this pitiful shift to rid thee of thy cares. But besides this will not do the deed neither, for though it may at the present, whilst thou art in the height of the drunken fit, keep thee from the sense of thy cares, yet when that is over, they will return again with greater violence ; and, if thou hast any conscience,

bring a new care with them, even that which ariseth from the guilt of so foul a sin.

7. A fifth end is said to be the passing away of Time. This, though it be as unreasonable as any of the former; yet by the way, it serves to PASSED AWAY  
OF TIME. reproach idleness, which is, it seems, so burdensome a thing, that even this vilest employment is preferred before it. But this is in many a very false plea; for they often spend time at the pot, not only when they have nothing else to do, but even to the neglect of their most necessary business. However it is in all a most unreasonable one; for there is no man but he may find somewhat or other to employ himself in. If he have little worldly business of his own, he may yet do somewhat to the benefit of others; but however there is no man but hath a Soul, and if he will look carefully to that, he need not complain for want of business; where there are so many corruptions to mortify, so many inclinations to watch over, so many temptations (whereof this of drunkenness is not the least) to resist, the Graces of God to improve and stir up, and former neglects of all these to lament, sure there can never want sufficient employment; for all these require time, and so men at their deaths find; for those that have all their lives made it their business to drive away their time, would then give all the world to redeem it. And sure where there is much leisure from worldly affairs, God expects to have the more time thus employed in spiritual exercises. But it is not likely those meaner sorts of persons, to whom this book is intended, will be of the number of those that have much leisure, and therefore I shall no farther insist on it; only I shall say this: that what degrees of leisure they at any time have, it concerns them to employ to the benefit of their Souls, and not to bestow it to the ruin of them, as they do, who spend it in drinking.

8. A sixth end is said to be the preventing of that reproach which is by the world cast on those that will in this be stricter than their neighbours. PREVENTING  
REPROACH. But in answer to this, I shall first ask, what is the harm of such reproach? Sure it cannot equal the least of those mischiefs drunkenness betrays us to. Nay, if we will take our Saviour's word, it is a happiness, *Blessed saith he, are ye when men shall revile you, and say all manner of evil against you for my sake,* MATT. v. 11.

And St. Peter tells, 1 PET. iv. 14, *If ye be reproached for the Name of Christ, happy are ye*: and sure to be reproached for obedience to any command of Christ's, is to be reproached for his Name. Secondly, Let it be remembered that at our Baptism we solemnly renounced the world; and shall we now so far consider it, as for a few scoffs of it to run ourselves on all the temporal evils before mentioned; and which is much worse, the wrath of God and eternal destruction? But thirdly, if you fear reproach, why do ye do that which will bring reproach upon you from all wise and good men, whose opinion alone is to be regarded? And it is certain, drinking is the way to bring it on you from all such. And to comfort thyself against that, by thinking thou art still applauded by the foolish and worst sort of men, is as if all the madmen in the world should agree to count themselves the only sober persons, and all others mad, which yet sure will never make them the less mad, nor others the less sober. Lastly, consider the heavy doom Christ hath pronounced on those that are ashamed of him, and so are all those that for fear of reproach shall shrink from their obedience to him, MATT. viii. 38, *Whosoever shall be ashamed of me and my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of the Father with the holy Angels.* There is none but will at that day desire to be owned by Christ: but whoever will not here own him, that is, cleave fast to his commands, notwithstanding all the scorns, nay, persecutions of the world, shall then certainly be cast off by him. And he that will adventure thus to maintain his credit among a company of fools and madmen, deserves well to have it befall him: but after all this, it is not sure that even these will despise thee for thy sobriety: it is possible they may seem to do so to fright thee out of it; but if their hearts were searched, it would be found they do even against their wills bear a secret reverence to sober persons, and none fall more often under their scorn and despising, than those that run with them to the same excess of riot; for even he that sticks not to be drunk himself, will yet laugh at another that he sees so.

9. There is a seventh end, which though every man thinks

PLEASURE OF THE DRINK. too base to own, yet it is too plain it prevails with many; and that is the bare pleasure of the drink; but to these I confess it will

not be fit to say much ; for he that is come to this lamentable degree of sottishness is not like to receive benefit by any thing can be said : yet let me tell even this man that he of all others hath the most means of discerning his fault ; for this being such a ground of drinking as nobody will own, he is condemned of himself, yea, and all his fellow-drunkards too ; for their denying it is a plain sign they acknowledge it a most abominable thing. And if Esau were called a profane person, HEB. xii. 6, for *selling but his birthright for a mess of potage*, and that too when he had the necessity of hunger upon him ; what name of reproach can be bad enough for him who sells his health, his reason, his God, his Soul, for a cup of drink, and that when he is so far from needing it, that perhaps he hath already more than he can keep ? I shall say no more to this sort of persons, but let me warn all those that go on in this sin on any of the former grounds, that a little time will bring them even to this which they profess to loath ; it being daily seen that those which first were drawn into the sin for the love of the company, at last continue in it for love of the drink.

10. I can think but of one end more, that is, that of Bargaining. Men say it is necessary for them to drink in this one respect, of trading with their neighbours, bargains being most conveniently to be struck up at such meetings. But this is yet a worse end than all the rest, for the bottom of it is an aim of cheating and defrauding others ; we think when men are in drink we shall the better be able to overreach them ; and so this adds the sin of cozenage and defrauding to that of drunkenness. Now that this is indeed the intent is manifest for if it were only the dispatch of bargains were aimed at, we should choose to take men with their wits about them : therefore the taking them when drink hath distempered them can be nothing but to take advantage of them. Yet this often proves a great folly as well as a sin ; for he that drinks with another in hope to overreach him, doth many times prove the weaker-brained, and becomes drunk first, and then he gives that opportunity of cheating him, which he designed for the cheating of the other. Now this end of drinking is so far from becoming an excuse, that it is a huge heightening of the sin ; for if we may not drink intemperately upon any occasion, much less upon so wicked a one as is the cozening and defrauding of our brethren.

11. I suppose I have now showed you the unreasonableness of those motives, which are ordinarily brought in excuse of this sin. I am yet further to tell you, that it is not only that

**DEGREES OF THIS SIN.**

huge degree of drunkenness which makes men able neither to go nor speak, which is to be looked on as a sin, but all lower degrees, which do at all work upon the understanding, whether by dulling it and making it less fit for any employment, or by making it too light and airy, apt to apish and ridiculous mirth, or what is worse, by inflaming men into rage and fury. These, or whatever else make any change in the man, are to be reckoned in to this sin of drunkenness; nay, further, the drinking beyond the natural ends of drinking, that is, beyond moderate refreshment, is a sin, though by the strength of a man's brain it makes not the least change in him; and therefore those that are not actually drunk, yet can spend whole days, or any considerable part of them in drinking, are so far from being innocent, that that greater woe belongs to them which is pronounced, ISAIAH v. 22, against those that are mighty to drink. For though such a man may make a shift to preserve his wits, yet that wit serves him to very little purpose, when his employment is still but the same with him that is the most sottishly drunk, that is, to pour down drink.

12. Nay, this man is guilty of the greatest waste: first, of the good creatures of God; that drink which is by God's providence intended for the refreshment and relieving of us, is abused and misspent when it is drunk beyond that measure which those ends require; and sure there is not the meanest of these creatures we enjoy, but the abuse of them shall one day be accounted for, and he that drinks longest hath the most of that guilt. But in the second place, this is a waste of that which is much more precious, our time, which is allowed us by God to work out our salvation in, and must be strictly reckoned for; and, therefore, ought every minute of it to be most thrifitily husbanded to that end in actions of good life; but when it is thus laid out, it tends to the direct contrary, even the working out our damnation. Besides, he that thus drinks, though he escape being drunk himself, he is yet guilty of all the drunkenness that any of his company fall under; for he gives them encouragement to drink on by his example,

**THE GREAT  
GUILT OF THE  
STRONG DRINK-  
ERS.**

especially if he be one of any authority ; but if he be one whose company the rest are fond of, his company is then a certain ensnaring of them, for then they will drink too, rather than lose him. There is yet a greater fault that many of these stronger brained drinkers are guilty of, that is, the setting themselves purposely to make others drunk, playing, as it were, a prize at it, and counting it matter of triumph and victory to see others fall before them. This is a most horrible wickedness, it is the making ourselves the devil's factors, endeavouring all we can to draw our poor brethren into eternal misery, by betraying them to so grievous a sin ; and, therefore, it may well be reckoned as the highest step of this vice of drinking, as having in it the sin of mischieving others added to the excess in ourselves. And though it be looked upon in the world as a matter only of jest and merriment to make others drunk, that we may sport ourselves with their ridiculous behaviour, yet that mirth will have a sad conclusion, there being a woe expressly threatened by God to this very sin, HAB. ii. 15, *Woe unto him that giveth his neighbour drink, that putteth thy bottle to him, and maketh him drunk, that thou mayest look on their nakedness ;* and sure he buys his idle pastime very dear, that takes it with such a woe attending it.

13. I have now gone through the several motives to, and degrees of this sin of drunkenness, wherein I have been the more particular, because it is a sin so strangely reigning amongst us : no condition, no age, or scarce any sex, free from it, to the great dishonour of God, reproach of Christianity, and ruin, not only of our own souls hereafter, but even of all our present advantages and happiness in this life ; there being no sin which betrays each single committer to more mischiefs in his understanding, his health, his credit, his estate, than this one doth. And we have reason to believe this sin is one of those common crying guilts which have long lain heavy upon this nation, and pulled down those many judgments we have groaned under.

THE GREAT  
MISCHIEFS OF  
THIS SIN.

14. Therefore, Christian reader, let me now entreat, nay, conjure thee by all that tenderness and love thou oughest to have to the honour of God, the credit of thy Christian profession, eternal welfare of thine own soul, the prosperity of the church and nation whereof thou art a member ; nay, by that love

EXHORTATION  
TO FORSAKE IT.

which certainly thou hast to thy own temporal welfare, to think sadly of what hath been spoken ; and then judge whether there be any pleasure in this sin which can be any tolerable recompense for all those mischiefs it brings with it. I am confident no man in his wits can think there is ; and if there be not, then be ashamed to be any longer that fool, which shall make so wretched a bargain, but begin at this instant a firm and a faithful resolution, never once more to be guilty of this swinish sin, how often soever thou hast heretofore fallen into it, and in the fear of God betake thee to a strict temperance ; which when thou hast done, thou wilt find thou hast made, not only a gainful, but a pleasant exchange ; for there is a man that hath tried both courses, but his own heart will tell him there is infinitely more present comfort and pleasure in sobriety and temperance, than ever all his drunken revellings afforded him.

15. The main difficulty is the first breaking off the custom, and that arises partly from ourselves, partly from others. That from ourselves may be of two sorts ; the first is, when, by the habit of drinking, we have brought such false thirsts upon ourselves, that our bodies seem to require it, and this wants nothing but a little patience to overcome. Do but refrain some few days, and it will afterwards grow easy ; for the darkness arising only from custom, the breaking off that does the business. If thou say, it is very uneasy to do so, consider, whether if thou had some disease which would certainly kill thee if thou didst not for some little time refrain immoderate drinking, thou wouldest not rather forbear than die. If thou wouldest not, thou art so brutish a sot, that it is in vain to persuade thee ; but if thou hadst, then consider how unreasonable it is for thee not to do it in this case also ; the habit of drinking may well pass for a mortal disease, it proves so very often to the body, but will most certainly to the soul ; and, therefore, it is madness to stick at that uneasiness in the cure of this, which thou wouldest submit to in a less danger. Set, therefore, but a resolute purpose to endure that little trouble for a small time, and this first difficulty is conquered, for after thou has awhile refrained, it will be perfectly easy to do so still.

16. The second difficulty is that of spending the time, which those that have made drinking their trade and busi-

THE DIFFICUL-  
TIES OF DOING  
SO CONSIDERED.

SEEMING NECES-  
SITY OF DRINK.

ness, know scarce how to dispose of. But the very naming of this difficulty directs to the cure ; get thee some business, some-  
WANT OF EM-  
PLOYMENT.  
 what to employ thyself in, which, as I have already showed, will be easily found by all sorts of persons. But those meaner to whom I now write can sure never want it ready at hand, they being generally such as are to be maintained by their labour ; and, therefore, to them I need only give this advice, to be diligent in that business they have, to follow that close as they ought ; and they will have little occasion to seek out this way of spending their time.

17. There is another sort of difficulty, which I told you arises from others, and that is either from their persuasions or reproaches. It is very likely if thy old companions see thee begin to fall off, they will set hard to thee, to bring thee back to thy old course, they will urge to thee the unkindness of forsaking the company of thy friends, the sadness of renouncing all that mirth and jollity, which good fellows (as they call them) enjoy ; and if thou canst not thus be won they will affright thee with the reproach of the world, and so try if they can mock thee out of thy sobriety.

PERSUASIONS  
AND REPROACH-  
ES OF MEN.

18. The way to overcome this difficulty is to foresee it ; therefore, when thou first enterest on thy course of temperance, thou art to make account thou shalt meet with these (perhaps many other) temptations ; and that thou mayest make a right judgment, whether they be worthy to prevail with thee, take them beforehand and weigh them ; consider whether that false kindness that is maintained among men by drinking be worthy to be com-  
THE MEANS OF  
RESISTING  
THEM.  
 pared with that real and everlasting kind-  
 ness of God, which is lost by it ; whether  
 that foolish, vain mirth bear any weight  
 with the present joys of a good conscience here, or with  
 those greater of heaven hereafter. Lastly, whether the un-  
 just reproach of wicked men, the shame of the world be so  
 terrible as the just reproof of thine own conscience at the  
 present, and that eternal confusion of face that shall befall  
 all those that go on in this sin, at the last day ; weigh all  
 these, I say, I need not say in the balance of the sanctuary,  
 but even in the scales of common reason, and sure thou wilt

WEIGH THE AD-  
VANTAGE WITH  
THE HURT.

be forced to pronounce, that the motives to temperance infinitely outweigh those against it. When thou hast thus advisedly judged, then fix thy resolution accordingly ; and whenever any of these temptations come to stagger thee, remember thou hast formerly weighed them, knowest the just value of them, and that they are a most unworthy price for those precious advantages thou must give in exchange for them. And, therefore, hold fast thy resolution, and with indignation reject all motions to the contrary.

19. But be sure thou thus reject them at their very first tender, and do not yield in the least degree ; for if once thou givest ground, thou art lost, the sin will by little and little prevail upon thee. Thus we see many, who have professed to be resolved upon great temperance, yet for want of this care, have adventured into the company of good fellows ; when they have been there, they have at the first been over-entreated to take a cup, after that another, till at last they have taken their rounds as freely as any of them, and in that flood of drink drowned all their sober resolutions. Therefore, whoever thou art, that dost really desire to forsake the sin, take care to avoid the occasions and beginnings of it ; to which end it will be good openly to declare and own thy purposes of sobriety ; that so thou mayest discourage men from assaulting thee. But if either thou art ashamed to own it, or seemest to be so, they will quickly make use of that shame to bring thee to break it.

20. If thou be thus wary to keep thee from the first beginnings, thou art then sure never to be overtaken with this sin ; for it is like the keeping the security of doing so. the outworks of a besieged city, which, so long as they are stoutly defended, there is no danger ; but if they be either surprised or yielded, the city cannot long hold out. The advice therefore of the wise man is very agreeable to this matter, ECCLES. xix. 1, *He that despiseth small things shall perish by little and little.* But because, as the Psalmist saith, PSALM cxxvii. 1, *Except the Lord keep the city, the watchman waketh but in vain :* therefore to this guard of thyself add thy most earnest prayers to God, that he will also watch over thee, and by the strength of his grace enable thee to resist all temptations to this sin.

21. If thou do in the sincerity of thy heart use these means, there is no doubt but thou wilt be able to overcome this vice, how long soever thou hast been accustomed to it ; therefore if thou do still remain under the power of it, never excuse thyself by the impossibility of the task, but rather accuse the falsehood of thy own heart, that hath still such a love to this sin, that thou wilt not set roundly to the means of subduing it.

THE EFFICACY  
OF THESE MEANS  
IF NOT HINDERED  
BY LOVE OF  
THE SIN.

22. Perhaps the great commonness of particular custom of it may have made it so much thy familiar, thy bosom acquaintance,

the sin and thy

that thou art loath to entertain hard thoughts of it, very unwilling thou art to think that it means thee any hurt, and therefore art apt to speak peace to thyself, to hope that either this is no sin, or at most but a frailty, such as will not bar thee out of Heaven : but deceive not thyself, for thou mayest as well say there is no heaven, as that drunkenness shall not keep thee thence ; I am sure the same word of God which tells us there is such a place of happiness, tells us also that drunkards are of the number of those that shall not inherit it, 1 COR. vi. 10. And again, GAL. v. 21, Drunkenness is reckoned among those works of the flesh, which they that do *shall not inherit the Kingdom of God*. And indeed, had not those plain texts, yet mere reason would tell us the same, that that is a place of infinite purity, such as flesh and blood, till it be refined and purified, is not capable of, as the apostle tells us, 1 COR. xv. 53, and if as we are mere men, we are too gross and impure for it, we must sure be more so when we have changed ourselves into swine, the foulest of beasts ; we are then prepared for the devils to enter into, as they did into the herd, MARK v. 13, and that not only some one or two, but a legion, a troop and multitude of them. And of this we daily see examples ; for where this sin of drunkenness hath taken possession, it usually comes as an harbinger to abundance of others ; each act of drunkenness prepares a man not only for another of the same sin, but of others : lust and rage, and all brutish appetites are then let loose, and so a man brings himself under that curse, which was the saddest David knew how to foretell to any, *the falling from one wickedness to another*. If all this be not enough to affright thee out of this drunken fit, thou mayest

THAT LOVE  
MAKES A MAN  
LOATH TO BE-  
LIEVE IT  
DANGEROUS.

still wallow in thy vomit, continue in this sottish, senseless condition, till the flames of Hell rouse thee, and then thou wilt by sad experience find, what now thou wilt not believe, that *the end of those things*, as the Apostle saith, Rom. vi. 21, *is death*. God in his infinite mercy timely awake the hearts of all that are in this sin, that by a timely forsaking it they may *fly from the wrath to come*. I have now done with this second part of Temperance, concerning Drinking.

---

## SUNDAY IX.

Temperance in Sleep: the Rule of it, &c. Mischiefs of Sloth. Of Recreations: Cautions to be observed in them. Of Apparel, &c.

THE third part of TEMPERANCE concerns SLEEP : and Temperance in that also must be measured by the SLEEP. end for which Sleep was ordained by God, which was only the refreshing and supporting of our frail bodies, which being of such a temper that continual labour and toil tires and wearies them out, Sleep comes as a medicine to that weariness, as a repairer of that decay, that so we may be enabled to such labours as the duties of Religion or works of our calling require of us. Sleep was intended to make us more profitable, not more idle ; as we give rest to our beasts, not that we are pleased with their doing nothing, but that they may do us the better service.

2. By this therefore you may judge what is temperate sleeping ; to wit, that which tends to the refreshing and making us more lively and fit for action ; and to that end a moderate degree THEREIN. serves best. It will be impossible to set down just how many hours is that moderate degree, because, as in eating, so in sleep, some constitutions require more than others : Every man's own experience must in this judge for him, but then let him judge uprightly, and not consult with his sloth in the case ; for that will still, with Solomon's sluggard, cry, *A little more sleep, a little more slumber, a little more folding of the hands to sleep*, Prov. xxiv. 33. But take only so much as he really finds to tend to the end forementioned.

3. He that doth not thus limit himself falls into several sins under this general one of sloth: as first, he wastes his time, that precious talent which was committed to him by God to improve, which he that sleeps away, doth like him in the Gospel, MATT. xxv.

THE MANY SINS  
THAT FOLLOW  
THE TRANSGRES-  
SION OF IT.

18, *hides it in the earth*, when he should be trading with it; and you know what was the doom of that unprofitable servant, verse 30, *Cast ye him into outer darkness*: he that gives himself to darkness of sleep here, shall there have darkness without sleep, but with *weeping and gnashing of teeth*. Secondly, he injures his body: immoderate sleep fills that full of diseases, makes it a very sink of humours, as daily experience shows us. Thirdly, he injures his Soul also, and that not only in robbing it of the service of the body, but in dulling its proper faculties, making them useless and unfit for those employments to which God hath designed them ; of all which ill husbandry the poor soul must one day give account. Nay, lastly, he affronts and despises God himself in it, by crossing the very end of his creation, which was to serve God in an active obedience; but he that sleeps away his life, directly thwarts and contradicts that, and when God saith, *Man is born to labour*, his practice saith the direct contrary, that man is born to rest. Take heed therefore of giving thyself to immoderate sleep, which is the committing of so many sins in one.

4. But besides the sin of it, it is also very hurtful in other respects, it is the sure bane of thy outward estate, wherein the sluggish person shall never thrive ; according to that observation of the Wise man, PROV. xxiii. 21, *Drowsiness shall cover a man with rags*; that is, the slothful man shall want convenient clothing ; nay, indeed it can scarce be said, that the sluggard lives. Sleep, you know, is a kind of death, and he that gives himself up to it, what doth he but die before his time ? Therefore if untimely death be to be looked upon as a curse, it must needs be a strange folly to choose that from our own sloth which we dread so much from God's hand.

OTHER MIS-  
CHIEFS OF  
SLOTH.

5. The fourth part of Temperance concerns RECREATIONS, which are sometimes necessary both to the body and the mind of a man, neither of them being able to endure a constant toil

TEMPERANCE IN  
RECREATION.

without somewhat of refreshment between ; and therefore there is a very lawful use of them ; but to make it so, it will be necessary to observe these Cautions.

6. First, we must take care that the kind of them be lawful, that they be such as have nothing of sin in them ; we must not to recreate ourselves do any thing which is dishonourable to God, or injurious to our neighbour, as they do who make profane or filthy backbiting discourse their recreation. Secondly, we must take care that we use it with moderation : and to do so, we must first be sure not to spend too much time upon it, but remember that the end of recreation is to fit us for business, not to be itself a business to us. Secondly, we must not be too vehement and earnest in it, not set our hearts too much upon it, for that will both ensnare us to the using too much of it, and it will divert and take off our minds from our more necessary employments like school boys who, after a play-time, know not how to set themselves to their books again. Lastly, we must not set up to ourselves any other end of recreations but that lawful one, of giving us moderate refreshment.

7. As first, we are not to use Sports only to pass away our time, which we ought to study how to redeem, not fling away ; and when it is remembered how great a work we have here to do, the making our calling and election sure, the securing our title to Heaven hereafter, and how uncertain we are what time shall be allowed us for that purpose ; it will appear our time is that which of all other things we ought most industriously to improve. And therefore sure we have little need to contrive ways of driving that away which flies so fast of itself, and is so impossible to recover. Let them that can spend whole days and nights at cards and dice, and idle pastimes, consider this, and withal, whether they ever bestowed a quarter of that time towards that great business of their lives, for which all their time was given them, and then think what a woful reckoning they are like to make when they come at last to account for that precious treasure of their time. Secondly, we must not let our covetousness have any thing to do in our recreations : if we play at any game, let the end of our doing it be merely to recreate ourselves, not to win money ; and to that purpose be sure never to play for any considerable matter ; for if thou do, thou wilt

UNDUE ENDS  
OF SPORTS.

bring thyself into two dangers, the one of covetousness and a greedy desire of winning, the other of rage and anger at thy ill fortune, if thou happen to lose ; both which will be apt to draw thee into other sins besides themselves. Covetousness will tempt thee to cheat and cozen in gaining, and anger to swearing and cursing, as common experience shows us too often. If thou find thyself apt to fall into either of these in thy gaming, thou must either take some course to secure thyself against them, or thou must not permit thyself to play at all ; for though moderate play be in itself not unlawful, yet if it be the occasion of sin, it is so to thee, and therefore must not be ventured on. For if Christ commands us so strictly to avoid temptations, that if our very eyes or hands offend us (that is, prove snares to us), we must rather part with them, than to be drawn to sin by them, how much rather must we part with any of these unnecessary sports, than run the hazard of offending God by them ? He that so plays lays his soul to stake, which is too great a prize to be played away. Besides, he loses all the recreation and sport he pretends to aim at, and instead of that sets himself to a greater toil than any of those labours are he was to ease by it : for sure the desires and fears of the covetous, the impatience and rage of the angry man are more real pains than any the most laborious work can be.

8. The last part of Temperance is that of APPAREL, which we are again to measure by the agreeableness to the ends for which clothing should be used. Those are especially of these three : first, the hiding of nakedness. This was the first occasion of Apparel, as you may read, GEN. iii. 21, and was the effect of the first sin ; and, therefore, when we remember the original of clothes, we have so little reason to be proud of them, that on the contrary we have cause to be humbled and ashamed, as having lost that innocence which was a much greater ornament than any the most glorious apparel can be. From this end of clothing we are likewise engaged to have our Apparel modest, such as may answer this end of covering our shame ; and, therefore, all immodest fashions of Apparel, which may either argue the wantonness of the wearer, or provoke that of the beholder, are to be avoided.

TEMPERANCE IN  
APPAREL.

APPAREL DE-  
SIGNED FOR CO-  
VERING OF  
SHAME.

9. A second end of Apparel is the fencing the body from cold, thereby to preserve the health thereof:  
**FENCING** and this end we must likewise observe in  
**FROM COLD.** our clothing ; we must wear such kind of habits as may keep us in that convenient warmth which is necessary to our healths. And this is transgressed when, out of the vanity of being in every fantastic fashion, we put ourselves in such clothing, as either will not defend us from cold, or is some other way so uneasy that it is rather a hurt than a benefit to our bodies to be so clad. This is a most ridiculous folly, and yet that which people that take a pride in their clothes are usually guilty of.

10. A third end of Apparel is the distinguishing or differing of persons, and that first in respect of sex, secondly in respect of qualities.  
**PERSONS.** First, clothes are to make difference of sex ; this hath been observed by all nations, the habits of men and women have always been diverse. And God himself expressly provided for it among the Jews, by commanding that the man should not wear the apparel of the woman, nor the woman of the man. But then secondly, there is also a distinction of qualities to be observed in apparel ; God hath placed some in a higher condition than others, and in proportion to that condition it befits their clothing to be. Gorgeous apparel, our Saviour tells us, *is for kings' courts,* LUKE vii. 25. Now this end of apparel should also be observed. Men and women should content themselves with that sort of clothing which agrees to their sex and condition, not striving to exceed, and equal that of a higher rank, nor yet making it matter of envy among those of their own estate, vying who shall be finest ; but let every man clothe himself in such sober attire as befits his place and calling, and not think himself disparaged, if another of his neighbours have better than he.

11. And let all remember that clothes are things which add no true worth to any ; and, therefore, it is an intolerable vanity to spend any considerable part either of thoughts, time, or wealth upon them, or to value themselves ever the more for them, or despise their poor brethren that want them. But if they desire to adorn themselves, let it be as Saint Peter adviseth the women of his time, 1 PET. iii. 4, *In the hidden man of the heart, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit.* Let them clothe themselves as richly

as is possible with all Christian virtues, and that is the raiment that will set them out lovely in God's eyes, yea, and in men's too, who, unless they be fools and idiots, will more value thee for being good than fine; and sure one plain coat thou puttest upon a poor man's back, will better become thee, than twenty rich ones thou shalt put upon thine own.

12. I have now gone through the several parts of Temperance. I shall now in conclusion, add this general caution, that though in all these particulars I have taken notice only of the one fault of excess, yet it is possible there may be one on the other hand: men may deny their bodies that which they necessarily require to their support and well-being. This is, I believe, a fault not so common as the other, yet we sometimes see some very niggardly persons, that are guilty of it, that cannot find in their hearts to borrow so much from their chests as may fill their bellies, or clothe their backs, and that are so intent upon the world, so moiling and drudging in it, that they cannot afford themselves that competent time of sleep, or recreation, that is necessary. If any that hath read the former part of this discourse be of this temper, let him not comfort himself, that he is not guilty of those excesses there complained of; and, therefore, conclude himself a good Christian, because he is not intemperate; for whoever is this covetous creature, his abstaining shall not be counted to him as the virtue of temperance, for it is not the love of temperance, but wealth, that makes him refrain; and that is so far from being praiseworthy, that it is that great sin which the Apostle tells us, 1 TIM. vi. 10, *is the root of all evil*; such a man's body will one day rise in judgment against him, for the defrauding it of its due portion, those moderate refreshments and comforts which God hath allowed it. This is an idolatry beyond that of offering the children to Moloch, LEV. xx. 3, they offered but their children, but this covetous wretch sacrifices himself to his god Mammon, whilst he often destroys his health, his life, yea, finally his soul too, to save his purse. I have now done with the second head of Duty, that to ourselves, contained by the Apostle under the word Soberly.

TOO MUCH  
SPARING A  
FAULT AS WELL  
AS EXCESS.

## SUNDAY X.

Of Duties to our Neighbour. Of Justice, Negative, Positive. Of the Sin of Murder, of the Heinousness of it, the Punishments of it, and the strange Discoveries thereof. Of Maiming, &c.

I COME now to the third part of Duties, those to our **DUTY TO OUR NEIGHBOUR**, which are by the Apostle summed up in gross in the word (Righteousness) by which is meant not only bare justice, but all kind of charity also ; for that is now by the law of Christ become a debt to our neighbour, and it is a piece of unrighteousness to defraud him of it. I shall, therefore, build all the particular duties we owe to our neighbour, on those two general ones, Justice and Charity.

2. I begin with **JUSTICE**, whereof there are two parts, the one Negative, the other Positive : the negative Justice is to do no wrong, or injury to any. The positive Justice is to do right to all ; that is, to yield them whatsoever appertains or is due unto them.

I shall first speak of the Negative Justice, **NEGATIVE**. the not injuring or wronging any. Now because a man is capable of receiving wrong in several respects ; this first part of justice extends itself into several branches, answerable to those capacities of injury. A man may be injured either in his soul, his body, his possessions, or credit ; and, therefore, this duty of Negative Justice lays a restraint on us in every of these, that we do no wrong to any man in respect either of his soul, his body, his possessions, or his credit.

3. First, this justice ties us to do no hurt to his Soul ; and here my first work must be to examine **TO THE SOUL**. what harm it is that the Soul can receive ; it is, we know, an invisible substance, which we cannot reach with your eye, much less with our swords and weapons ; yet for all that, it is capable of being hurt and wounded, and that even to death.

4. Now the Soul may be considered either in a natural or spiritual sense ; in the natural it signifies that which we usually call the mind of a man, and this, we all know, may be wounded

**IN THE NATURAL SENSE.**

with grief or sadness, as Solomon saith, PROV. xv. 13, *By sorrow of heart the spirit is broken.* Therefore, whoever doth causelessly afflict or grieve his neighbour, he transgresses this part of justice, and hurts and wrongs his soul. This sort of injury malicious and spiteful men are very often guilty of; they will do things, by which themselves reap no good, nay, often much harm, only that they may vex and grieve another: this is a most savage inhuman humour, thus to take pleasure in the sadness and afflictions of others; and whoever harbours it in his heart, may truly be said to be possessed with the devil, for it is the nature only of those accursed spirits to delight in the miseries of men; and till that be cast out, they are fit only to dwell as the possessed person did, MARK v. 2, *among graves and tombs*, where there are none capable of receiving affliction by them.

5. But the Soul may be considered also in the spiritual sense, and so it signifies that immortal part of us which must live eternally, either in bliss or woe in another world. And the Soul thus understood is capable of two sorts of harm: first, that of sin; secondly, that of punishment; the latter whereof is certainly the consequent of the former; and, therefore, though God be the inflicter of punishment, yet since it is but the effect of sin, we may justly reckon, that he that draws a man to sin is likewise the betrayer of him to punishment, as he that gives a man a mortal wound is the cause of his death; therefore, under the evil of sin both are contained, so that I need speak only of that.

6. And sure there cannot be a higher sort of wrong than the bringing this great evil upon the Soul. Sin is the disease and wound of the Soul, as being the direct contrary to grace, which is the health and soundness of it; now this wound we give to every Soul, whom we do by any means whatsoever draw into sin.

7. The ways of doing that are divers: some of them, whereof though some are more direct than others, yet all tend to the same end. Of the more direct ones there is, first, the commanding of sin, that is, when a person that hath power over another shall require him to do something which is unlawful; an example of this we have in Nebuchadnezzar's commanding the worship of the golden image,

IN THE  
SPIRITUAL.

DRAWING TO  
SIN THE  
GREATEST IN-  
JURY.

I shall mention  
DIRECT MEANS  
OF IT.

DAN. iii. 4, and his copy is imitated by any parent or master, who shall require of his child or servant to do any unlawful act. Secondly, there is counselling of sin, when men advise and persuade others to any wickedness ; thus Job's wife counselled her husband to curse God, JOB ii. 9. And Achitopel advised Absalom to go in to his father's concubines, 2 SAM. xvi. 21. Thirdly, there is enticing and alluring to sin, by setting before men the pleasures or profits they shall reap by it. Of this sort of enticement Solomon gives warning, PROV. i. 10, *My son, if sinners entice thee, consent thou not ; if they say, Come with us, let us lay wait for blood, let us lurk privily for the innocent without a cause, &c. : and verse 13, you may see what is the bait, by which they seek to allure them, We shall find all precious substance ; we shall fill our houses with spoil. Cast in thy lot among us, let us all have one purse.* Fourthly, there is assistance in sin ; that is, when men aid and help others either in contriving or acting a sin. Thus Jonadab helped Amnon in plotting the ravishing of his sister, 2 SAM. 13. All these are direct means of bringing this great evil of sin upon our brethren.

8. There are also others which, though they seem more indirect, may yet be as effectual towards that ill end : as first, example in sin ; he that sets others an ill pattern does his part to make them imitate it, and too often it hath that effect ; there being generally nothing more forcible to bring men into any sinful practice, than the seeing it used by others, as might be instanced in many sins, to which there is no other temptation, but their being in fashion. Secondly, there is encouragement in sin, when either by approving, or else at least by not showing a dislike, we give others confidence to go on in their wickedness. A third means is by justifying and defending any sinful act of another's, for by that we do not only confirm him in his evil, but endanger the drawing others to the like, who may be the more inclinable to it, when they shall hear it so pleaded for. Lastly, the bringing up any reproach upon strict and Christian living, as those do who have the ways of God in derision ; this is a means to affright men from the practice of duty, when they see it will bring them to be scorned and despised ; this is worse than all the former, not only in respect of the man who is guilty of it (as it is an

evidence of the great profaneness of his own heart) but also in regard of others, it having a more general ill effect than any of the former can have ; it being the betraying men, not only to some single acts of disobedience to Christ, but even to the casting off all subjection to him ; by all these means we may draw on ourselves this great guilt of injuring and wounding the souls of our brethren.

9. It would be too long for me to instance in all the several sins, in which it is usual for men to ensnare others ; as drunkenness, uncleanness, rebellion, and a multitude more. But it will concern every man for his own particular, MEN SADLY TO  
CONSIDER WHOM  
THEY HAVE THUS  
INJURED. to consider sadly what mischiefs of this kind he hath done to any, by all or any of these means, and to weigh well the greatness of the injury. Men are apt to boast of their innocence towards their neighbours, that they have done wrong to no man ; but God knows many that thus brag are of all others the most injurious persons : perhaps they have not maimed his body, nor stolen his goods, but alas ! the body is but the case and cover of the man, and the goods some appurtenances to that ; it is the soul is the man, and that they can wound and pierce without remorse, and yet with the adulteress, Prov. xxx. 20, *say, they have done no wickedness* ; but glory of their friendly behaviour to those whom they thus betray to eternal ruin ; for whomsoever thou hast drawn to any sin, thou hast done thy part to ascertain to those endless flames. And then think with thyself how base a treachery this is : thou wouldest call him a treacherous villain, that should while he pretends to embrace a man secretly stab him : but this of thine is far beyond that, as the soul is of more value than the body, and hell worse than death. And remember yet farther, that besides the cruelty of it to thy poor brother, it is also most dangerous to thyself, it being that against which Christ hath pronounced a woe, MATT. xviii. 7 ; and verse 6, he tells us, that *whoever shall offend* (that is, draw into sin) *any of those little ones, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.* Thou mayest plunge thy poor brother into perdition, but as it is with wrestlers, he that gives another a fall, commonly falls with him, so thou art like to bear him company to that place of torment.

10. Let therefore thy own and his danger beget in thee a sense of the greatness of this sin, this **HEARTILY TO** horrid piece of injustice to the precious soul **BEWAILE IT.** of thy neighbour. Bethink thyself seriously to whom thou hast been thus cruel ; whom thou hast enticed to drinking, advised to rebellion, allured to lust, stirred up to rage, whom thou hast assisted or encouraged in any ill course, or discouraged and disheartened by thy profane scoffings at piety in general or at any conscientable strict walking of his in particular ; and then draw up a bill of endictment ; accuse and condemn thyself as a Cain, a murderer of thy brother, heartily and deeply bewail all thy guilts of this kind, and resolve never once more to be a stumbling-block as Saint Paul calls it, Rom. xiv. 13, in thy brother's way.

11. But this is not all, there must be some fruits of this **ENDEAVOUR TO** repentance, brought forth : now in all sins of injustice, restitution is a necessary fruit **REPAIR IT.** of repentance, and so it is here ; thou hast committed an act (perhaps many) of high injustice to the soul of thy brother ; thou hast robbed it of its innocence, of its title to Heaven : thou must now endeavour to restore all this to it again, by being more earnest and industrious to win him to repentance, than ever thou wert to draw him to sin ; use now as much art to convince him of the danger, as ever thou didst to flatter him with the pleasures of his vice ; in a word, countermine thyself by using all those methods and means to recover him, that thou didst to destroy him, and be more diligent and zealous in it, for it is necessary thou shouldst, both in regard of him and thyself. First, in respect of him, because there is in man's nature so much a greater promptness and readiness to evil than to good, that there will need much more pains and diligence to instil the one into him, than the other : besides, the man is supposed to be already accustomed to the contrary, which will add much to the difficulty of the work. Then in respect of thyself, if thou be a true penitent thou wilt think thyself obliged, as St. Paul did, *to labour more abundantly*, and wilt be ashamed, that when thou art trading for God, bringing back a soul to him, thou shouldst not pursue it with more earnestness than while thou wert an agent of Satan's ; besides, the remembrance that thou wert a means of bringing this poor soul into this snare, must necessarily quicken thy diligence to get him out

of it. So much for the first part of Negative Justice, in respect of the Souls of our brethren.

12. The second concerns the Bodies, and to those also this justice binds thee to do no wrong nor violence. Now of wrongs to the Body there may be several degrees: the highest of them is killing, taking away the life; this is forbid in the very letter of the sixth Commandment: *Thou shalt do no murder.*

NEGATIVE JUS-  
TICE TO THE  
BODY.

IN RESPECT OF  
THE LIFE.

13. Murder may be committed either by open violence, when a man either by sword or any other instrument takes away another's life, immediately and directly; or it may be done secretly and treacherously, as David murdered Uriah, not with his own sword, but with the sword of the children of Ammon, 2 SAM. xi. 17; and Jezebel, Naboth by a false accusation, 1 KINGS xxi. 13. And so divers have committed this sin of murder by poison, false witness, or some such concealed ways. The former is commonly the effect of a sudden rage; the latter hath several originals: sometimes it proceeds from some old malice fixed in the heart towards the person; sometimes from some covetous or ambitious desires, such an one stands in a man's way to his profit or preferment, and therefore he must be removed; and sometimes again it is to cover shame, as in the case of strumpets that murder their infants, that they may not betray their filthiness. But besides these more direct ways of killing, there is another, and that is, when, by our persuasions and enticements, we draw a man to do that which tends to the shortening of his life, and is apparent to do so: he that makes his neighbour drunk, if by that drunkenness the man comes to any mortal hurt, which he would have escaped if he had been sober, he that made him drunk is not clear of his death; or if he die not by any such sudden accident, yet if drinking cast him into a disease, and that disease kill him, I know not how he that drew him to that excess can acquit himself of his murder in the eyes of God, though human laws touch him not. I wish those who make it their business to draw in customers to that trade of debauchery would consider it. There is yet another way of bringing this guilt upon ourselves, and that is by inciting and stirring up others to it, or to that degree of anger and revenge which produces

SEVERAL WAYS  
OF BEING GUILTY  
OF MURDER.

it; and he that sets two persons at variance, or, seeing them already so, blows the coals, if murder insue, he certainly hath his share in the guilt; which is a consideration that ought to affright all from having any thing to do in the kindling or increasing of contention.

14. Now for the heinousness of this sin of murder, I sup-

pose none can be ignorant that it is of the deepest dye, a most loud crying sin. This we may see in the first act of this kind that was ever committed; Abel's blood crieth from the earth, as God tells Cain, GEN. iv. 10. Yea, the guilt of this sin is such, that it leaves a stain even upon the land where it is committed, such as is not to be washed out, but by the blood of the murderer, as appears, DEUT. xix. 12, 13. The land cannot be purged of blood but by the blood of him that shed it; and therefore, though in other cases the flying to the altar secured a man, yet in this of wilful murder no such refuge was allowed, but such an one was to be taken even thence, and delivered up to justice, EXOD. xxi. 14, *Thou shalt take him from my altar that he may die.* And it is yet farther observable, that the only two precepts which the Scripture mentions, as given to Noah after the flood, were both in relation to this sin; that of not eating blood, GEN. ix. 4; being a ceremony, to beget in men a greater horror of this sin of murder, and so intended for the preventing of it. The other was for the punishment of it, GEN. ix. 6, *He that sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed;* and the reason of this strictness is added in the next words, *For in the image of God made he man;* where you see that this sin is not only an injury to our brother, but even the highest contempt and despite towards God himself, for it is the defacing of his image, which he hath stamped upon man. Nay, yet further, it is the usurping of God's proper right and authority. For it is God alone, that hath right to dispose of the life of man; it was he alone that gave it, and it is he alone that hath power to take it away; but he that murders a man does, as it were, wrest this power out of God's hand, which is the highest pitch of rebellious presumption.

15. And, as the sin is great, so likewise is the punishment;

THE GREAT PUNISHMENT ATTENDING IT. we see it frequently very great and remarkable even in this world, (besides those most fearful effects of it in the next) blood not only cries, but it cries for vengeance, and

the great God of recompenses, as he styles himself, will not fail to hear it: very many examples the Scripture gives us of this: Ahab and Jezebel, that murderd innocent Naboth, for greediness of his vineyard, were themselves slain, and the dogs licked their blood in the place where they had shed his, as you may read in that story; so Absalom, that slew his brother Amnon, after he had committed that sin fell into another, that of rebellion against his king and father, and in it miserably perished. Rachab and Baanah, that slew Ishboseth, were themselves put to death, and that by the very person they thought to endear by it. Many more instances might be given of this out of the sacred story, and many also out of human, there having been no age but hath yielded multitude of examples of this kind, so that every man may furnish himself out of the observations of his own time.

16. And it is worth our notice, what strange and even miraculous means it hath often pleased God to use for the discovery of this sin. The very brute creatures have often been made instruments of it; nay, often the extreme horror of a man's own conscience hath made him betray himself: so that it is not any closeness a man uses in the acting of this sin that can secure him from the vengeance of it; for he can never shut out his own conscience, that will in spite of him be privy to the fact, and that very often proves the means of discovering it to the world, or if it should not do that, yet it will sure act revenge on him, it will be such a hell within him as will be worse than death. This we have seen in many, who after the commission of this sin have never been able to enjoy a minute's rest, but have had that intolerable anguish of mind, that they have chosen to be their own murderers rather than live in it. These are the usual effects of this sin even in this world, but those in another are yet more dreadful, where surely the highest degrees of torment belong to this high pitch of wickedness: for if, as our Saviour tells us, MATT. v. 22, hell fire be the portion of him that shall but call his brother fool, what degree of those burnings can we think proportionable to this so much greater an injury?

THE STRANGE  
DISCOVERIES  
OF IT.

17. The consideration of all this ought to possess us with the greatest horror and abomination of this sin, and to make us extremely watchful of ourselves, that we never fall into

WE MUST WATCH  
DILIGENTLY  
AGAINST ALL AP-  
PROACHES OF  
THIS SIN.

it, and to that end to prevent all those occasions which may insensibly draw us into this pit. I mentioned at first several things which are wont to be originals of it, and at those we must begin, if we will surely guard ourselves. If, therefore, thou wilt be sure never to kill a man in thy rage, be sure never to be in that rage ; for if thou permittest thyself to that, thou canst have no security against the other, anger being a madness that suffers us not to consider or know what we do, when it has once possessed us. Therefore, when thou findest thyself begin to be inflamed, think betimes whether this may lead thee, if thou lettest loose to it, and immediately put the bridle upon this headstrong passion : so again, if thou wilt be sure thy malice shall not draw thee to it, be sure never to harbour one malicious thought in thy heart ; for if it once settle there, it will gather such strength, that within a while thou wilt be perfectly under the power of it, so that it may lead thee even to this horrible sin at its pleasure ; be, therefore, careful at the very first approach of this treacherous guest, to shut the doors against it, never to let it enter thy mind : so also, if thou wilt be sure thy covetousness, thy ambition, thy lust, or any other sinful desire shall not betray thee to it, be sure thou never permit any of them to bear any sway with thee ; for if they get the dominion, as they will soon do, if they be once entertained in the heart, they will be past thy control, and hurry thee to this or any other sin that may serve their ends. In like manner, if thou wouldest not be guilty of any of the mortal effects of thy neighbour's drunkenness, be sure not to entice him to it, nor accompany him at it ; and to that purpose do not allow thyself in the same practice : for if thou do, thou wilt be labouring to get company at it. Lastly, if thou wilt not be guilty of the murder committed by another, take heed thou never give any encouragement to it, or contribute any thing to that hatred or contention that may be the cause of it. For when thou hast either kindled or blown a fire, what knowest thou whom it may consume ? Bring always as much water as thou canst to quench, but never bring one drop of oil to increase, the flame. The like may be said of all other occasions of this sin, not here mentioned ; and this careful preserving ourselves from these is the only sure way to keep

thyself innocent from the great offence, guard thee warily from all such inlets, those steps and approaches towards it.

18. But although murder be the greatest, yet it is not the only injury that may be done to the body of our neighbour; there are others which are also of a very high nature; the next in degree to this is Maiming him, depriving him of any member, or at least of the use of it; and this is a very great wrong and mischief to him, as we may discern by the judgment of God himself, in the case of the bond-servant, who should by his master's means lose a member, EXOD. xxi. 26, the freedom of his whole life was thought but a reasonable recompense for it. *He shall let him go free*, saith the text, *for his eye*; nay, though it were a less considerable part, if it were but a tooth, which of all others may be lost with the least damage, yet the same amends was to be made him, verse 27.

19. But we need no other way of measuring this injury, than the judgment of every man in his own case; how much does every man dread the loss of a limb? So that if he be by any accident or disease in danger of it, he thinks no pains or cost too much to preserve it. And then how great an injustice, how contrary to that great rule of *doing as we would be done to*, is it, for a man to do that to another which he so unwillingly suffers himself?

But if the person be poor, one that must labour for his living, the injury is yet greater, it is such as may in effect amount to the former sin of murder; for, as the Wise man says, ECCLUS. xxiv. 21, *The poor man's bread is his life, and he that deprives him thereof is a blood shedder.* And, therefore, he that deprives him of the means of getting his bread, by disabling him from labour, is surely no less guilty. In the Law it was permitted to every man that had sustained such a damage by his neighbour, to require the magistrate to inflict the like on him, *eye for eye, tooth for tooth*, as it is, EXOD. xxi. 24.

20. And though unprofitable revenge be not now allowed to us Christians, yet sure it is the part of every one who

MAIMING A  
GREAT INJURY.

THAT WHICH  
EVERY MAN  
DREADS FOR  
HIMSELF.

YET WORSE IF  
THE MAN BE  
POOR.

**NECESSITY OF  
MAKING WHAT  
SATISFACTION  
WE CAN.**

hath done this injury to make what satisfaction lies in his power ; it is true he cannot restore a limb again (which by the way should make men wary how they do those mischiefs which it is so impossible for

them to repair,) but yet he may satisfy for some of the ill effects of that loss. If that have brought the man to want and penury, he may, nay, he must, if he have but the least ability, relieve and support him, yea, though it be by his own extraordinary labour : for if it be a duty of us all to be eyes to the blind, and feet to the lame, as Job speaks, much more must we be so to them whom ourselves have made blind and lame. Therefore, whoever hath done this injury to any of his poor brethren, let him know he is bound to do all that is possible towards the repairing of it ; if he do not, every new suffering that the poor man's wants bring upon him, becomes a new charge and accusation against him, at the tribunal of the just Judge.

**21. There are yet other degrees of injury to the body of our neighbour. I shall mention only two more, Wounds, and Stripes : a man may wound another, which though it finally**

**WOUNDS AND  
STRIPES, INJU-  
RIES ALSO.**

cause loss neither of life nor limb, is yet of both. And the like may be said of stripes ; both of which, however, are very painful at the present, nay, perhaps very long after ; and pain, of all temporal evils, is to be accounted the greatest, for it is not only an evil in itself, but it is such an one, that permits us not, whilst we are under it, to enjoy any other good ; a man in pain having no taste of any the greatest delights. If any man despise these as light injuries, let him again ask himself, how he would like it, to have his own body slashed or bruised, and put to pass under those painful means of cure, which are many times necessary in such cases ? I presume there is no man would willingly undergo this from another, and why then shouldst thou offer it to him ?

**22. The truth is, this strange cruelty to others is the effect of a great pride and haughtiness of heart : we look upon others with such contempt, that we think it no matter how they are used ; we think they must bear blows from us, when, in the mean time, we are so ten-**

**THIS CRUELTY  
TO OTHERS,  
THE EFFECT OF  
PRIDE.**

der of ourselves, that we cannot hear the least word of disparagement but we are all on a flame. The provocations to these injuries are commonly so slight, that did not this inward pride dispose us to such an angriness of humour, that we take fire at every thing, it were impossible we should be moved by them. Nay, some are advanced to such a wantonness of cruelty, that without any provocation at all, in cool blood, as they say, they can thus wrong their poor brethren, and make it part of their pastime and recreation to cause pain to others. Thus some tyrannous humours take such a pleasure in tormenting those under their power, that they are glad when they can but find a pretence to punish them, and then do it without all moderation : and others will set men together by the ears, only that they may have the sport of seeing the scuffle ; like the old Romans, that made it one of their public sports to see men kill one another.— And sure we have as little Christianity as they, if we can take delight in such spectacles.

23. This savageness and cruelty of mind is so unbecoming the nature of a man, that he is not allowed to use it even to his beast ; how intolerable is it then towards those that are of the same nature, and, which is more, are heirs of the same eternal hopes, with us ? They that shall thus transgress against their neighbours in any of the foregoing particulars, or whatever else is hurtful to the body, are unjust persons, want even this lowest sort of justice, the negative, to their neighbours in respect of their bodies.

24. Neither can any man excuse himself by saying what he has done was only in return of some injury offered him by the other ; for suppose it to be so, that he have indeed received some considerable wrong, yet cannot he be his own revenger without injury to that man, who is not, by being thine enemy, become thy vassal, or slave, to do with him what thou list ; thou hast never the more right of dominion over him, because he hath done thee wrong ; and, therefore, if thou hadst no power over his body before, it is certain thou hast none now ; and, therefore, thou art not only uncharitable (which yet were sin enough to damn thee,) but unjust in every act of violence thou dost to him. Nay, this injustice ascends higher, even to God himself, who hath reserved vengeance as his own peculiar right. *Vengeance is mine, I will repay, saith the Lord*, Rom. xii. 19. And then he that will act revenge for himself, what does he, but encroach upon this

special right and prerogative of God, snatch the sword, as it were, out of his hand, as if he knew better how to wield it? which is at once a robbery, and contempt of the Divine Majesty.

---

## SUNDAY XI.

Of Justice about the Possessions of our Neighbour : against injuring him, as concerning his Wife, his Goods. Of Oppression. Theft. Of paying of Debts, &c.

**THE** third part of Negative Justice concerns the Possessions of our Neighbours. What I mean by **HIS POSSESSIONS.** Possessions, I cannot better explain than by referring you to the tenth commandment, the end of which is to bridle all covetous appetites and desires towards the Possessions of our neighbour. There we find reckoned up, not only his house, servants, and cattle, which may all pass under the one general name of his goods or riches, but particularly his Wife, as a principal part of his possessions, and therefore when we consider this duty of Negative Justice, in respect of the possessions of our neighbour, we must apply it to both, his Wife as well as his Goods.

2. The especial and peculiar right that every man hath in his Wife is so well known, that it were vain to say any thing in proof of it ; the great impatience that every husband hath to have this right of his invaded, shows that it is sufficiently understood in the world, and therefore none that does this injury to another can be ignorant of the greatness of it. The corrupting of a man's wife, enticing her to a strange bed, is by all acknowledged to be the worst sort of theft, infinitely beyond that of the goods.

3. Indeed there is in this one, a heap of the greatest injustices together, some towards the woman, and some towards the man : towards the woman there are the greatest imaginable ; it is that injustice to her soul, which was before mentioned as the highest of all others, it is the robbing her of her innocence, and setting her in a course of the

**THE ENTICING  
A MAN'S WIFE  
THE GREATEST  
INJUSTICE.**

**TO THE WOMAN.**

horridest wickedness (no less than lust and perjury together), from which it is probable she may never return, and then it proves the damning of her eternally. Next, it is in respect of this world, the robbing her of her credit, making her abhorred and despised, and her very name a reproach among all men ; and besides, it is the depriving her of all that happiness of life, which arises from the mutual kindness and affection that is between man and wife. Instead whereof this brings in a loathing and abhorring of each other, from whence flow multitudes of mischiefs, too many to rehearse, in all which the man hath his share also.

4. But besides those, there are to him many and high injustices ; for it is first the robbing him of TO THE MAN. that which, of all other things, he accounts most precious, the love and faithfulness of his wife, and that also wherein he hath such an incommunicable right, that himself cannot, if he would, make it over to any other ; and therefore sure it cannot without the utmost injustice be torn from him by any. Nor is this all, but it is farther the ingulfing him (if ever he come to discern it) in that most tormenting passion of jealousy, which is of all others the most painful, and which oft puts men upon the most desperate attempts, it being, as Solomon says, Prov. vi. 34, *the rage of a man.* It is yet farther, the bringing upon him all that scorn and contempt, which, by the unjust measures of the world, falls on them which are so abused, and which is by many esteemed the most insufferable part of the wrong ; and though it be true, that it is very unjust he should fall under reproach, only because he is injured, yet unless the world could be new moulded, it will certainly be his lot, and therefore it adds much to the injury. Again, this may indeed be a robbery in the usual sense of the word, for perhaps it may be the thrusting in the child of the adulterer into his family, to share both in the maintenance and portions of his own children ; and this is an arrant theft : first, in respect of the man, who surely intends not the providing for another man's child ; and then in respect of the children, who are by that means defrauded of so much as that goes a way with. And therefore whosoever hath this circumstance of the sin to repent of, cannot do it effectually, without restoring to the family as much as he hath by this means robbed it of.

5. All this put together will sure make this the greateat and most provoking injury that can be done to a man, and

(which heightens it yet more) it is that, for which a man can never make reparations ; for unless it be in the circumstance before mentioned, there is no part of this sin, wherein that can be done ; to this purpose it is observable in the Jewish Law, that THE MOST IRRE-  
PARABLE. the thief was appointed to restore fourfold, and that freed him ; but the adulterer having no possibility of making any restitution, any satisfaction, he must pay his life for his offence, LEV. xx. 10. And though now-a-days adulterers speed better, live many days to renew their guilt, and perhaps to laugh at those whom they have thus injured, yet let them be assured, there must one day be a sad reckoning, and that whether they repent or not ; if by God's grace they do come to repentance, they will then find this to be no cheap sin, many anguishes of soul, terrors and perplexities of conscience, groans and tears it must cost them ; and indeed, were a man's whole life spent in these penitential exercises, it were little enough to wipe off the guilt of any one single act of this kind ; what overwhelming sorrows then are requisite for such a trade of this sin, as too many drive ? Certainly, it is so great a task, that it is highly necessary for all that are so concerned, to set to it immediately, lest they want time to go through with it ; for let no man flatter himself, that the guilt of a course and habit of such a sin can be washed away with a single act of repentance, no, he must proportion the repentance to the fault, and as one hath been a habit and course, so must the other also. And then how strange a madness is it for men to run into this sin, (and that with such painful pursuits, as many do) which he knows must at the best hand, that is, supposing he do repent of it, cost him thus dear ! But then if he do not repent, infinitely dearer ! it loses him all his title to Heaven, that place of purity, and gives him his portion in the lake of fire, where the burnings of his lust shall end in those everlasting burnings ; for how closely soever he hath acted his sin, be it so that he may have said with the adulterer in JOB xxiv. 15, *No eye seeth me*, yet it is sure he could not in the greatest obscurity shelter himself from God's sight, with whom *the darkness is no darkness*, PSALM cxxxix. 12. And he it is, who hath expressly threatened to judge this sort of offenders, HEB. xiii. 4, *Adulterers God will judge*. God grant that all that live in this foul guilt may so seasonably and so thoroughly judge themselves that they may prevent that severe and dreadful judgment of his.

6. The second thing to which this negative justice to our neighbour's possessions reacheth, is his HIS GOODS Goods, under which general word is contained all those several sorts of things, as house, land, cattle, money, and the like, in which he hath a right and property ; these we are by the rule of this justice to suffer him to enjoy without seeking, either to work him damage in any of them, or to get any of them to ourselves ; I make a difference between these two, because there may be two several grounds or motives of this injustice ; the one malice, the other covetousness.

7. The malicious man desires to work his neighbour's mischief, though he get nothing by it himself, it is frequently seen that men will make havoc and spoil of the goods of one, to whom they bear a grudge, though they never design to get any thing to themselves by it, but only the pleasure of doing a spite to the other. This is a most hellish humour, directly answerable to that of the devil, who bestows all his pains and industry, not to bring in any good to himself, but only to ruin and undo others : and how contrary it is to all rules of justice, you may see by the precept given by God to the Jews concerning the goods of an enemy ; where they are so far from being allowed a liberty of spoil and destruction, that they are expressly bound to prevent it, Exod. xxiii. 4, 5, *If thou meet thine enemy's ox, or his ass going astray, thou shalt surely bring it back to him again : If thou see the ass of him that hateth thee lying under his burden, and wouldest forbear to help him, thou shalt surely help with him :* Where you see it is a debt we owe to our very enemies, to prevent that loss and damage, which by any accident he is in danger of : and that even with some labour and pains to ourselves. How horrible an injustice is it then purposely to bring that loss and damage on him ? Whoever is guilty of this, let him never excuse himself by saying, he hath not enriched himself by the spoil of his neighbour, that he hath nothing of it cleaves to his finger, for sure this malicious injustice is no less a fault than the covetous one ; nay, I suppose in respect of the principle and cause from which it flows, it may be greater, this hatred of another being worse than the immoderate love of ourselves ; whoever hath thus mischiefed his neighbour, he is as much bound to repair the injury,

MALICIOUS IN-  
JUSTICE.

to make satisfaction for the loss, as if he had enriched himself by it.

8. But on the other side, let not the covetous defrauder therefore judge his sin light, because there COVETOUS IN- is another that in some one respect out- JUSTICE. weighs it, for perhaps in others his may cast the scales ; certainly it does in this one, that he that is unjust for greediness of gain is like to multiply more acts of this sin, than he that is so out of malice ; for it is impossible any man should have so many objects of his malice, as he may have of his covetousness ; there is no man at so general a defiance with all mankind that he hates every body ; but the covetous man hath as many objects of his vice, as there be things in the world he counts valuable. But I shall not longer stand upon this comparison, it is sure they are both great and crying sins, and that is ground enough of abhorring each ; let us descend now to the several branches of this sort of covetous injustice ; it is true they may all bear the name of robbery, or theft, for in effect, they are all so, yet for method's sake, it will not be amiss to distinguish them into these three ; Oppression, Theft, and Deceit.

9. By Oppression, I mean that open and bare-faced robbery, of seizing upon the possessions of OPPRESSION. others, and owning and avowing the doing so. For the doing of this there are several instruments ; as first, that of power, by which many nations and princes have been turned out of their rights, and many private men out of their estates : sometimes again, law is made the instrument of it ; he that covets his neighbour's lands or goods, pretends a claim to them, and then by corrupting of justice, by bribes and gifts, or else overruling it by greatness and authority, gets judgment on his side : this is a high oppression, and of the worst sort, thus to make the law, which was intended for the protection and defence of men's rights, to be the means of overthrowing them ; and it is a very heavy guilt, that lies both on him that procures, and on him that pronounces such a sentence, yea, and on the lawyer too, that pleads such a cause, for by so doing he assists in the oppression ; sometimes again, the very necessities of the oppressed are the means of his oppression : thus it is in the case of extortion, and griping usury : a man is in extreme want of money, and this gives opportunity to the extortioner,

to wrest unconscionably from him, to which the poor man is forced to yield, to supply his present wants. And thus also it is often with exacting landlords, who, when their poor tenants know not how to provide themselves elsewhere, rack and screw them beyond the worth of the thing. All these and many the like are but several ways of acting this one sin of Oppression, which becomes yet the more heinous, by how much the more helpless the person is that is thus oppressed; therefore, the oppression of the widow and fatherless is in Scripture mentioned as the height of this sin.

10. It is indeed a most crying guilt, and that against which God hath threatened his heavy vengeance, as we read in divers texts of Scripture; thus it is, EZEK. xviii. 12, *He that hath oppressed the poor*, and hath spoiled by violence, he shall surely die, *his blood shall be upon him*; and the same sentence is repeated against him, verse 18. Indeed, God hath so peculiarly taken upon him the protection of the poor and oppressed, that he is engaged, as it were, in honour to be their avenger, and accordingly PSALM xii., we see God solemnly declare his resolution of appearing for them, verse 5, *For the oppression of the poor, for the sighing of the needy, now I will arise, saith the Lord, I will set him in safety from him*. The advice, therefore, of Solomon is excellent, PROV. xxii. 22, *Rob not the poor, because he is poor, neither oppress the afflicted in the gate, for the Lord will plead their cause, and will spoil the soul of those that spoiled them*; they are like in the end to have little joy of the booty it brings them in, when it thus engages God against them.

11. The second sort of this injustice is Theft, and of that also there are two kinds, the one the withholding what we should pay, and the other taking from our neighbour what is already in his possession.

12. Of the first sort is the not paying of debts, whether such as we have borrowed, or such as by our own voluntary promise are become our debts; for they are equally due to him that can lay either of these claims to them; and, therefore, the withholding of either of them is a theft, a keeping from my neighbour that which is his; yet the former of them is rather the more injurious, for by that I take from him that which he once actually had, (be it money or what-

GOD'S VENGE-  
ANCE AGAINST  
IT.

THEFT.

NOT PAYING  
WHAT WE BOR-  
ROW.

ever else) and so make him worse than I found him. This is a very great and very common injustice. Men can now-a-days with as great confidence deny him that asks a debt, as they do him that asks an alms ; nay, many times it is made matter of quarrel for a man to demand his own ; besides the many attendances the creditor is put to in pursuit of it, are a yet farther injury to him, by wasting his time, and taking him off from other business, and so he is made a loser that way too. This is so great injustice, that I see not how a man can look upon any thing he possesses as his right, whilst he thus denies another his. It is the duty of every man in debt, rather to strip himself of all, and cast himself again naked upon God's providence, than thus to feather his nest with the spoils of his neighbours. And surely it would prove the more thriving course, not only in respect of the blessing, which may be expected upon justice, compared with the curse that attends the contrary, but even in worldly prudence also : for he that defers paying of debts, will at last be forced to it by law, and that upon much worse terms than he might have done it voluntarily, with a greater change, and with such a loss of his credit, that afterwards in his greatest necessities he will not know where to borrow. But the sure way for a man to secure himself from the guilt of this injustice, is, never to borrow more than he knows he hath means to repay, unless it be of one who, knowing his disability, is willing to run the hazard. Otherwise he commits this sin at the very time of borrowing ; for he takes that from his neighbour upon promise of paying, which he knows he is never likely to restore to him, which is a flat robbery.

The same justice which ties men to pay their own debts,  
**WHAT WE ARE** ties also every surety to pay those debts of  
**BOUNDED FOR.** others for which he stands bound, in case the principal either cannot or will not : for by being bound, he hath made it his own debt, and must in all justice answer it to the creditor, who, it is presumed, was drawn to lend on confidence of his security ; and, therefore, is directly cheated and betrayed by him, if he see him not satisfied. If it be thought hard, that a man should pay for that which he never received benefit by, I shall yield it, so far as to be just matter of weariness to every man how he enter into such engagements, but it can never be made an excuse for the breaking them.

As for the other sort of debt, that which is brought upon a man by his own voluntary promise, that also cannot without great injustice be withheld; for it is now the man's right, and then it is no matter by what means it came to be so. Therefore, we see David makes it part of the description of a just man, PSALM xv. 4, that he keeps his promises, yea, *though they were made to his own disadvantage*: and surely, he is utterly unfit to ascend to that holy hill, there spoken of, either as that signifies the church here, or heaven hereafter, that does not punctually observe this part of justice. To this sort of debt may be reduced the wages of the servant, the hire of the labourer, and the withholding of these is a great sin, and the complaints of those that are thus injured ascend up to God. *Behold (saith ST. JAMES v. 4,) the hire of the labourers which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth, and the cries of them that have reaped, are entered into the ear of the Lord of Sabaoth.* In DEUT. xxiv. 14, 15, we find a strict command in this matter, *Thou shalt not oppress a hired servant that is poor and needy, at his day thou shalt give him his hire, neither shall the sun go down upon it, for he is poor and setteth his heart upon it, lest he cry against thee to the Lord, and it be sin unto thee.* This is one of those loud clamorous sins which will not cease crying till it bring down God's vengeance; and, therefore, though thou hast no justice to thy poor brother, yet have at least so much mercy to thyself, as not to pull down judgments on thee by thus wronging him.

## SUNDAY XII.

Of Theft; Stealing; of Deceit in Trust, in Traffic: of Restitution, &c.

THE second part of Theft is the taking from our neighbour that which is already in his possession; and this may be done either more violently, and openly, or else more closely and slyly, the first is the manner of those that rob on the way, or plunder houses, where by force they take the goods of their neighbour; the other is the way of the pilfering

STEALING THE  
GOODS OF OUR  
NEIGHBOUR.

thief, that takes away a man's goods unknown to him; I shall not dispute which of these is the worst, it is enough that they are both such acts of injustice, as make men odious to God, unfit for human society, and betray the actors to the greatest mischiefs even in this world, death itself being by law appointed the reward of it; and there are few that follow this trade long, but at last meet with that fruit of it. I am sure it is madness for any to believe he shall always steal securely, for he is to contend with the industry of all those whom he shall thus injure, whose losses will quicken their wits for the finding him out, and which is infinitely more, he is to struggle with the justice of God, which doth usually pursue such men to destruction, even in this world; witness the many strange discoveries that have been made of the craftiest thieves. But however, if he were secure from the vengeance here, I am sure, nothing but repentance and reformation can secure him from the vengeance of it hereafter. And now, when these dangers are weighed, it will sure appear, that the thief makes a pitiful bargain, he steals his neighbour's money or cattle, and in exchange for it he must pay his life or his soul, perhaps both; and if *the whole world be too mean a price for a soul*, as he tells us, MARK viii. 36, who best knew the value of them, having himself bought them, what a strange madness is it, to barter them away for every petty trifle, as many do, who have got such a habit of stealing, that not the meanest worthless thing can escape their fingers. Under this head of theft may be ranked the receivers of stolen goods, whether those that take them as partners in the theft, or those that buy them, when they know or believe they are stolen. This many (that pretend much to abhor theft) are guilty of, when they can by it buy the thing a little cheaper than the common rate. And here also comes in the concealing of any goods a man finds of his neighbours, which whosoever restores not, if he know or can learn out the owner, is no better than a thief; for he withholds from his neighbour that which properly belongs to him: and sure it will not be uncharitable to say, that he that will do this, would likewise commit the grosser theft, were he by that no more in danger of law than in this he is.

The third part of injustice is Deceit, and in that there

DECEIT.      may be as many acts as there are occasions  
of intercourse and dealing between man  
and man.

2. It were impossible to name them all, but I think they will be contained under those two general deceits, in matters of trust, and in matters of traffic, or bargaining ; unless it be that of gaming, which, therefore, here by the way I must tell you, is as much a fraud and deceit as any of the rest.

3. He that deceives a man in any trust that is committed to him, is guilty of a great injustice, and that the most treacherous sort of one, it is

IN TRUST.

the joining of two great sins in one, defrauding, and promise-breaking ; for in all trusts there is a promise implied, if not expressed ; for the very accepting of the trust contains under it a promise of fidelity ; these trusts are broken sometimes to the living, sometimes to the dead ; to the living there are many ways of doing it, according to the several kinds of the trust ; sometimes a trust is more general, like that of Potiphar to Joseph, GEN. xxxix. 4, a man commits to another all that he hath, and thus guardians of children, and sometimes stewards, are intrusted. Sometimes again it is more limited, and restrained to some one special thing ; a man intrusts another to bargain or deal for him in such a particular, or he puts some one thing into his hands, to manage and dispose : thus among servants is it usual for one to be intrusted with one part of the master's goods, and another with another part of them. Now in all these and the like cases, whosoever acts not for him that intrusts him, with the same faithfulness that he would for himself, but shall either carelessly lose or prodigally embezzle the things committed to him, or else convert them to his own use, he is guilty of this great sin, of betraying a trust to the living. In like manner, he that being intrusted with the execution of a dead man's testament, acts not according to the known intention of the dead man, but enriches himself by what is assigned to others, he is guilty of this sin, in respect of the dead, which is so much the greater, by how much the dead hath no means of remedy and redress, as the living may have. It is a kind of robbing of graves, which is a theft of which men naturally have such a horror, that he must be a very hardened thief that can attempt it. But either of these frauds are made yet more heinous, when either God, or the poor, are immediately concerned in it, that is, when any thing is committed to a man for the uses either of piety or charity ; this adds sacrilege to both the fraud and the treachery, and so gives him title to all those curses that attend those several sins,

which are so heavy, that he that for the present gain will adventure on them, makes as ill, nay, a much worse bargain than Gehazi, 2 Kings v. 27, who, by getting the raiment of Naaman, got his leprosy too.

4. The second sort of fraud is in matters of traffic and bargain, wherein there may be deceit both **IN TRAFFIC.** in the seller and buyer; that of the seller is commonly either in concealing the faults of the commodity, or else in over-rating it.

5. The ways of concealing its faults are ordinarily these, **THE SELLER'S CONCEALING THE FAULTS OF HIS WARE.** either first by denying that it hath any such fault, nay, perhaps commanding it for the direct contrary quality, and this is down-right lying, and so adds that sin to the other, and if that lie be confirmed by an oath, as

it is too usually, then the yet greater guilt of perjury comes in also; and then what a heap of sins is here gathered together? abundantly enough to sink a poor soul to destruction: and all this only to screw a little more money out of his neighbour's pocket, and that sometimes so very little, that it is a miracle that any man that thinks he has a soul, can set it at so miserable a contemptible price. A second means of concealing, is by using some art to the thing, to make it look fair, and to hide the faults of it, and this is acting a lie, though it be not speaking one, which amounts to the same thing, and has surely in this case as much of the intention of cheating and defrauding, as the most impudent forswearing can have. A third means, is the picking out ignorant chapmen; this is, I believe, an art too well known among tradesmen, who will not bring out their faulty wares to men of skill, but keep them to put off to such, whose unskilfulness may make them passable with them; and this is still the same deceit with the former; for it all tends to the same end, the cozening and defrauding of the chapmen, and then it is not much odds, whether I make use of my own art, or his weakness for the purpose. This is certain, he that will do justly, must let his chapman know what he buys; and if his own skill enable him not to judge (nay, if he do not actually find out the fault), thou art bound to tell it him, otherwise thou makest him pay for somewhat which is not there, he presuming there is that good quality in it, which thou knowest is not, and therefore thou mayest as honestly take his money for some goods of another man's, which thou knowest thou canst

never put into his possession, which I suppose no man will deny to be an arrant cheat. To this head of concealment may be referred that deceit of false weights and measures, for that is the concealing from the buyer a defect in the quantity, as the other was in the quality of the commodity, and is again the making him pay for what he hath not. This sort of fraud is pointed at particularly by Solomon. Prov. xi. 1, with this note upon it, that *it is an abomination to the Lord.*

6. The second part of fraud in the seller lies in over-rating the commodity ; though he have not disguised or concealed the faults of it, and so have dealt fairly in that respect, yet if he set an unreasonable price upon it, he defrauds the buyer ; I call that an unreasonable price, which exceeds the true worth of the thing, considered with those moderate gains, which all tradesmen are presumed to be allowed in the sale. Whatever is beyond this must in all likelihood be fetched in by some of these ways : as first, by taking advantage of the buyer's ignorance in the value of the thing which is the same with doing it in the goodness, which hath already been showed to be a deceit ; or, secondly by taking advantage of his necessity. Thou findest a man hath present and urgent need of such a thing, and therefore takest this opportunity to set the dice upon him ; but this is that very sin of Extortion and Oppression, spoken of before, for it is sure, nothing can justly raise the price of any thing, but either its becoming dearer to thee, or its being some way better in itself ; but the necessity of thy brother causes neither of these ; his nakedness doth not make the clothes thou sellest him stand thee in ever the more, neither doth it make them any way better ; and therefore to rate them ever the higher is to change the way of trading, and sell even the wants and necessities of thy neighbour, which sure is a very unlawful vocation. Or thirdly, it may be by taking advantage of the indiscretion of the chapman. A man, perhaps earnestly fancies such a thing, and then suffers that fancy so to over-rule his reason, that he resolves to have it upon any terms. If thou findest this in him, and thereupon raisest thy rate, this is to make him buy his folly, which is of all others the dearest purchase ; it is sure his fancy adds nothing to the real value, no more than his necessity did in the former case, and therefore should not add to the price. He therefore that

HIS OVER-  
RATING IT

will deal justly in the business of selling, must not catch at all advantages which the temper of his chapman may give, but consider soberly, what the thing is worth, and what he would afford it for to another, of whom he had no such advantage, and accordingly rate it to him at no higher a price.

7. On the Buyer's part there are not ordinarily so many

FRAUD IN THE opportunities of fraud; yet it is possible a  
BUYER. man may sometimes happen to sell some-  
what, the worth whereof he is not ac-

quainted with, and then it will be as unjust for the buyer to make gain by his ignorance, as in the other case it was for the seller: but that which often falls out, is the case of necessity, which may as probably fall on the seller's side, as the buyer's. A man's wants compel him to sell, and permit him not to stay to make the best bargain, but force him to take the first offer, and here for the buyer to grate upon him, because he sees him in that strait, is the same fault which I before showed it to be in the seller.

8. In this whole business of Traffic there are so many

MANY TEMPTA opportunities of deceit, that a man had  
TIONS TO DE- need fence himself with a very firm reso-  
CEIT IN TRAF- lution, nay, love of justice, or he will be  
FIC. in danger to fall under temptation; for as  
the wise man speaks, Ecclus. xxvii. 2,

*As a nail sticks fast between the joinings of the stones*, so doth sin stick close between buying and selling; it is so interwoven with all trades, so mixt with the very first principles and grounds of them, that it is taught together with them, and so becomes part of the art; so that he is now-a-days scarce thought fit to manage a trade, that wants it, while he that hath most of this black art of defrauding, applauds and hugs himself, nay, perhaps boasts to others, how he hath over-reached his neighbour.

What an intolerable shame is this, that we Christians,

THE COMMON- who are, by the precepts of our Master,  
NESS OF INJUS- set to those higher duties of charity, should,  
TICE A RE- instead of practising them, quite unlearn  
PROACH TO those common rules of justice, which mere  
CHRISTIANITY. nature teaches. For, I think I may say,  
there are none of those several branches of  
injustice towards the possessions of our neighbour, which  
would not be adjudged to be so by any sober heathen; so  
that, as St. Paul tells those of the circumcision, that the

name of God was blasphemed among the Gentiles, by that unagreeableness that was betwixt their practice and their law, ROM. ii. 24. So now may it be said of us, that the name of Christ is blasphemed among the Turks and Heathens, by the vile and scandalous lives of us who call ourselves Christians, and particularly in this sin of injustice ; for shame let us at last endeavour to wipe off this reproach from our profession, by leaving these practices ; to which methinks this one single consideration should be enough to persuade us.

9. Yet, besides this, there want not other ; among which, one there is of such a nature, as may prevail with the arrantest worldling, and that is, that this course doth not really tend to the enriching of him ; there is a secret curse goes along with it, which like a canker eats out all the benefit was expected from it. This no man can doubt that believes the Scripture, where there are multitudes of texts to this purpose, thus, PROV. xxii. 16, *He that oppresseth the poor to increase his riches shall surely come to want.* So HABBAK. ii. 16, *Woe to him that increaseth that which is not his ! how long ? And he that ladeth himself with thick clay ! shall they not rise up suddenly that shall bite thee, and awake, that shall vex thee ? And thou shalt be for booties to them.* This is commonly the fortune of those that spoil and deceive others, they at last meet with some that do the like to them. But the place in ZECHARIAH is most full to this purpose, chap. v. where, under the sign of a flying roll, is signified the curse that goes forth against this sin, verse 4 : *I will bring it forth, saith the Lord of hosts, and it shall enter into the house of the thief, and into the house of him that sweareth falsely by my name, and it shall consume it with the timber thereof, and with the stones thereof.* Where, you see, theft and perjury are two sins against which this curse is aimed (and they two often go together in the matter of defrauding) ; and the nature of this curse is, to consume the house, to make an utter destruction of all that belongs to him that is guilty of either of these sins. Thus, whilst thou art a ravening after thy neighbour's goods or house, thou art but gathering fuel to burn thine own. And the effect of these threatenings of God we daily see in the strange improsperousness of ill-gotten estates, which every man is apt enough to observe in

IT IS NOT THE  
WAY TO ENRICH  
A MAN.

other men's cases : he that sees his neighbour decline in his estate, can presently call to mind, This was gotten by oppression or deceit ; yet so sottish are we, so bewitched with the love of gain, that he that makes this observation can seldom turn it to his own use, is nevertheless greedy, or unjust himself for that vengeance he discerns upon others.

**10. But alas ! if thou couldst be sure that thy unjust possessions should not be torn from thee, yet when thou rememberest how dear thou must pay for them in another world, thou hast little reason to brag of thy prize. Thou**

**IT RUINS THE SOUL ETERNAL- LY.**  
thinkest thou hast been very cunning, when thou hast overreached thy brother ; but God knows all the while there is another over-reaching thee, and cheating thee of what is infinitely more precious, even thy Soul ; the Devil herein deals with thee as fishers use to do ; those that will catch a great fish, will bait the hook with a less, and so the great one, coming with greediness to devour that, is himself taken. So thou that art gaping to swallow up thy poor brother, art thyself made a prey to that great devourer. And alas ! what will it ease thee in hell that thou hast left wealth behind thee upon earth, when thou shalt there want that, which the meanest beggar here enjoys, even a drop of water to cool thy tongue ? Consider this, and from henceforth resolve to employ all that pains and diligence thou hast used to deceive others, in rescuing thyself from the frauds of the grand deceiver.

**11. To this purpose it is absolutely necessary that thou make Restitution to all whom thou hast wronged : for as long as thou keepest any thing of the unjust gain, it is as it were an earnest-penny from the devil, which gives**

**THE NECESSITY OF RESTITU- TION.**  
him full right to thy soul. But, perhaps, it may be said, It will not in all cases be possible to make Restitution to the wronged party, peradventure he may be dead ; in that case then make it to his heirs, to whom his right descends. But it may further be objected, that he that hath long gone on in a course of fraud, may have injured many that he cannot now remember, and many that he has no means of finding out : this case all I can advise is this : first, to be as diligent as is possible, both in recalling to mind who they were, and endeavouring to find them out : and when, after all thy care, that proves impossible, let thy Restitutions be made to the

poor ; and that they may not be made by halves, be as careful as thou canst to reckon every the least might of unjust gain : but when that cannot exactly be done, as it is sure it cannot by those who have multiplied the acts of fraud, yet even there let them make some general measures whereby to proportion their Restitution: as, for example, a tradesman that cannot remember how much he hath cheated in every single parcel, yet may possibly guess in the gross whether he have unusually over-reached to the value of a third or a fourth part of the wares, and then what proportion soever he thinks he has so defrauded, the same proportion let him now give out of that estate he hath raised by his trade : but herein it concerns every man to deal uprightly, as in the presence of God, and not to make advantage of his own forgetfulness, to the cutting short of the Restitution, but rather go on the other hand, and be sure rather to give too much than too little. If he do happen to give somewhat over, he need not grudge the charge of such a sin-offering, and it is sure he will not if he do heartily desire an atonement. Many other difficulties there may be in this business of Restitution, which will not be foreseen, and so cannot now be particularly spoke to; but the more of those there are, the greater horror ought men to have of running into the sin of injustice, which it will be so difficult if not impossible for them to repair, and the more careful ought they to be to mortify that which is the root of all injustice, to wit, Covetousness.

---

## SUNDAY XIII.

Of false Reports, false Witness, Slanders, Whisperings. Of Scoffing for Infirmities, Calamities, Sins, &c. Of Positive Justice, Truth, Of Lying. Of Envy and Detraction. Of Gratitude, &c.

THE fourth branch of Negative Justice concerns the Credit of our Neighbours, which we are not to lessen or impair by any means, particularly not by false reports. Of false reports there may be two sorts; the one is when a man says something of his neighbour, which he directly knows to be false; the other, when possibly he has some slight surmise or jealousy of the thing, but that upon such weak grounds, that it is as likely to be

false as true. In either of these cases there is a great guilt lies upon the reporter. That there doth so in the first of them nobody will doubt, every one acknowledging that it is the greatest baseness to invent a lie of another; but there is as little reason to question the other, for he that reports a thing as a truth, which is but uncertain, is a liar also: or if he do not report it as a certainty, but only as a probability, yet then, though he be not guilty of the lie, yet he is of the injustice of robbing his neighbour of his credit; for there is such an aptness in men to believe ill of others, that any the lightest jealousy will, if once it be spread abroad, serve for that purpose; and sure it is a most horrible injustice upon every slight surmise and fancy to hazard the bringing so great an evil upon another, especially when it is considered, that those surmises commonly spring rather from some sensoriousness, peevishness, or malice in the surmiser, than from any real fault in the person so suspected.

2. The manner of spreading these false reports of both **FALSE WITNESS.** kinds is not always the same; sometimes more close and private: the open is many times by false witness before the courts of justice: and this not only hurts a man in his credit, but in other respects also: it is the delivering him up to the punishment of the law, and, according to the nature of the crime pretended, does him more or less mischief; but if it be of the highest kind, it may concern his life, as we see it did in Nabol's case, 1 KINGS xxi. How great and crying a sin it is in this respect, as also in that of the purjury, you may learn from what hath been said of both those sins. I am now to consider it only as it touches the credit, and to that it is a most grievous wound, thus to have a crime publicly witnessed against one, and such as is scarce curable by any thing that can afterwards be done to clear him; and, therefore, whoever is guilty of this doth a most outrageous injustice to his neighbour. This is that which is expressly forbidden in the ninth Commandment, and was by God appointed to be punished by the inflicting of the very same suffering upon him, which his false testimony aimed to bring upon the other, DEUT. xix. 19.

3. The second open way of spreading these reports, is by **PUBLIC SLANDERS.** a public and common declaring of them; though not before the magistrate, as in the other case, yet in all companies, and before

such as are likely to carry it farther, and this is usually done with bitter railings and reproaches, it being an ordinary art of slanderers, to revile those whom they slander, that so by the sharpness of the accusation, they may have the greater impression on the minds of the hearers. This, both in respect of the slander and the railing, is a high injury, and both of them, such as debar the committers from heaven; thus, PSALM xv., where the upright man is described, that shall have his part there, this is one special thing, verse 3, *That he slandereth not his neighbour.* And for railing, the apostle in several places reckons it amongst those works of the flesh, which are to shut men out both from the church here by excommunication, as you may see 1 COR. xv. 11, and from the kingdom of God hereafter, as it is, 1 COR. vi. 10.

4. The other more close and private way of spreading such reports, is that of the Whisperer, he WHISPERING. that goes about from one to another and privately vents his slanders, not out of an intent by that means to make them less public, but rather more; this trick of delivering them by way of secret, being the way to make them both more believed, and more spoken of too; for he that receives such a tale as a secret from one, thinks to please somebody else, by delivering it as a secret to him also; and so it passes from one hand to another, till at last it spread over a whole town. This sort of slanderer is of all others the most dangerous, for he works in the dark, ties all he speaks to, not to own him as the author; so that whereas in the more public accusations, the party may have some means of clearing himself and detecting his accuser, here he shall have no possibility of that, the slander, like a secret poison, works incurable effects, before ever the man discern it. This sin of whispering, is by St. Paul mentioned among those great crimes, which are the effects of a reprobate mind, ROM. i. 29. It is indeed one of the most incurable wounds of this sword of the tongue: the very bane and pest of human society; and that which not only robs single persons of their good names, but oftentimes whole families, nay, public societies of men of their peace; what ruins, what confusions, hath this one sin wrought in the world? It is Solomon's observation, PROV. xvi. 28, that a *whisperer separateth chief friends;* and sure one may truly say of tongues thus employed, that they are *set on fire of hell,* as St. James saith, chap. iii. 6.

5. This is such a guilt, that we are to beware of all the degrees of approach to it, of which there are several steps ; the first is the giving ear to, and cherishing of those that come with slanders, for they that entertain and receive

them, encourage them in the practice ; for as our common proverb says, If there were no receivers, there would be no thief ; so if there were none that would give an ear to tales, there would be no talebearers. A second step is, the giving too easy credit to them, for this helps them to attain part of their end. They desire to get a general ill opinion of such a man, but the way of doing it, must be by causing it first, in particular men ; and if thou suffer them to do it in thee, they have so far prospered in their aim. And for thy own part thou dost a great injustice to thy neighbour, to believe ill of him without a just ground, which the accusation of such a person certainly is not. A third step is the reporting to others what is thus told thee ; by which thou makest thyself directly a party in the slander, and after thou hast unjustly withdrawn from thy neighbour thy own good opinion, endeavourest to rob him also of that of others. This is very little below the guilt of the first whisperer, and tends as much to the ruin of our neighbour's credit. And these several degrees have so close a dependence one upon another, that it will be very hard for him that allows himself the first, to escape the other ; and indeed he that can take delight to hear his neighbour defamed, may well be presumed of so malicious a humour, that it is not likely he should stick at spreading the slander. He therefore, that will preserve his innocence in this matter, must never, in the least degree, cherish or countenance any that brings these false reports. And it is not less necessary to his peace, than to his innocence ; for he that once entertains them, must never expect quiet, but shall be continually incited and stirred up, even against his nearest and dearest relations ; so that this whisperer and slanderer is to be looked on by all as a common enemy, he being so as well to those to whom, as of whom he speaks.

6. But besides this grosser way of slandering, there is another, whereby we may impair and lessen the credit of our neighbour, and that is by despising and scoffing. contempt and despising, one common effect whereof is scoffing, and deriding him. This is very inju-

rious to a man's reputation. For the generality of men do rather take up opinions upon trust, than judgment; and therefore if they see a man despised and scorned, they will be apt to do the like. But besides this effect of it, there is a present injustice in the very act of despising and scorning others. There are ordinarily but three things, which are made the occasions of it, (unless it be with such, with whom virtue and godliness are made the most reproachful things, and such despising is not only an injury to our neighbour, but even to God himself, for whose sake it is that he is so despised) those three are first, the infirmities, secondly, the calamities, thirdly, the sins of a man, and each of these are very far from being ground of our triumphing over him.

7. First, for infirmities, be they either of body or mind, the deformity and unhandsomeness of the one, or the weakness and folly of the other, FOR INFIRMI-  
they are things out of his power to help, TIES.  
they are not his faults, but the wise dispensations of the great Creator, who bestows the excellencies of body and mind as he pleases; and therefore to scorn a man because he hath them not, is in effect to reproach God who gave them not to him.

8. So also for the calamities and miseries that befall a man, be it want or sickness, or whatever else, FOR CALAMI-  
these also come by the providence of God, TIES.  
who raiseth up and pulleth down, as seems good to him, and it belongs not to us to judge, what are the motives to him to do so, as many do, who upon any affliction that befalls another, are presently concluding, that sure it is some extraordinary guilt, which pulls this upon him, though they have no particular to lay to his charge. This rash judgment our Saviour reprobates in the Jews, LUKE xiii. where on occasion of the extraordinary sufferings of the Galileans, he asks them, verse 2, 3, *Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things? I tell you, nay, but except you repent, ye shall all likewise perish.* When we see God's hand heavy upon others, it is no part of our business to judge them, but ourselves, and by repentance to prevent what our own sins have deserved. But to reproach, and revile any that are in affliction, is that barbarous cruelty, taken notice of by the Psalmist, as the height of wickedness, PSALM lxix. 26, *They persecute him whom thou hast smitten, and they talk to*

*the grief of those whom thou hast wounded.* In all the miseries of others, compassion becomes a debt to them ; how unjust are they then that, instead of paying them that debt, afflict them with scorn and reproach ?

9. Nay, the very sins of men, though, as they have more of their wills in them, they may seem FOR SINS. more to deserve reproach, yet certainly they also oblige us to the former duty of compassion, and that in the highest degree, as being the things which, of all others, make a man the most miserable. In all these cases, if we consider how subject we are to the like ourselves, and that it is only God's mercy to us, by which we are preserved from the worst that any man else is under, it will surely better become us to look up to him with thankfulness, than down on them with contempt and despising. Thus you see the direct injustice of scorning and contemning our brethren, to which, when that other is added, which naturally follows, as a consequent of this, to wit, the begetting the like contempt in others, there can sure be no doubt of its being a great and horrible injustice to our neighbour in respect of his credit.

10. Now how great the injury of destroying a man's credit is, may be measured by these two DESTROYING things ; first, the value of the thing he is THE CREDIT A robbed of ; and secondly, the difficulty of GREAT INJURY, making reparations. For the first, it is commonly known, that a man's good name is a thing he holds most precious, oftentimes dearer than his life, as we see by the hazards men sometimes run to preserve even a mistaken reputation ; but, it is sure, it is that which hath even by sober men been esteemed one of the greatest happinesses of life : and to some sort of men, such especially as subsist by dealings in the world, it is so necessary, that it may well be reckoned as the means of their livelihood, and then sure it is no slight matter to rob a man of what is thus valuable to him.

11. Secondly, the difficulty of making reparations increaseth the injury ; and that is such in AND IRREPARA- this case of defamation, that I may rather BLE. call it an impossibility, than a difficulty. For when men are possessed of an ill opinion of a person, it is no easy matter to work it out : so that the slanderer is herein like a young conjurer, that raises a devil he knows

not how to lay again. Nay, suppose men were generally as willing to lay down ill conceits of their neighbours as they are to take them up, how is it possible for him that makes even the most public recantation of his slander, to be sure that every man that hath come to the hearing of the one shall do so of the other also ? And if there be but one person that doth not, (as probably there will be many,) then is the reparation still short of the injury.

12. This consideration is very fit to make men afraid of doing this wrong to their neighbour ; but let it not be made use of to excuse those that have already done the wrong from endeavouring to make the best reparations they can ; for though it is odds, it will not equal the injury, yet let them however do what they are able towards it. And this is

YET EVERY  
GUILTY PERSON  
MUST DO ALL  
HE CAN TO RE-  
PAIR THE IN-  
JURY.

so necessary towards the obtaining pardon of the sin, that none must expect the one, that do not perform the other. Whosoever, therefore, sets himself to repent of his faults of this kind, must, by all prudent means, endeavour to restore his neighbour to that degree of credit he hath deprived him of ; and if that be not to be done without bringing the shame upon himself, of confessing publicly the slander, he must rather submit to that, than be wanting to this necessary part of justice, which he owes to the wronged party.

13. Thus I have gone through these four branches of Negative Justice to our Neighbour ; wherein we must yet further observe, that this justice binds us, not only in respect of our words and actions, but of our very thoughts and affections

JUSTICE IN THE  
THOUGHTS.

also ; we are not only forbid to hurt, but to hate ; not only restrained from bringing any of these evils forementioned upon him, but we must not so much as wish them before, nor delight in them after, they are befallen him : we must take no pleasure either in the sin of his soul, or hurt of his body : we must not envy him any good thing he enjoys, nor so much as wish to possess ourselves of it ; neither will it suffice us that we so bridle our tongue, that we neither slander nor revile, if we have that malice in our hearts which makes us wish his discredit ; or rejoice, when we find it procured, though we have no hand in the procuring it. This is the peculiar property of God's Laws, that they reach to

the heart: whereas, men's can extend only to the words and actions; and the reason is clear, because he is the only Law-giver that can see what is in the heart; therefore, if there were the perfectest innocency in our tongue and hands, yet if there be not this purity of heart, it will never serve to acquit us before Him. The counsel, therefore, of Solomon is excellent, PROV. iv. 23, *Keep thy heart with all diligence, for out of it are the issues of life.* Let us strictly guard that, so that no malicious, unjust thought enter there; and that not only as it may be the means of betraying us to the grosser act, but also as it is in itself such a pollution in God's sight, as will unfit us for the blessed vision of God, whom none but the pure in heart have promise of seeing, MATT. v. 8, *Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God.*

14. I come now to speak of the Positive part of Justice, which is the yielding to every man that POSITIVE JUSTICE. which by any kind of right he may challenge from us. Of these dues there are some that are general to all mankind, others that are restrained within some certain conditions and qualities of men, and become due only by virtue of those qualifications.

15. Of the first sort, that is, those that are due to all men, SPEAKING we may reckon first, the speaking Truth, TRUTH A DUE which is a common debt we owe to all mankind; speech is given us as the instrument TO ALL MEN. of intercourse and society one with another, the means of discovering the mind, which otherwise lies hid and concealed, so that, were it not for this, our conversations would be but the same as of beasts. Now this being intended for the good and advantage of mankind, it is a due to it, that it be used to that purpose; but he that lies is so far from paying that debt, that on the contrary he makes his speech the means of injuring and deceiving him he speaks to.

16. There might much be said to show the several sorts LYING EXPRESS- of obligations we lie under to speak truth to all men; but supposing I write to Chris- LY FORBIDDEN tians, I need not insist upon any other than IN SCRIPTURE. the commands we have of it in Scripture; thus, EPH. iv. 25, the Apostle commands, that, *putting away lying, they speak every man truth with his neighbour:* and again, COL. iii. 9, *Lie not one to another:* and, PROV. vi. 17, a lying tongue is mentioned as one of those things

that are abominations to the Lord. Yea, so much doth he hate a lie, that it is not the most pious and religious end that can reconcile him to it; the man that lies, though in a zeal to God's glory, shall yet be judged as a sinner, ROM. iii. 7. What shall then become of those multitudes of men that lie on quite other ends? Some out of malice, to mischief others: some out of covetousness, to defraud their neighbours: some out of pride, to set themselves out; and some out of fear, to avoid danger, or hide a fault. But of a yet stranger sort than all these, are those that do it without any discernible temptation, that will tell lies by way of story, take pleasure in telling incredible things, from which themselves reap nothing, but the reputation of impertinent liars.

17. Among these divers kinds of falsehood, Truth is become such a rarity among us, that it is a most difficult matter to find such a man as David describes, PSALM xv. 2, *That speaketh the truth from his heart.* Men have so glibbed their tongues to lying that they do it familiarly upon any or no occasion, never thinking that they are observed either by God or man. But they are extremely deceived in both; for there is scarce any sin (that is at all endeavoured to be hid) which is more discernible even to men: they that have a custom of lying, seldom fail (be their memory never so good) at some time or other to betray themselves; and when they do, there is no sort of sin meets with greater scorn and reproach: a liar being by all accounted a title of the greatest infamy and shame. But as for God, it is madness to hope that all their arts can disguise them from him, who needs none of those casual ways of discovery which men do, but sees the heart, and so knows at the very instant of speaking the falsehood of what is said: and then, by his Title of the God of Truth, is tied, not only to hate, but punish it: and, accordingly, you see, REV. xxii. that the liars are in the number of those that are shut out of the new Jerusalem; and not only so, but also have their *part in the lake that burneth with fire and brimstone.* If, therefore, thou be not of the humour of that unjust judge Christ speaks of, LUKE xviii. 2, who *neither feared God nor regarded man,* thou must resolve on this part of justice, the putting away lying, which is abhorred by both.

THE GREAT  
COMMONNESS  
AND FOLLY OF  
THIS SIN.

18. A second thing we owe to all is, Humanity and

**COURTEOUS BE-  
HAVIOUR A DUE  
TO ALL MEN.**

Courtesy of Behaviour, contrary to that sullen churlishness we find spoken of in Nabal, who was of such a temper, *that a man could not speak to him*, 1 SAM. xxv.

17. There is sure so much of respect due to the very nature of mankind, that no accidental advantage of wealth or honour which one man hath above another, can acquit him from that debt to it, even in the person of the meanest; and therefore that crabbed and harsh behaviour to any that bears but the form of a man, is an injustice to that nature he partakes of. And when we consider how much that nature is dignified by the Son of God his taking it upon him, the obligation to reverence it is yet greater, and consequently the sin of thus contemning it.

19. This is the common guilt of all proud and haughty persons, who are so busy in admiring themselves, that they overlook all that is valuable in others, and so think they owe not so much as common civility to other

**NOT PAID BY  
THE PROUD  
MAN.**  
men, whilst they set up themselves, as Nebuchadnezzar did his image, *to be worshipped of all*. This is sure very contrary to what the Apostle exhorts, ROM. xii. 10, *In honour prefer one another*; and again, PHIL. ii. 4, *Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others*; and let such remember the sentence of our blessed Saviour, LUKE xiv. 11, *He that exalteth himself shall be abased, and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted*, which we often find made good to us, in the strange downfalls of proud men. And it is no wonder, for this sin makes both God and men our enemies; God, as the scripture every where testifies, abhors it, and all that are guilty of it, and men are by means of it used so contemptuously and unkindly by us, that they are by nothing more provoked against us; and then whom God and man thus resist, who shall secure and uphold?

20. A third thing we owe to all, is Meekness; that is, **MEEKNESS A  
DUE TO ALL  
MEN.** such a patience and gentleness towards all, as may bridle that mad passion of anger, which is not only very uneasy to ourselves,

as hath already been showed, but also very mischievous to our neighbours, as the many outrages, that are oft committed in it, do abundantly testify. That this

duty of meekness is to be extended to all men, there is no doubt; for the Apostle in express words commands it, 1 THES. v. 14, *Be patient towards all men*, and that, it should seem, in spite of all provocation to the contrary, for the very next words are, *See that none render evil for evil, or railing for railing*; and Timothy is commanded to exercise this meekness, even towards them who oppose themselves against the doctrine of the Gospel, 2 TIM. ii. 25, which was a case, wherein some heat would probably have been allowed, if it might have been in any.

21. This virtue of meekness is so necessary to the preserving the peace of the world, that it is no wonder that Christ, who came to plant BRAWLING VERY  
INSUFFERABLE. peace among men, should enjoin meekness to all. I am sure the contrary effects of rage and anger are every where discernible; it breeds disquiet in kingdoms, in neighbourhoods, in families, and even between the nearest relations; it is such a humour, that Solomon warns us never to enter a friendship with a man that is of it, PROV. xxii. 24, *Make no friendship with an angry man, and with a furious man thou shalt not go.* It makes a man unfit to be either friend or companion, and indeed, makes one insufferable to all that have to do with him, as we are again taught by Solomon, PROV. xxi. 19, where he prefers the *dwelling in a wilderness, rather than with a contentious and angry woman;* and yet a woman has ordinarily only that one weapon of the tongue to offend with. Indeed to any that have not the same unquietness of humour, there can scarce be a greater uneasiness, than to converse with those that have it, though it never proceed farther than words. How great this sin is, we may judge by what our Saviour says of it, MATT. v. where there are several degrees of punishment allotted to several degrees of it; but alas! we daily outgo that which he there sets as the highest step of this sin; the calling, *Thou fool,* is a modest sort of reviling, compared with those multitudes of bitter reproaches we use in our rages.

22. Nay, we often go yet higher, reproaches serve not our turn, but we must curse too. How common is it to hear men use the horrid-IT LEADS TO  
THAT GREAT SIN  
OF CURSING. est execrations and cursings upon every the slightest cause of displeasure? Nay, perhaps without any cause at all; so utterly have we forgot the

rule of the Apostle, ROM. xii. 14, *Bless and curse not ; Yea, the precept of our blessed Saviour himself, MATT. v. 44, Pray for those that despitefully use you.* Christ bids us pray for those who do us all injury, and we are often cursing those who do us none. This is a kind of saying our prayers backward indeed, which is said to be part of the ceremony the devil uses at the making of a witch, and we have in this case also reason to look on it as a means of bringing us into acquaintance and league with that accursed spirit here, and to a perpetual abiding with him hereafter. It is the language of Hell, which can never fit us to be citizens of the New Jerusalem, but marks us out for inhabitants of that land of darkness. I conclude this with the advice of the Apostle, EPHES. iv. 31, *Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking be put away from you, with all malice.*

23. Having spoken thus far of those common dues, wherein all men are concerned and have a right,

**PARTICULAR DUES.** I am now to proceed to those other sorts

of dues, which belong to particular persons, by virtue of some special qualification. These qualifications may be of three kinds, that of excellency, that of want, and that of relation.

24. By that of excellency, I mean any extraordinary gifts or endowments of a person ; such as wisdom, learning, and the like, but especially grace. These being the singular gifts of God, have a great value and respect due to them, wheresoever they are to be found ;

A RESPECT DUE TO MEN OF EXTRAORDINARY GIFTS. and this we must readily pay by a willing and glad acknowledgment of those his gifts in any he has bestowed them on, and bearing them a reverence and respect, answerable thereto, and not out of an overweening of our own excellencies, despise and undervalue those of others, as they do who will yield nothing to be reason, but what themselves speak, nor any thing piety, but what agrees with their own practice.

25. Also we must not envy or grudge that they have those gifts, for that is not only an injustice to them, WE ARE NOT TO ENVY THEM. but injurious also to God who gave them, as it is at large set forth in the parable of the labourers, MATT. xx. where he asks them who grumbled at the master's bounty to others, *Is it not lawful for me to*

*do what I will with my own? is thine eye evil because mine is good?* This envying at God's goodness to others, is in effect, a murmuring against God, who thus disposes it; neither can there be a greater and more direct opposition against him, than for me to hate and wish ill to a man, for no other reason, but because God has loved and done well to him. And then in respect of the man, it is the most unreasonable thing in the world, to love him the less, merely because he has those good qualities, for which I ought to love him more.

26. Neither must we detract from the excellencies of others, we must not seek to eclipse or darkened them by denying either the kinds or degrees of them, by that means to take off that esteem which is due to them. This sin of detraction is generally the effect of the former, of envy; he that envies a man's worth, will be apt to do all he can to lessen it in the opinions of others, and to that purpose will either speak slightly of his excellencies; or if they be so apparent, that he knows not how to cloud them, he will try if he can by reporting some either real or feigned infirmity of his, take off from the value of the other, and so by casting in some dead flies, as the Wise man speaks, ECCLES; x. 1; strive to corrupt the savour of the ointment. This is a great injustice, and directly contrary to that duty we owe, of acknowledging and reverencing the gifts of God in our brethren.

27. And both those sins of envy and detraction do usually prove as great follies, as wickedness; the envy constantly brings pain and torment to a man's self, whereas if he could but cheerfully and gladly look on those good things of another's, he could never fail to be the better for them himself; the very pleasure of seeing them would be some advantage to him: but besides that, those gifts of his brother may be many ways helpful to him; his wisdom and learning may give him instruction; his piety and virtue, example, &c. But all this the envious man loseth, and hath nothing in exchange for it, but a continual fretting, and gnawing of heart.

28. And then for detraction, that can hardly be so managed, but it will be found out; he that is still putting in caveats against men's good thoughts of others, will quickly discover him.

NOR DETRACT  
FROM THEM.

THE FOLLY OF  
BOTH THOSE  
SINS.

self to do it out of envy, and then that will be sure to lessen their esteem of himself, but not of those he envies, it being a sort of bearing testimony to those excellencies, that he thinks them worth the envying.

**29. What hath been said of the value and respect due to those excellencies of the mind, may, in a lower degree be applied to the outward advantages of honour, greatness, and the like. These though they are not of equal value with the former (and such, which no man is to prize himself,) yet in regard that these degrees and distinctions of men are by God's wise providence disposed for the better ordering of the world, there is such a civil respect due to those, to whom God hath dispensed them, as may best preserve that order, for which they were intended. Therefore all inferiors are to behave themselves to their superiors with modesty and respect, and not by a rude boldness confound that order which it hath pleased God to set in the world, but according as our Church Catechism teaches, *Order themselves lowly and reverently to all their betters.* And here the former caution against envy comes in most seasonably ; these outward advantages being things of which generally men have more taste than of the other ; and, therefore, will be more apt to envy and repine to see others exceed them therein ; to this, therefore, all the former considerations against envy will be very proper, and the more necessary to be made use of, by how much the temptation is in this case to most minds the greater.**

**30. The second qualification is that of want ; whoever is in distress for any thing wherewith I can supply him, that distress of his makes it a duty in me so to supply him, and this in all kinds of wants. Now the ground of its being a duty is, that God hath given men abilities not only for their own use, but for their advantage and benefit of others ; and, therefore, what is thus given for their use, becomes a debt to them, whenever their need requires it. Thus he that is ignorant and wants knowledge, is to be instructed by him that hath it, and this is one special end, why that knowledge is given him ; *The tongue of the learned is given to speak a word in season,* ISAIAH 1. 4. He that is in sadness and affliction, is to be comforted by him**

**DUES TO THOSE  
THAT ARE IN  
ANY SORT OF  
WANT.**

that is himself in cheerfulness. This we see St Paul makes the end of God's comforting him, that he *might be able to comfort them that are in any trouble*, 2 Cor. i. 4. He that is in any course of sin, and wants reprehension and counsel, must have that want supplied to him by those who have such abilities and opportunities, as may make it likely to do good. That this is a justice we owe to our neighbour, appears plainly by that Text, LEV. xix. 17, *Thou shalt not hate thy brother in thy heart ; thou shalt in any wise reprove him, and not suffer sin upon him ;* where we are under the same obligation to reprove him, that we are not to hate him. He that lies under any slander, or unjust defamation, is to be defended and cleared by him that knows his innocence, or else he makes himself guilty of the slander, because he neglects to do that which may remove it ; and how great an injustice that of slandering our neighbour is, I have already showed.

31. Lastly, he that is in poverty and need, must be relieved by him that is in plenty ; and he is bound to it, not only in charity, but even in justice. Solomon calls it a due, PROV. iii. 27, *Withhold not good from him to whom it is due, when it is in the power of thine hand to do it :* and what that good is he explains in the very next verse : *Say not to thy neighbour, Go and come again, and to-morrow I will give, when thou hast it by thee.* It seems it is the withholding a due, so much as to defer giving to our poor neighbour. And we find God did among the Jews separate a certain portion of every man's increase to the use of the poor, a tenth every third year (which is all one with a thirtieth part every year,) DEUT. xiv. 28, 29. And this was to be paid, not as a charity, or liberality, but as a debt, they were unjust if they withheld it. And surely we have no reason to think, that Christian justice is sunk so much below the Jewish, that either nothing at all, or a less proportion is now required of us. I wish our practice were but at all answerable to our obligation in this point, and then surely we should not see so many Lazaruses lie unrelieved at our doors, they having a better right to our superfluities, than we ourselves have ; and then what is it but errant robbery to bestow that upon our vanities, nay, our sins, which should be their portion ?

32. In all the foregoing cases he that hath ability is to look

**GOD WITH-  
DRAWS THOSE  
ABILITIES  
WHICH ARE  
NOT THUS  
EMPLOYED.**

upon himself as God's steward, who hath put it into his hands to distribute to them that want ; and, therefore, not to do it, is the same injustice and fraud, that it would be in any steward to purse up that money for his private benefit which was entrusted to him for the maintenance of the family ;

and he that shall do thus hath just reason to expect the doom of the unjust steward, LUKE xvi, *to be put out of his stewardship*, to have those abilities taken from him, which he hath so unfaithfully employed. And as for all the rest, so particularly for that wealth, it is very commonly to be observed, that it is withdrawn from those that thus defraud the poor of their parts, the griping miser coming often by strange undiscernible ways to poverty ; and no wonder, he having no title to God's blessing on his heap who does not consecrate a part to him in his poor members. And, therefore, we see the Israelites before they could make that challenge of God's promise to bless them, DEUT. xxvi. 15, *Look down from thy holy habitation and bless thy people Israel, &c.* ; they were first to pay poor man tithes, verse 13, without which they could lay no claim to it. This withholding *more than is meet*, as Solomon says, PROV. xi. 24, *tends to poverty* ; and, therefore, as thou wouldest play the good husband for thyself, be careful to perform this justice according to thy ability to all that are in want.

**33. The third qualification is that of Relation, and of that there may be divers sorts, arising from divers grounds, and duties answerable to each of them. There is first a relation of a Debtor to a Creditor ; and he that stands**

**DUTIES IN  
RESPECT OF RE-  
LATION.**  
in that relation to any, whether by virtue of bargain, loan, or promise, it is his duty to pay justly what he owes, if he be able (as on the other side, if he be not, it is the Creditor's, to deal charitably and Christianly with him, and not to exact of him beyond his ability). But I need not insist on this, having already, by showing you the sin of withholding debts, informed you of this duty.

**34. There is also a relation of an obliged person to his Benefactor, that is, one that hath done him good, of what kind soever, whether spiritual or corporal ; and the duty of that person is, first thankfulness, that is, a ready and hearty acknow-**

**GRATITUDE TO  
BENEFACTORS.**

ledgment of the courtesy received: secondly, prayer for God's blessings, and rewards upon him; and thirdly, an endeavour, as opportunity and ability serves, to make returns of kindness, by doing good turns back again. This duty of gratitude to Benefactors is so generally acknowledged by all, even the most barbarous and savagest of men, that he must have put off much of his human nature that refuses to perform it. The very Publicans and Sinners, as our Saviour says, *Do good to those that do good to them.*

35. Yet how many of us fail even in this! how frequent is it to see men not only neglect to repay courtesies, but return injuries instead of **THE CONTRARY TOO COMMON.** them? It is too observable in many particulars, but in none more than in the case of advice and admonition, which is of all others the most precious part of kindness, the reallest good turn that can be done from one man to another. And, therefore, those that do this to us, should be looked on as our prime and greatest benefactors. But alas! how few are there that can find gratitude, shall I say? nay, patience for such a courtesy? Go about to admonish a man of a fault, or tell him of an error, he presently looks on you as his enemy: you are as St. Paul tells the *GALATIANS* chap. iv. 16, *Become his enemy because you tell him the truth;* such a pride there is in men's hearts, that they must not be told of any thing amiss, though it be with no other intent but that they may amend it. A strange madness this is, the same that it would be in a sick man to fly in the face of him that comes to cure him, on a fancy that he disparaged him in supposing him sick; so that we may well say with the wise man, *PROV. xii. 1, He that hateth reproof is brutish.* There cannot be in the world a more unhappy temper, for it fortifies a man in his sins; raises such mounts and bulwarks about them, that no man can come to assault them; and if we may believe Solomon, destruction will not fail to attend it, *PROV. xxix. 1, He that being often reproved, hardeneth his neck, shall suddenly be destroyed, and that without remedy.* But then again in respect of the admonisher, it is the greatest injustice, I may say, cruelty that can be; he comes in tenderness and compassion to rescue thee from danger; and to that purpose puts himself upon a very uneasy task; for such the general impatience men have to admonition, hath now made it, and

what a defeat, what a grief is it to him to find, that instead of reforming the first fault, thou art run into a second, to wit, that of causeless displeasure against him? This is one of the worst, and yet I doubt, the commonest sort of unthankfulness to Benefactors, and so a great failing in that duty we owe to that sort of relation. But, perhaps, these will be looked on as remote relations (yet it is sure they are such as challenge all that duty I have assigned to them,) I shall in the next place proceed to those relations which are by all acknowledged to be of the greatest nearness.

---

## SUNDAY XIV.

Of Duty to Magistrates, Pastors. Of the Duty of Parents to Children, &c.  
Of Children's Duty unto Parents, &c.

**THE** first of those nearer sorts of relations is that of a Parent; and here it will be necessary to consider the several sorts of Parents, according to which the duty of them is to be

DUTY TO PARENTS. measured. Those are these three, the Civil, the Spiritual, the Natural.

**2.** The Civil Parent is he whom God hath established DUTIES TO THE SUPREME MAGISTRATE. the Supreme Magistrate, who by a just right possesses the Throne in a nation. This is the common father of all those that are under his authority. The duty we owe to this Parent is first, Honour and Reverence, looking on him as upon one whom God hath stamped much of his own power and authority, and therefore paying him all honour and esteem, never daring, upon any pretence whatsoever, to *speak evil of the ruler of our people*, Acts xxiii. 5.

**3.** Secondly, paying Tribute: this is expressly commanded by the Apostle, Rom. xiii. 6, *Pay ye Tribute also, for they are God's ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.* God has set them apart as ministers for the common good of the people, and therefore it is all justice they should be maintained and supported by them. And, indeed, when it is considered what are the cares and troubles of that high calling, how

many thorns are platted in every crown, we have very little reason to envy them these dues ; and it may truly be said, there is none of their poor labouring subjects that earns their living so hardly.

4. Thirdly, we are to pray for them ; this is also expressly commanded by the Apostle, 1 TIM. ii. 2, to be done for *kings, and all that are in authority.* The businesses of that calling

PRAYERS FOR  
THEM.

are so weighty, the dangers and hazards of it so great, that they of all others need prayers for God's direction, assistance, and blessing ; and the prayers that are thus poured out for them will return into our own bosoms ; for the blessings they receive from God tend to the good of the people, to their *living a quiet and peaceable life*, as it is in the close of the verse forementioned.

5. Fourthly, we are to pay them Obedience. This is likewise strictly charged by the Apostle,

1 PET. ii. 13, *Submit yourselves to every OBEDIENCE.*

*ordinance of man for the Lord's sake, whether it be the King, as Supreme, or unto Governors, as those that are sent by him.* We owe such an obedience to the supreme power, that whoever is authorized by him, we are to submit to ; and St. Paul likewise is most full to this purpose, ROM. xiii. 1, *Let every soul be subject to the higher powers.* And again, verse 2, *Whosoever resisteth the powers, resisteth the ordinance of God.* And it is observable, that these precepts were given at a time when those powers were heathens, and cruel persecutors of Christianity ; to show us, that no pretence of the wickedness of our rulers can free us of this duty. An obedience we must pay either active or passive ; the active in the case of all lawful commands ; that is, whenever the magistrate commands something, which is not contrary to some command of God, we are then bound to act according to that command of the magistrate, to do the things he requires. But when he enjoins any thing contrary to what God hath commanded, we are not then to pay him this active obedience : we may, nay, we must, refuse thus to act, (yet here we must be very well assured that the thing is so contrary, and not pretend conscience for a cloak of stubbornness,) we are in that case to *obey God rather than man.* But even this is a season for the passive obedience, we must patiently suffer what he inflicts on us for such refusal, and not to secure ourselves, rise up against him. *For*

*who can stretch his hand against the Lord's anointed, and be guiltless?* says David to Abishai, 1 SAM. xxvi. 9, and that at a time when David was under a great persecution from Saul, nay, had also the assurance of the kingdom after him; and St. Paul's sentence in this case is most heavy, ROM. xiii. 2, *They that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.* Here is very small encouragement to any to rise up against the lawful magistrate, for though they should so far prosper here, as to secure themselves from him by this means, yet there is a King of kings from whom no power can shelter them, and this damnation in the close will prove a sad prize of their victories. What is on the other side, the duty of the magistrate to the people, will be vain to mention here, none of that rank being like to read this Treatise, and it being very useless for the people to inquire what is the duty of their Supreme, wherein the most are already much better read, than in their own: it may suffice them to know, that whatsoever his duty is, or however performed, he is accountable to none but God, and no failing of his part can warrant them to fail of theirs.

6. The second sort of Parents are the Spiritual; that is, the ministers of the word, whether such as be governors in the church or others under them, who are DUTIES TO OUR PASTORS. to perform the same offices to our souls that our natural parents do to our bodies.

Thus St. Paul tells the Corinthians, that in *Christ Jesus he had begotten them through the Gospel,* 1 COR. iv. 15; and the GALATIANS, chap. iv. 19, that he *travails in birth of them, till Christ be formed in them:* and again, 1 COR. iii. 2, *He had fed them with milk,* that is, such doctrines as were agreeable to that infant state of Christianity they were then in; but he had *stronger meat for them of full age,* HEB. v. 14. All these are the offices of a parent, and therefore they that perform them to us may well be accounted as such.

7. Our duty to these is, first, to love them, to bear them LOVE. that kindness which belongs to those who do us the greatest benefits. This is required by St. Paul, 1 THESS. v. 12: *I beseech you, brethren, mark them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you, and esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake.* The work is such as ought in all reason to procure them love, it being of the highest advantage to us.

8. Secondly, it is our duty to value and esteem them, as we see in the text now mentioned ; and surely this is most reasonable, if we consider either the nature of their work or who it is that employs them. The nature of their work is of all others the most excellent. We use to value other professions proportionably to the dignity and worth of the things they deal in. Now surely there is no merchandize of equal worth with a soul ; and this is their traffic, rescuing precious souls from perdition. And if we consider further, who it is that employs them, it yet adds to the reverence due to them. They are *Ambassadors for Christ*, 2 COR. v. 20 ; and ambassadors are by the laws of all nations to be used with a respect answerable to the quality of those that send them. Therefore Christ tells his disciples, when he sends them out to preach, *He that despiseth you despiseth me, and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me*, LUKE x. 16. It seems there is more depends on the despising of ministers than men ordinarily consider, it is the despising of God and Christ both. Let those think of this, who make it their pastime and sport to affront and deride this calling. And let those also, who dare presume to exercise the office of it, without being lawfully called to it , which is a most high presumption ; it is as if a man of his own head should go as an ambassador from his prince. The apostle says of the priests of the law, which yet are inferior to those of the Gospel, *That no man taketh this honour to himself, but he which was called of God*, HEB. v. 4. How shall then any man dare to assume this greater honour to himself that is not called to it ? Neither will it suffice to say, they have the inward call of the spirit ; for since God hath established an order in the Church, for the admitting men to this office, they that shall take it upon them without that authority, resist that ordinance, and are but of the number of those thieves and robbers, as our Saviour speaks, JOHN x., *which come not in by the door*. Beside, the sad experience of these times shows, that many who pretend most to this inward call of the spirit, are called by some other spirit than that of God, the doctrines they vent, being usually directly contrary to that word of his, on which all true doctrines must be founded. Such are to be looked on as those seducers, those false prophets, whereof we are so often warned in the Epistles of the Apostles. And whosoever countenances them, or follows them, partakes with

them in their guilt. It is recorded of Jeroboam, as a crying sin, that he made of the meanest of the people priests ; that is, such as had by God's institution no right to it : and whoever hearkens to these uncalled preachers, runs into that very sin : for without the encouragement of being followed, they would not long continue in the course, and therefore they that give them that encouragement, have much to answer for, and are certainly guilty of the sin of despising their true pastors, when they shall thus set up these false apostles against them. This is a guilt this age is too much concerned in, God in his mercy so timely convince us of it, as may put a stop to that confusion and impiety, which breaks in so fast upon us by it.

9. Thirdly, We owe to them Maintenance : but of this I  
MAINTENANCE. have spoken already in the first part of  
this book, and shall not here repeat.

Fourthly, We owe them Obedience. *Obey them*, saith the  
OBEDIENCE. *Apostle, that have the rule over you, and  
submit yourselves, for they watch for your souls*, HEB. xiii. 17. This obedience is to be paid them in spiritual things ; that is, whatsoever they out of God's word shall declare to us to be God's commands, these we are diligently to obey, remembering that it is not they but God requires it, according to that of Christ, *He that heareth you heareth me*, LUKE x. 16. And this, whether it be delivered by the way of public preaching, or private exhortation, for in both, so long as they keep them to the rule, which is God's word, they are the *Messengers of the Lord of Hosts*, MAL. ii. 7. This obedience the apostle enforceth from a double motive, one taken from their ministry, another from themselves. *They watch*, says he, *for your souls, as they that must give an account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief*. The people are by their obedience to enable their pastors to give a comfortable account of their souls ; and it is a most unkind return of all their care and labours, to be put to grieve for the ill success of them. But then in the second place, it is their own concernment also ; they may put their ministers to the discomfort of seeing all their pains cast away, but themselves are like to get little by it, that, says the Apostle, HEB. xiii. 17, *will be unprofitable for you* ; it is yourselves that will finally prove the losers by it, you lose all those glorious rewards, which are offered as the crown of this obedience ; you get nothing but an addition to

your sin and punishment; for as our Saviour tells the Pharisees, *if he had not come and spoken to them, they had not had sin*, JOHN xv. 24, that is, in comparison with what they then had; so certainly they that never had the Gospel preached to them, are much more innocent than they that have heard and resisted it. And for the punishment, what Christ told those to whom he had preached, *that it should be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon*, which were heathen cities, *than for them*, the same undoubtedly we may conclude for ourselves.

10. Lastly, we are to pray for them. This St. Paul every where requires of his spiritual children; thus EPH. vi. 19, having commanded

PRAYERS FOR  
THEM.

prayer for all saints, he adds, *And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the Gospel;* and so again, COL. iv. 3. And this remains still a duty to these spiritual fathers, to pray for such assistances of God's spirit to them, as may enable them rightly to discharge that holy calling. I shall omit to set down here, what is the duty of ministers to the people, upon the same consideration, on which I forbear to mention the duty of magistrates.

11. The third sort of Parent is the Natural, the *fathers of our flesh*, as the Apostle calls them, HEB. xii. 9. And to these we owe several

DUTIES TO OUR  
NATURAL  
PARENTS.

duties; as first, we owe them reverence and respect; we must behave ourselves towards them with all humility and observance, and must not upon any pretence of infirmity in them despise or contemn them, either in outward REVERENCE. behaviour, or so much as inwardly in our hearts. If, indeed, they have infirmities, it must be our business to cover and conceal them; like Shem and Japheth, who, while cursed Ham published and disclosed the nakedness of their father, covered it, GEN. ix. 23; and that in such a manner too, as even themselves might not behold it. We are as much as may be to keep ourselves from looking on those nakednesses of our parents, which may tempt us to think irreverently of them. This is very contrary to the practice of too many children, who do not only publish and deride the infirmities of their parents, but pretend they have those infirmities they have not; there is ordinarily such a pride and headiness in youth, that they cannot abide to sub-

mit to the counsels and directions of their elders, and therefore to shake them off, are willing to have them pass for the effects of dotage, when they are indeed the fruits of sobriety and experience. To such the exhortation of Solomon is very necessary, PROV. xxiii. 22 : *Hearken to thy father that begat thee, and despise not thy mother when she is old.* A multitude of texts more there are in that book to this purpose, which shows that the wisest of men thought it necessary for children to attend to the counsel of their parents. But the youth of our age set up for wisdom the quite contrary way, and think they then become wits, when they are advanced to the despising the counsel, yea, mocking the persons of their parents. Let such, if they will not practise the exhortations, yet remember the threatening of the wise man, PROV. xxx. 17 : *The eye that mocketh at his father and despiseth to obey his mother, the ravens of the valley shall pick it out and the young eagles shall eat it.*

13. A second duty we owe to them is Love ; we are to bear them a real kindness, such as may

LOVE.

make us heartily desirous of all manner of good to them, and abhor to do any thing that may grieve and disquiet them. This will appear but common gratitude, when it is remembered what our parents have done for us, how they were not only the instruments of first bringing us into the world, but also of sustaining and supporting us after ; and certainly they rightly weigh the cares and fears, that go to the bringing up of a child, will judge the love of that child to be but a moderate return for them. This love is to be expressed several ways, first, in all kindness of behaviour, carrying ourselves not only with an awe and respect, but with kindness and affection ; and, therefore, most gladly and readily doing those things which may bring joy and comfort to them, and carefully avoiding whatever may grieve and afflict them. Secondly, this love is to be expressed in praying for them. The debt a child owes to a parent is so great, that he can never hope himself to discharge it ; he is, therefore, to call in God's aid, to beg of him, that he will reward all the good his parents have done for him, by multiplying his blessings upon them : what shall we then say to those children that, instead of calling to Heaven for blessings on their parents, ransack hell for curses on them, and pour out the blackest execrations against them ? This is a thing so horrid, that one would think they needed no persuasion against

it; because none could be so vile as to fall into it; but we see God himself, who best knows men's hearts, saw it possible; and, therefore, laid the heaviest punishment upon it, *He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death*, Exod. xxi. 17. And alas! our daily experience tells us, it is not only possible but common, even this of uttering curses. But it is to be feared, there is another yet more common, that is, the wishing curses, though fear or shame keep them from speaking out. How many children are there that, either through impatience of the government or greediness of the possessions of the parents, have wished their deaths? But whoever doth so, let him remember, that how slily and fairly soever he carry it before men, there is one that sees those secretest wishes of his heart, and in his sight he assuredly passes for this heinous offender, a curser of his parents. And then let it be considered, that God hath as well the power of punishing, as of seeing; and, therefore, since he hath pronounced death to be the reward of that sin, it is not unreasonable to expect he may himself inflict it; that they who watch for the death of their parents, may untimely meet with their own. The fifth commandment promiseth long life as the reward of honouring the parent, to which it is very agreeable that untimely death be the punishment of the contrary, and sure there is nothing more highly contrary to that duty, than this we are now speaking of, the cursing our Parents.

14. The third duty we owe to them is obedience: this is not only contained in the fifth commandment, but expressly enjoined in other places OBEDIENCE. of Scripture, EPHES. vi. 1, *Children, obey your Parents in the Lord, for this is right*; and again COL. iii. 20, *Children, obey your Parents in all things, for this is well pleasing to the Lord*. We owe them an obedience in all things, unless where their commands are contrary to the commands of God, for in that case our duty to God must be preferred: and, therefore, if any parent shall be so wicked as to require his child to steal, to lie, or to do any unlawful thing, the child then offends not against his duty, though he disobey that command; nay, he must disobey, or else he offends against a higher duty, even that he owes to God his Heavenly Father. Yet when it is thus necessary to refuse obedience, he should take care to do it in such a modest and respectful manner, that it may appear it is conscience only,

and not stubbornness, moves him to it. But in case of all lawful commands, that is, when the thing commanded is either good, or not evil, when it hath nothing in it contrary to our duty to God, there the child is bound to obey, be the command in a weightier or lighter matter. How little this duty is regarded is too manifest every where in the world, where Parents generally have their children no longer under command than they are under the rod ; when they are once grown up, they think themselves free from all obedience to them ; or if some do continue to pay it, yet let the motive of it be examined, and it will in too many be found only worldly prudence. They fear to displease their Parents, lest they should shorten their hand towards them, and so they shall lose somewhat by it ; but how few are there that obey purely upon conscience of duty ? This sin of disobedience to Parents was, by the Law of Moses, punishable with death, as you may read DEUT. xxi. 18; but if Parents now-a-days should proceed so with their children, many might soon make themselves childless.

15. But of all the acts of disobedience, that of marrying  
**ESPECIALLY IN** against the consent of the Parent is one of  
THEIR the highest. Children are so much the  
**MARRIAGE.** goods, the possessions of their Parent, that  
they cannot, without a kind of theft, give  
away themselves without the allowance of those that have  
the right in them ; and, therefore, we see under the law, the  
*Maid that hath made any vow was not suffered to perform*  
*it, without the consent of the Parent,* NUMB. xxx. 5. The  
right of the Parent was thought of force enough to cancel  
and make void the obligation, even of a vow ; and, therefore,  
surely it ought to be so much considered by us as to keep us  
from making any such, whereby that right is infringed.

16. A fourth duty to the Parent, is to assist and minister  
**MINISTERING TO** to them in all their wants of what kind  
THEIR WANTS. soever, whether weakness and sickness of  
body, decayedness of understanding, or  
poverty and lowness in estate ; in all these the child is bound,  
according to his ability, to relieve and assist them : for the  
two former, weakness of body, and infirmity of mind, none  
can doubt of the duty, when they remember how every child  
did in his infancy receive the very same benefit from the  
Parents ; the child had then no strength to support, no under-  
standing to guide itself ; the care of the Parents was fain to

supply both these to it ; and, therefore, in common gratitude, whenever either of these becomes the Parent's case, as sometimes by great age, or some accident both do, the child is to perform the same offices back again to them. As for that of relieving their poverty, there is the very same obligation to that with the former, it being but just to sustain thy Parent who has formerly sustained thee ; but besides this, Christ himself teaches us, that this is contained within the precept of honouring their Parents ; for when, MARK vii. 13, he accuses the *Pharisees of rejecting the commandment of God, to cleave to their own traditions,* he instances in this particular concerning the relieving of Parents, whereby it is manifest that this is a part of that duty which is enjoined in the fifth commandment, as you may see at large in the text, and such a duty it is, that no pretence can absolve or acquit us of it. How then shall those answer it that deny relief to their poor Parents, that cannot part with their own excesses and superfluities, which are indeed their sins, to satisfy the necessities of those to whom they owe their being ? Nay, some there are yet worse, who out of pride scorn to own their Parents in their poverty : thus it often happens, when the child is advanced to dignity or wealth, they think it a disparagement to them to look on their Parents that remain in a low condition, it being the betraying, as they think, to the world the meanness of their birth, and so the poor Parent fares the worse for the prosperity of his child. This is such a pride and unnaturalness together, as will surely find a sharp vengeance from God ; for if Solomon observes of Pride alone, that it is the *forerunner of destruction,* PROV. xvi. 18, we may much rather conclude so of it, when it is thus accompanied.

17. To this that hath been said of the duty of children to their Parents, I shall add only this ; that no unkindness, no fault of the Parent, can acquit the child of this duty ; but as St. Peter tells servants, 1 PET. ii. 18, that *they must be subject, not only to the good and gentle masters, but also to the forward ;* so certainly it belongs to children to perform duty, not only to the kind and virtuous, but even to the harshest, and wickedest Parent. For though the gratitude due to a kind Parent be a very forcible motive to make the child pay his duty, yet that is not the only nor chiefest ground of it ; that is laid in the command

DUTY TO BE.  
PAID EVEN TO  
THE WORST OF  
PARENTS.

of God, who requires us thus to honour our Parents. And therefore, though we should suppose a Parent so unnatural, as never to have done any thing to oblige the child (which can hardly be imagined) yet still the command of God continues in force, and we are, in conscience of that, to perform that duty to our Parents, though none of the other tie of gratitude should lie on us.

But as this is due from the child to the Parents, so on the other side there are other things also due from the Parents to the Child, and that throughout the several states and ages of it.

**DUTY OF PARENTS TO CHILDREN.** **18.** First, There is the care of nourishing and sustaining it, which begins from the very birth, and continues a duty from the Parent, till the child be able to perform it to himself; this

is a duty which nature teaches; even the savage beasts have a great care and tenderness in nourishing their young, and therefore may serve to reproach and condemn all Parents who shall be so unnatural as to neglect this. I shall not here enter into the question, *whether the mother be obliged to give the child its first nourishment, by giving it suck herself*, because it will not be possible to affirm universally in the case, there being many circumstances which may alter it, and make it not only lawful, but best not to do it; all I shall say is, that where no impediment of sickness, weakness, or the like does happen, it is surely best for the mother herself to perform this office, there being many advantages to the child by it, which a good mother ought so far to consider, as not to sell them to her own sloth, or nice ness, or any such unworthy motive; for where such only are the grounds of forbearing it, they will never be able to justify the omission, they being themselves unjustifiable.

**BRING THEM TO BAPTISM.** But besides this first care, which belongs to the body of the child, there is another, which should begin near as early, which belongs to their souls, and that is the bringing them to the Sacrament of Baptism, thereby to procure them an early right to all those precious advantages, which that Sacrament conveys to them. This is a duty the Parents ought not to delay, it being most reasonable that they who have been instruments to convey the stain and pollution of sin to the poor infant, should be very earnest and industrious to have it washed off

as soon as may be : besides, the life of so tender a creature is but a blast, and many times gone in a moment ; and though we are not to despair of God's mercy to those poor children, who die without baptism, yet surely those Parents commit a great fault by whose neglect it is that they want it.

19. Secondly, the Parents must provide for the education of the child ; they must, as Solomon speaks, **PROV. xxii. 6, Train up the child in the way he should go.** EDUCATE THEM. As soon therefore as children come to the use of reason, they are to be instructed, and that first in those things which concern their eternal well being ; they are, by little and little, to be taught all those things which God hath commanded them as their duty to perform ; as also what glorious rewards he hath provided for them, if they do it, and what grievous and eternal punishment if they do it not. These things ought, as early as is possible, to be instilled into the minds of children, which (like new vessels) do usually keep the flavour of that which is first put into them ; and therefore it nearly concerns all Parents to look they be at first thus seasoned with virtue and religion. It is sure if this be neglected, there is one ready at hand to fill them with the contrary : the devil will be diligent enough to instil into them all wickedness and vice, even from their cradles ; and there being also in all our natures so much the greater aptness to evil than to good, there is need of great care and watchfulness to prevent those endeavours of that enemy of souls, which can no way be, but by possessing them at first with good things, breeding in them a love to virtue, and a hatred of vice ; that so when the temptations come, they may be armed against them. This surely is above all things the duty of Parents to look after, and the neglect of it is a horrible cruelty ; we justly look upon those Parents as most unnatural wretches, that take away the life of their child ; but alas ! that is mercy and tenderness, compared to this of neglecting his education, for by that he ruins his soul, makes him miserable eternally ; and God knows multitudes of such cruel Parents there are in the world, that thus give up their children to be possessed by the devil, for want of an early acquainting them with the ways of God ; nay, indeed, how few there are that do conscientiously perform this duty, is too apparent by the strange rudeness and ignorance that is generally among youth. The children of those who call themselves Christians being frequently as ignorant

of God and Christ, as the merest heathens. But whoever they are that thus neglect this great duty, let them know that it is not only a fearful misery they bring upon their poor children, but also a horrible guilt upon themselves. For as God says to the careless watchman, EZEK. iii. 18, *That if any soul perish by his negligence, that soul shall be required at his hands*; so surely will it fare with all Parents who have this office of watchman intrusted to them by God over their own children. A second part of education is the bringing them up to some employment, busying them in some honest exercise, whereby they may avoid that great snare of the devil, idleness; and also be taught some useful art or trade, whereby when they come to age, they may become profitable to the commonwealth, and able to get an honest living to themselves.

20. To this great duty of educating of children there is re-

quired as means, first, encouragement: secondly, correction. Encouragement is first to be tried: we should endeavour to make children in love with duty, by offering them rewards and invitations, and whenever they

do well, take notice of it, and encourage them to go on. It is an ill course some Parents hold, who think they must never appear to their children but with a face of sourness and austerity; this seems to be that which St. Paul forewarns Parents of, when he bids *fathers not to provoke their children to wrath*, COL. iii. 21. To be as harsh and unkind to them when they do well, as if they do ill, is the way to provoke them; and then the Apostle tells us in the same verse what will be the issue of it, they will be discouraged, they will have no heart to go on in any good course, when the Parent affords them no countenance. The second means is correction, and this becomes seasonable, when the former will do no good, when all fair means, persuasions, and encouragements prevail not, then there is a necessity of using sharper; and let that be first tried in words, I mean not by railing and foul language, but in sober, yet sharp reproof; but if that fail too, then proceed to blows; and in this case, as Solomon says, *He that spareth his rod, hateth his son*, PROV. xiii. 24. It is a cruel fondness, that to spare a few stripes at present, will adventure him to those sad mischiefs, which commonly befall the child that is left to himself. But then this correction must be given in such a manner, as may

be likely to do good ; to which purpose it must first be given timely ; the child must not be suffered to run on in any ill till it hath got a habit and a stubbornness too. This is a great error in many Parents, they will let their children alone for divers years, to do what they list, permit them to lie, to steal, without ever so much as rebuking them, nay, perhaps please themselves to see the witty shifts of the child, and think it matters not what they do while they are little ; but alas ! all that while the vice gets root, and that many times so deep a one, that all they can do afterwards, whether by words or blows, can never pluck it up. Secondly, correction must be moderate, not exceeding the quality of the fault, nor the tenderness of the child. Thirdly, it must not be given in rage, if it be, it will not only be in danger of being immoderate, but it will lose its effect upon the child, who will think he is corrected not because he has done a fault, but because his Parent is angry, and so will rather blame the Parent than himself : whereas, on the contrary, care should be taken to make the child as sensible of the fault as of the smart, without which he will never be thoroughly amended.

21. Thirdly, after children are grown up, and are past the age of education, there are yet other offices for the Parent to perform to them ; the Parent is still to watch over them, in respect of their souls, to observe how they practise those precepts which are given them in their education, and accordingly to exhort, encourage, or reprove, as they find occasion.

THE PARENT TO  
WATCH OVER  
THEIR SOULS  
EVEN WHEN  
THEY ARE  
GROWN UP.

22. So also for their outward estate, they are to put them into some course of living in the world ; if God have blest the Parents with wealth, according to what he hath he must distribute to his children, remembering that since he was the instrument of bringing them into the world, he is, according to his ability, to provide for their comfortable living in it ; they are, therefore, to be looked on as very unnatural Parents who, so they may have enough to spend in their own riots and excess, care not what becomes of their children, never think of providing for them. Another fault, is usual among Parents in this business ; they defer all the provisions for them till themselves be dead ; heap up, per-

TO PROVIDE  
FOR THEIR SUB-  
SISTENCE.

haps, great matters for them against that time, but in the mean time afford them not such a competency, as may enable them to live in the world. There are several mischiefs come from this ; First, it lessens the child's affection to his Parents, nay, sometimes it proceeds so far, as to make him wish his death : which, though it be such a fault as no temptation can excuse in a child, yet it is also a great fault in a Parent, to give that temptation. Secondly, it puts the child upon shifts and tricks, many times dishonest ones, to supply his necessities ; this is, I doubt not, a common effect of it ; the hardness of Parents has often put men upon very unlawful courses, which when they are once acquainted with, perhaps they never leave, though the first occasion cease ; and therefore, Parents ought to beware how they run them upon those hazards. Besides, the Parent loses that contentment which he might have in seeing his children live prosperously and comfortably, which none but an arrant earth-worm would exchange for the vain imaginary pleasure of having money in his chest. But in his business of providing for children, there is yet another thing to be heeded, and that is, that the Parent get that wealth honestly which he makes their portion, else it is very far from being a provision : there is such a curse goes along with an ill-gotten estate, that he that leaves such a one to his child, doth but cheat and deceive him, makes him believe he has left him wealth, but has withal put such a canker in the bowels of it, that is sure to eat it out. This is so common an observation, that I need say nothing to confirm the truth of it ; would God it were as generally laid to heart as it seems to be generally taken notice of : then surely Parents would not account it a reasonable motive to unjust dealing, that they may thereby provide for their children, for this is not a way of providing for them : nay, it is the way to spoil them of whatever they have lawfully gathered for them ; the least mite of unlawful gain being of the nature of leaven, which sours the whole lump, bringing down curses upon all a man possessest. Let all Parents, therefore, satisfy themselves with such provisions for their children as God shall enable them honestly to make, assuring themselves, how little soever it be, it is a better portion than the greatest wealth unjustly gotten ; according to that of Solomon, PROV. xvi. 8, *Better is a little with righteousness, than great revenue without right.*

23. A fourth thing the Parent owes to the child is good example, he is not only to set him rules of virtue and godliness, but he must himself give him a pattern in his own practice ; we see the force of example is infinitely beyond that of precept, especially where the person is one to whom we bear a reverence, or with whom we have a continual conversation ; both which usually meet in a Parent. It is, therefore, a most necessary care in all Parents to behave themselves so before their children, that their example may be a means of winning them to virtue. But alas ! this age affords little of this care, nay, so far it is from it, that there are none more frequently the instruments of corrupting children than their own Parents. And, indeed, how can it be otherwise ? while men give themselves liberty to all wickedness, it is not to be hoped, but that the children which observe it will imitate it ; the child that sees his father drunk, will surely think he may be so too, as well as his father. So he that hears him swear will do the like, and so for all other vices ; and if any Parent that is thus wicked himself should happen to have so much more care of his child's soul than his own, as to forbid him the things which himself practises, or correct him for the doing them ; it is certain the child will account this a great injustice to his father, to punish him for that which himself freely does, and so he is never likely to be wrought upon by it. This consideration lays a most strict tie upon all Parents to live Christianly, for otherwise they do not only hazard their own souls, but those of their children also, and as it were, purchase an estate of inheritance in hell.

24. A fifth duty of Parents is blessing their children ; the way of doing that is double, first, by their prayer ; they are by daily and earnest TO BLESS THEM. prayers to commend them to God's protection and blessing, both for their spiritual and temporal estate ; and secondly, by their piety ; they are to be such persons themselves as that a blessing may descend from them upon their posterity. This is often promised in Scripture to godly men, that their *seed shall be blessed.* Thus in the second commandment God promises *to show mercy to the thousandth generation of them that love him and keep his commandments.* And it is very observable in the Jews, that though they were a stiff-necked generation, and had very grievously provoked God, yet the godliness of their fore-fathers, Abraham, Isaac,

and Jacob, did many times move God to save them from destruction ; on the other side, we see that even good men have fared the worse for the iniquities of their fathers ; thus when Josiah had destroyed idolatry, restored God's service, and done good beyond all the kings that were before him, yet there was an old arrear of Manasseh his grandfather, which all this piety of his would not blot out, but he resolves to cast Judah also out of his sight, as you may read at large, 2 KINGS xxiii. If, therefore, Parents have any bowels, any kindness towards their children, any real desire of their prosperity, let them take care by their own godly life to entail a blessing upon them.

25. Sixthly, Parents must take heed, that they use their power over their children with equity and moderation, not to oppress them with unreasonable commands, only to exercise their reasonable commands, only to exercise their

own authority, but in all things of weight to consider the real good of their children, and to press them to nothing which may not consist with that. This is a rule whereof Parents may often have use, but in none greater than in the business of marrying their children, wherein many that otherwise are good Parents, have been to blame ; when out of an eagerness of bestowing them wealthily, they force them to marry utterly against their own inclinations, which is a great tyranny, and that which frequently betrays them to a multitude of mischiefs, such as all the wealth in the world cannot repair. There are two things which Parents ought especially to consider in the matching their children : the first, how they may live Christianly : and to that purpose to choose a virtuous and pious person to link them with : the second is, how they may live cheerfully and comfortably in the world ; and to that end, though a competency of estate may be necessary to be regarded ; yet, surely, abundance is no way requisite ; and, therefore, that should not be too vehemently sought after : that which much more tends to the happiness of that state, is the mutual kindness and liking of the parties, without which marriage is of all other the most uncomfortable condition ; and, therefore, no Parent ought to thrust a child into it. I have now done with the first sort of Relation, that of a Parent.

## SUNDAY XV.

Of Duty to our Brethren, and Relations, Husband, Wife, Friends,  
Masters. Servants.

THE second sort of relation is that of a Brother : now brotherhood may be twofold, either natural, or spiritual ; the latter may in the largest extent contain under it all mankind, all that partake of the same nature : but I shall not consider it so in this place, having already mentioned those general duties which belong to all as such. I now speak of that natural brotherhood that is between those that are the children of the same immediate parent; and the duty of these is to have united hearts and affections : this nature points out to them, they partaking in a more especial manner of each other's substance ; and, therefore, ought to have the greatest tenderness and kindness each to other ; thus we see Abraham makes it an argument, why there should be *no contention between him and Lot, because they were brethren*, GEN. xiii. 8. And though by brethren there is meant only cousins, yet that helps the more strongly to conclude, that this nearer relation is in reason to be a greater bar to strife, as also that this kindness is in some degree to be extended to all that have any nearness of blood to us.

2. This kindness and Love between Brethren and Sisters ought to be very firmly grounded in their hearts ; if it be not, they will be of all others in most danger of disagreeing ; for the continual conversation that is among them whilst they are at home in their father's house, will be apt to administer some occasion of jar. Besides the equality that is among them in respect of birth, often makes them inclinable to envy each other, when one is in any respect advanced above the other. Thus we see Joseph's brethren envied him, because he had most of his father's love, and Rachel envied her sister Leah, because she was fruitful ; therefore, for the preventing of such temptations, let all who have brethren and sisters, possess their mind with a great and real kindness to them, look on them as parts of themselves, and then they will never think fit either to quarrel

DUES TO BRETHREN.

NATURAL.

THE NECESSITY  
OF LOVE AMONG  
BRETHREN.

with them, or to envy them any advantage, nay more than one part of the body does another of the same body, but will strive to advance and help forward the good of each other.

**3** The second kind of Brotherhood is Spiritual ; that contains all those who profess the same faith with us : the Church, in our baptism, becomes a mother to each baptized person ; and then surely they that have the relation of children to her, must have also the relation of brethren to each other : and to this sort of brethren also we owe a great deal of tenderness and affection ; the spiritual bond of Religion should, of all others, the most closely unite our hearts. This is the Brotherhood which St. Peter exhorts us to love, 1 PET. ii. 17. And to it we are in an especial manner bound to do all good offices. *Do good, saith the apostle, to all, but especially to them that are of the household of Faith,* GAL. vi. 10. Our compassions are to be most melting towards them of all others, in all their needs : Christ tells us, that *whoever gives but a cup of cold water to any in the name of a disciple, shall not lose his reward,* MATT. x. 42. From whence we may assure ourselves that this peculiar love to Christians as Christians, is very acceptable in his sight.

**4.** Several Duties there are required of us to these brethren, one principal, is the holding Communion with them, and that first in Doctrine ; we are constantly to continue in the belief and profession of all those necessary truths, by which we may be marked out as followers and disciples of Christ. This is

OUR DUTY  
TO HOLD  
COMMUNION  
WITH THESE  
BRETHREN.

that faith which St. Jude speaks of, which was *once delivered to the saints,* JUDE iii ; by keeping whereof we continue still united to this spiritual brotherhood, in respect of profession, which we must constantly do, what storms and persecutions soever attend it, according to the exhortation of the apostle, HEB. x. 23, *Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering.* Secondly, we are also, as opportunity serves, to communicate with them in all holy offices ; we must be diligent in frequenting the assemblies of the saints, which is as it were the badge of our profession, and therefore he that willingly withdraws himself from these, gives ground to suspect he will be apt to renounce the other also. But these parts of Communion we find strictly maintained by the first Christians, ACTS ii. 42, *They continued steadfastly*

*in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.* They continued, and that steadfastly, they were not frightened from it by any persecutions, though that were a time wherein they were tried with the sharpest sufferings; which may teach us that it is not the danger that attends this duty can acquit us of it.

5. Secondly, we are to bear with the infirmities of our Christian brethren, according to the advice of St. Paul, ROM. xv. 1, *We that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak.* If one that holds all necessary Christian truths happen yet to be in some error, we are not for this, either to forsake his communion or despise his person. This St. Paul teaches us in the case of that weak brother, *who by error made a causeless scruple about meats,* ROM. xiv. where he bids the stronger Christians, that is, those who being better instructed, discerned him to be in an error, yet to receive him nevertheless, and not to despise him; as on the other side, he bids that weak one not to judge the stronger. The lesser difference in opinion must be borne with on both sides, and must not in the least abate our brotherly charity towards each other.

TO BEAR WITH  
THEIR INFIRM-  
ITIES.

6. Thirdly, we are to endeavour the restoring of any fallen brother, that is, to bring him to repentance after he hath fallen into any sin. Thus St. Paul commands the Galatians, that they should *restore him that was overtaken in a fault, considering themselves lest they were also tempted.* We are not to look on him as a castaway, to give him over as utterly desperate, neither are we to triumph over him in respect of our own innocence, like the proud pharisee over the poor publican, LUKE xviii. 11, but we are meekly to endeavour his recovery, remembering that our own frailty is such, that we are not secure from the like falls.

TO RESTORE  
THEM AFTER  
FALLS.

7. Fourthly, we are to have a sympathy and fellow feeling with these brethren, to be nearly touched with whatsoever befalls them, either as they are considered in society or in single persons. In society first, and so they make up a church; and that either the universal, which is made up of all believers throughout the world, or any particular church, which is made up of all the believers in that particular nation; and whatever happens to either of these, either

TO SYMPA-  
THIZE WITH  
THEM.

the whole church in general, or any such single part of it, especially that whereof ourselves are members, we are to be much affected and moved with it, to rejoice in all the prosperities, and to mourn and bewail all the breaches and desolations thereof, and daily and earnestly to pray with David, PSALM li. 18, *O be favourable and gracious unto Sion, build thou the walls of Jerusalem;* and that especially when we see her in distress and persecution. Whosoever is not thus touched with the condition of the church, is not to be looked on as a living member of it; for, as in the natural body every member is concerned in the prosperity of the whole, so certainly is it here. It was the observation of the Psalmist, that *God's servants think upon the stones of Sion, and pity to see her in the dust,* PSALM cii. 14; and surely all his servants are still of the same temper, cannot look on the ruins and desolations of the church without the greatest sorrow and lamentation. Secondly, we are to have this fellow-feeling with our brethren, considered as single persons; we are to account ourselves concerned in every particular Christian, so as to partake with him in all his occasions either of joy or sorrow. Thus the apostle exhorts, ROM. xii. 15, *Rejoice with them that rejoice, weep with them that weep:* and again, 1 COR. xii. under the similitude of the natural body he urges this duty, *Whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it.* All these several effects of love we owe to these spiritual brethren. And this love is that which Christ hath made the badge of his disciples, JOHN xiii. 35, *By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another;* so that if we mean not to cast off discipleship to Christ, we must not forsake this love of the brethren.

#### 8. The third relation is that between Husband and Wife.

**THE WIFE OWES** *This is yet much nearer than either of the former;* as appears by that text, EPHES. v. **TO THE HUSBAND** *A man shall leave father and mother, OBEDIENCE.* *and cleave to his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.* Several duties there are owing from one of these persons to the other: and first for the Wife, she owes obedience. This is commanded by the apostle, COL. iii. 18, *Wives, submit yourselves to your own Husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.* They are to render obedience to their Husbands in the Lord, that is, in all lawful commands. For other-

wise it is here, as in the case of all other superiors, God must be obeyed rather than man, and the Wife must not, upon her Husband's command, do any thing which is forbidden by God. But in all things which do not cross some command of God's, this precept is of force, and will serve to condemn the peevish stubbornness of many wives who resist the lawful commands of their husband, only because they are impatient of this duty of subjection, which God himself requires of them. But it may here be asked, what if the husband command something which, though it be not unlawful, is yet very inconvenient and imprudent, must the wife submit to such a command? To this I answer, that it will be no disobedience in her, but duty, calmly and mildly to show him the inconveniences thereof, and to persuade him to retract that command; but in case she cannot win him to it by fair entreaties, she must neither try sharp language, nor yet finally refuse to obey, nothing but the unlawfulness of the command being sufficient warrant for that.

9. Secondly, The wife owes Fidelity to the husband, and that of two sorts; first, that of the bed, she must keep herself pure and chaste from all strange embraces, and therefore must not so much as give an ear to any that would allure her, but with the greatest abhorrence reject all motions of that sort, and never give any man that has once made such a motion to her, the least opportunity to make a second. Secondly, She owes him likewise Fidelity in the managing those worldly affairs he commits to her, she must order them so, as may be most to her husband's advantage; and not by deceiving and cozening of him employ his goods to such uses as he allows not of.

10. Thirdly, She owes him Love, and together with that all friendliness and kindness of conversation: she is to endeavour to bring him as much assistance, and comfort of life, as is possible, that so she may answer that special end of the woman's creation, the being *a help to her husband*, GEN. ii. 18, and this in all conditions, whether health or sickness, wealth or poverty, whatsoever estate God by his providence shall cast him into, she must be as much of comfort and support to him, as she can. To this all sullenness and harshness, all brawling and unquietness is directly contrary, for that makes the wife the burden and plague of the man, instead of a help and comfort. And sure if it be a fault to behave one's self so to any per-

## FIDELITY.

## LOVE.

son, as hath already been showed, how great must it be to do so to him, to whom the greatest kindness and affection is owing ?

11. Nor let such Wives think that any Faults, or provocations of the Husband, can justify their

**THE FAULTS OF  
THE HUSBAND  
ACQUIT NOT  
FROM THESE  
DUTIES.**

frowardness ; for they will not, either in respect of religion or discretion. Not in religion, for where God has absolutely commanded a duty to be paid, it is not any un-

worthiness of the person can excuse from

it ; nor in discretion, for the worse a Husband is, the more need there is for the Wife to carry herself with that gentleness and sweetness, that may be most likely to win him. This is the advice St. Peter gave the wives of his time, 1 PET. iii. 1, *Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands, that if any obey not the word, they may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives.* It seems the good behaviour of the wives was thought a powerful means to win men from Heathenism to Christianity ; and sure it might now-a-days have some good effects, if women would have but the patience to try it : at the least, it would have this, that it would keep some tolerable quiet in families, whereas, on the other side, the ill fruits of the wives' unquietness are so notorious, that there are few neighbourhoods but can give some instance of it. How many men are there that, to avoid the noise of a foward wife, have fallen to company-keeping, and by that to drunkenness, poverty, and a multitude of mischiefs ? Let all wives therefore beware of administering that temptation. But whenever there happens any thing, which, in kindness to her husband, she is to admonish him of, let it be with that softness and mildness, that it may appear it is love and not anger that makes her speak.

12. There are also on the Husband's part several duties ;

**THE HUSBAND  
OWES TO THE  
WIFE LOVE.**

there is first love, which St. Paul requires to be very tender and compassionate towards the wife, as appears by the similitudes he useth in that matter, EPHES. v. The one,

that of the love a man bears to his natural body. *No man, says he, ver. 29, ever hateth his own flesh, but nourisheth it, and cherisheth it.* The other love is that Christ bears to his Church ; which is far greater, ver. 25, both which he sets as patterns of this love of husbands towards their wives.

This utterly forbids all harshness and roughness to them ; men are to use them as parts of themselves, to love them as their own bodies ; and, therefore, to do nothing that may be hurtful and grievous to them, no more than they would cut and gash their own flesh. Let those husbands that tyrannize over their wives, that scarce use them like human creatures, consider whether that be to love them as their own bodies.

13. A second duty of the Husband is Faithfulness to the bed. This is by God as well required of the husband as the wife ; and though the world do seem to look on the breach of this duty with less abhorrence in the husband, yet sure before that just Judge, the offence will appear no less on the man's side than the woman's. This is certain, it is in both a breach of the vow made to each other at their marriage, and so besides the uncleanness, a downright perjury, and those differences in the case, which seem to cast the scale, or rather in respect of civil and worldly consideration, than merely of the sin.

14. A third part of the Husband is to maintain and provide for the Wife. He is to let her partake with him in those outward good things wherewith God hath blest him, and neither by niggardliness debar her of what is fit for her, nor yet by unthriftiness so waste his goods, that he shall become unable to support her. This is certainly the duty of the Husband, who being, as hath been said, to account his wife as a part of his own body, must have the very same care to sustain her, that he hath for himself. Yet this is not so to be understood, as to excuse the wife from her part of labour and industry, when that is requisite, it being unreasonable the husband should toil to maintain the wife in idleness.

15. Fourthly, The husband is to account the wife in the things which concern her eternal welfare, if she be ignorant of them. Thus St. Paul bids the *wives learn of their husbands at home*, 1 Cor. xiv. 35, which supposes that the husband is to teach her. Indeed it belongs to every master of a family to endeavour that all under his charge be taught all necessary things of this kind, and then sure more especially his wife, who is so much nearer to him than all the rest. This should make men careful to get knowledge themselves, that so they may be able to perform this duty they owe to others.

**HUSBANDS AND WIVES MUTUALLY TO PRAY FOR, AND ASSIST EACH OTHER IN ALL GOOD.**

16. Lastly, Husbands and Wives are mutually to pray for each other, to beg all blessings from God both spiritual and temporal, and to endeavour all they can to do all good to one another, especially all good to each other's souls, by stirring up to the performance of duty, and dissuading and drawing back from all sin, and by being like true yoke-fellows, helpful and assistant to each other in the doing of all sorts of good, both to their own family and all others within their reach. This is of all other the truest and most valuable love. Nay, indeed, how can it be said they do love at all, who contentedly let each other run on in a course that will bring them to eternal misery? And if the love of husbands and wives were thus grounded in virtue and religion, it would make their lives a kind of heaven on earth; it would prevent all those contentions and brawlings, so common among them, which are the great plagues of families, and the lesser hell in passage to the greater; and truly where it is not thus founded, there is little comfort to be expected in marriage.

**THE VIRTUE OF THE PERSON THE CHIEF CONSIDERATION IN MARRIAGE.**

17. It should, therefore, be the care of every one that means to enter upon that state, to consider advisedly beforehand, and to choose such a person with whom they may have this spiritual friendship, that is, such a one as truly fears God. There are many false ends of marriage looked upon in the world: some marry for wealth, others for beauty, and generally they are only worldly respects that are at all considered, but certainly he that would marry as he ought, should contrive to make his marriage useful to those better ends of serving God, and saving his own soul; at least he must be sure it be no hindrance to them, and to that purpose the virtue of the person chosen is more conducing than all the wealth in the world, though I deny not but that a competency of that may likewise be considered.

**UNLAWFUL MARRIAGES.**

18. But above all things, let all take heed that they make not such marriages as may not only be ill in their effects, but are actual sins at the time; such are the marriages of those that were formerly promised to some other, in which case it is sure they rightly belong to those to whom they passed the

first promise ; and then for any other to marry them during the life of that person, is to take the husband or wife of that other, which is direct adultery, as St. Paul tells us, Rom. vii. 3. The like unlawfulness there is also in the marriage of those who are within those degrees of kindred forbidden by God, the particulars whereof are set down in the xviii. and xx. of LEVIT. and whoever marries any that is within any of those degrees of nearness, either to himself, or to his deceased wife, which is as bad, commits that great sin of incest, and so long as he continues to live with such his unlawful wife, remains in that fearful guilt. This wariness in the choice of the person to be married, would prevent many sad effects, which we daily see follow such rash or unlawful matches. It were well, therefore, if people would look on marriage as our Church advises, as a thing not to be *undertaken lightly, unadvisedly, or wantonly, to satisfy men's carnal lusts and appetites, but reverently, discreetly, advisedly, soberly, and in the fear of God* ; and in so doing, no doubt a blessing would follow, which otherwise there is little ground to expect. I have now done with this relation between husband and wife.

19. The next is that between Friends : and this relation if it be rightly founded, it is of great nearness and usefulness ; but there is none more generally mistaken in the world : men usually call them their friends, with whom they have an intimacy and frequency of conversation, though that intimacy be indeed nothing but an agreement and combination in sin. The drunkard thinks him his friend that will keep him company ; the deceitful person, him that will aid him in his cheats ; the proud man, him that will flatter him : and so generally in all vices, they are looked on as friends that advance and further us in them. But God knows this is far from friendship ; such a friend as this, the devil himself is in the highest degree, who is never backward in such offices. The true friendship is that of a direct contrary making ; it is a concurrence and agreement in virtue, not in vice : in short, a true friend loves his friend so that he is very zealous of his good : and certainly he that is really so will never be the instrument of bringing him to the greatest evil. The general duty of a friend then must be resolved to be the industrious pursuit of his friend's real advantages, in which there are several particulars contained.

FRIENDSHIP.  
ITS DUTIES.

20. As first, Faithfulness in all trusts committed to him by his friend, whether that of goods, or **FAITHFULNESS.** secrets ; he that betrays the trust of a friend in either, is by all men looked upon with abhorrence, it being one of the highest falsenesses and treacheries, and for such treacherous wounds, the wise man tells us, *Every friend will depart*, Ecclus. xxii. 22.

21. Secondly, it is the duty of a friend to be assisting to his friend in all his outward needs ; to coun-  
**ASSISTANCE.** sel him when he wants advice ; to cheer him when he needs comfort ; to give him when he wants relief ; and to endeavour his rescue out of any trouble or danger. An admirable example we have of this friendship in Jonathan to David, *he loved him as his own soul*, and we see he not only contrives for his safety when he was in danger, but runs hazards himself to rescue and deliver his friend, draws his father's anger upon him, to turn it from David, as you may read at large, 1 SAM. xx.

22. The third and highest duty of a friend is to be aiding and assisting to the soul of his friend, to  
**ADMONITION.** endeavour to advance that in piety and virtue, by all means within his power, by exhortations and encouragements to all virtue, by earnest and vehement dissuasions from all sin, and not only thus in general, but by applying to his particular wants, especially by plain and friendly reproofs, where he knows or reasonably believes there is any fault committed. This is of all others the most peculiar duty of a friend, it being indeed that which none else is qualified for. Such an unwillingness there is in most men to hear of their faults, that those that undertake that work, had need have a great prepossession of their hearts, to make them patient of it. Nay, it is so generally acknowledged to be the proper work of a friend, that if he omit it he betrays the offender into security ; his not reproving will be apt to make the other think he does nothing worthy of reproof, and so he tacitly acts that basest part of a flatterer, soothes and cherishes him in his sin ; when yet farther it is considered how great need all men have at sometime or other of being admonished, it will appear a most unfriendly, yea, cruel thing to omit it. We have that natural partiality to ourselves, that we cannot so readily discern our own miscarriages, as we do other men's and therefore it is very necessary they should sometimes be showed us by those who see them more clearly ;

and the doing this at the first may prevent the multiplying of more ; whereas if we be suffered to go unreproved, it often comes to such a habit, that reproofs will do no good. And then how shall that person be able to answer it either to God or himself, that has by his silence betrayed his friend to this greatest mischief ? It is the expression of God himself speaking of a friend, *Thy friend which is as thine own soul*, DEUT. xiii. 6. And sure we should in this respect account our friends as our own souls, by having the same jealous tenderness and watchfulness over their souls, which we ought to have of our own. It will therefore be very fit for all that have entered any strict friendship, to make this one especial article in the agreement, that they shall mutually admonish and reprove each other ; by which means it will become such an avowed part of their friendship, that it can never be mistaken by the reproved party for censoriousness or unkindness.

23. Fourthly, to these several parts of kindness must be added that of Prayer ; we must not only assist our friends, ourselves, in what we can, but we must call in the Almighty's aid to them, recommending them earnestly to God for all his blessings, both temporal and spiritual.

## PRAYER.

24. Lastly, We must be constant in our friendships, and not out of a lightness of humour grow weary of a friend, only because we have had him long. This is great injustice to him, who, if he have behaved himself well, ought the more to be valued, by how much the longer he has continued to do so : and it is great folly in ourselves, for it is the casting away the greatest treasure of human life, for such certainly is a tried friend. The wisest of men gives warning of it, PROV. xxvii. 10, *Thine own friend, and thy father's friend, forsake not*. Nay, further, it is not every light offence of a friend that should make thee renounce his friendship, there must be some allowance made to the infirmities of men, and if thou hast occasion to pardon him somewhat to-day, perhaps thou mayest give him opportunity to requite thee to-morrow ; therefore, nothing but unfaithfulness, or incorrigible vice should break this band.

25. The last relation is that between Masters and Servants, both of which owe duty to each other. That of the servant is first obedience to all lawful commands ;

SERVANTS OWE  
TO THEIR MAS-  
TERS OBEDIENCE.

this is expressly required by the apostle, EPHES. vi. 5, *Servants, obey in all things your Masters, &c.* And this obedience must not be a grumbling and unwilling one, but ready and cheerful, as he there proceeds to exhort, verse 7, *with good will doing service*; and to help them herein, they are to consider, that it is to the Lord, and not unto men. God has commanded Servants thus to obey their Masters; and therefore, the obedience they pay is to God, which may well make them do it cheerfully, how harsh or unworthy soever the Master be, especially if what the Apostle further urgeth, verse 8, be considered, *that there is a reward to be expected from God for it.*

26. The second duty of the servant is Faithfulness, and **FIDELITY.** that may be of two sorts; one as opposed to eye-service, the other to purloining or defrauding. The first part of Faithfulness is the doing of all true service to his Master, not only when his eye is over him, and he expects punishment for the omission, but at all times, even when his Master is not likely to discern his failing; and that servant that doth not make conscience of this, is far from being a faithful servant, this eye-service being by the Apostle set opposite to that singleness of heart, which he requires of servants, EPH. vi. 5. The second sort of Faithfulness consists in the honest managery of all things intrusted to him by his master, the not wasting his goods (as the unjust Steward was accused to have done, LUKE xvi.) whether by careless embezzling of them, or by converting any of them to his own use without the allowance of his Master. This latter is that purloining of which the Apostle warns servants, TIT. ii. 10; and is indeed no better than arrant theft: of this kind are all those ways that the servant hath of gaining to himself, by the loss and damage of his Master, as the being bribed to make ill bargains for him, and many the like. Nay, indeed this sort of unfaithfulness is worse than common theft, by how much there is a greater trust reposed, the betraying whereof adds to the crime. As for the other sort of unfaithfulness, that of wasting, though without gain to themselves, it differs not much in effect from this, the Master may lose as much by the one as the other, and then what odds is it to him, whether he be robbed by the covetousness or negligence of his servant? And it is still the same breach of trust with the former; for every Master is supposed to intrust his affairs as well to the care as the

honesty of his servant : for it would be little advantage to the Master to be secured that his servant would not himself cheat him, whilst in the mean time he would by his carelessness give opportunity to others to do it : therefore he that doth not look to his Master's profit, deceives his trust, as well as he that unjustly provides for his own.

27. A third duty of a servant, is patience and meekness, under the reproofs of his Master, *not answering again*, as the Apostle exhorts, SUBMISSION TO  
TIT. ii. 9, REBUKE.

and rude replies, as may increase the Master's displeasure, a thing too frequent among servants, even in the justest reprehensions ; whereas Saint Peter directs them patiently to suffer even the most undeserved correction, even when they *do well and suffer for it*, 1 PET. ii. 20. But the patient suffering of rebuke is not all that is required of servants in this matter, they must also mend the fault they are rebuked for, and not think they have done enough, when they have (though never so dutifully) given the Master the hearing.

28. A fourth duty of a servant is Diligence : he must constantly attend to all those things, which are DILIGENCE.  
the duties of his place, and not give himself to idleness and sloth, nor yet to company-keeping, gaming, or any other disorderly course, which may take him off from his Master's business. All these are necessary duties of a servant, which they are carefully and conscientiously to perform, not so much to escape the Master's anger as God's who will certainly call every one of them to an account, how they have behaved themselves towards their earthly Masters.

29. Now on the other side there are some things also owing from the Masters to their servants : as MASTERS OWE  
TO THEIR SER-  
VANTS JUSTICE.  
first, the Master is bound to be just to them, in performing those conditions on which they were hired ; such are commonly the giving them food and wages, and that Master that withholds these, is an oppressor.

30. Secondly, the Master is to admonish and reprove the servant in case of fault, and that not only ADMONITION.  
in faults against them, wherein few masters are backward ; but also and more especially in faults against God, whereat every master ought to be more troubled than at those which tend only to his own loss, or inconvenience ; the dishonour of God, and the hazard of the meanest man's

soul, being infinitely more worthy our disquiet, than any thing of the other kind can be. And therefore, when masters are presently on fire for any little negligence or fault of a servant towards themselves, and yet can, without trouble, see them run into the greatest sins against God, it is a sign they consider their own concernments too much, and God's glory and their servants' souls too little. This is too commonly the temper of masters, they are generally careless how their servants behave themselves towards God, how disordered and profane their families are, and therefore never bestow any exhortation, or admonition, to persuade them to virtue, or draw them from vice; such masters forget that they must one day give an account how they have governed their families. It is certainly the duty of every Ruler to endeavour to advance piety and godliness among all those that are under his charge, and that as well in this lesser dominion of a family, as in the greater of a realm or nation. Of this David was so careful, that we see he professes PSALM ci. 7, *That no deceitful person should dwell in his house, that he that told lies should not tarry in his sight;* so much he thought himself bound to provide, that his family might be a kind of church, an assembly of godly upright persons: and if all masters would endeavour to have theirs so, they would besides the eternal reward of it hereafter, find a present benefit by it, their worldly business would thrive much the better; for if their servants were brought to make conscience of their ways, they would then not dare either to be negligent or false.

31. But as it is the duty of masters to admonish and reprove their servants, so they must also look to do it in a due manner, that is, so as may be most likely to do good, not in passion and rage, which can never work the servant to any thing but the despising or hating him; but with such sober and grave speeches, as may convince him of his fault, and may also assure him, that it is a kind desire of his amendment (and not a willingness to wreak his own rage) which makes the Master thus to rebuke him.

32. A third duty of the Master is to set good example of **HONESTY AND GODLINESS** to his servants, with which it is not all the exhortations or reproofs he can use will ever do good; or else he pulls down more with his example, than it is possible for him to build

with the other ; and it is madness for a drunken or profane master to expect a sober and godly family.

33. Fourthly, the master is to provide that his servants may not want means of being instructed in their duty, as also that they may daily have constant times of worshipping God publicly, by having prayers in the family ; but of this I have spoken before under the head of Prayer, and therefore shall here say no more of it.

34. Fifthly, the master, in all affairs of his own, is to give reasonable and moderate commands, not laying greater burdens on his servants than they are able to bear, particularly not requiring so much work, that they shall have no time to bestow on their souls ; as on the other side he is not to permit them to live so idly as may make them either useless to him, or may betray themselves to any ill.

35. Sixthly, the master is to give his servants encouragement in well-doing, by using them with that bounty and kindness which their faithfulness, and diligence, and piety deserves ; and finally, in all his dealing with them, he is to remember that himself hath, as the Apostle saith, EPHES. vi. 9, *a Master in heaven*, to whom he must give an account of the usage of his meanest servant on earth. Thus have I briefly run through those several relations to which we owe particular Duty, and so have done with that first branch of Duty to our neighbours, that of Justice.

MEANS OF INSTRUCTION.

MODERATION IN COMMANDS.

ENCOURAGEMENT IN WELL-DOING.

## SUNDAY XVI.

Other Branches of our Duty to our Neighbour. Of Charity to Men's Souls, Bodies, Goods, and Credit.

THE second branch of our Duty to our Neighbours is Charity, or Love. This is the great Gospel-duty so often enjoined us by Christ; the *new commandment*, as himself calls it, JOHN xiii. 34, *that ye love one another*, and this is again repeated twice in one chapter, JOHN xv. 12, 17, and the first epistle of St. John is almost wholly spent in the persuasion of this

CHARITY.

one duty, by which we may see it is no matter of indifference, but most strictly required of all that profess Christ. Indeed himself has given it as the badge and livery of his disciples, JOHN xiii. 35, *By this shall all men know ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.*

This Charity may be considered two ways ; first, in respect of the Affections ; secondly, of the Actions. Charity in the affections is a sincere kindness, which disposes us to wish

IN THE AF-  
FECTIONS.

all good to others, and that in all their capacities, in the same manner that justice obligeth us to wish no hurt to any man, in respect either of his soul, his body, his goods, or his credit ; so this first part of Charity binds us to wish all good to them in all these.

And first for the Soul. If we have any the least spark  
 TO MEN'S SOULS. of Charity, we cannot but wish all good to men's souls ; those precious things which

Christ thought worth the ransoming with

his own blood, may surely well challenge our kindness and good wishes ; and therefore, if we do not thus love one another, we are far from obeying that command of loving as he hath loved ; for it was the souls of men which he loved so tenderly, and both did and suffered so much for. Of this love of his to Souls there are two great and special effects : the first, the purifying them here by his grace ; the second, the making them everlastinglly happy in his glory ; and both these we are so far to copy out in our kindness, as to be earnestly desirous that all men should arrive to that purity and holiness here, which may make them capable of eternal happiness hereafter. It were to be hoped, that none, that himself carried a Soul about him, could be so cruel to that of another man's, as not sincerely to wish this, did not experience show us there are some persons, whose malice is so devilish, as to reach even to the direct contrary ; the wishing not only the sin, but the damnation of others. Thus may you have some, who, in any injury or oppression they suffer, make it their only comfort that their enemies will damn themselves by it ; when alas ! that should to a Christian be much more terrible, than any suffering they could bring upon him. He that is of this temper, is a disciple of Satan, not of Christ, it being directly contrary to the whole scope of that grand Christian precept, of *loving our neighbours as ourselves*. For it is sure, no man that believes there

is such a thing as damnation, wishes it to himself; be he never so fond of the ways that lead to it, yet he wishes that may not be his journey's end; and therefore, by that rule of charity, should as much dread it for his neighbour.

Secondly, We are to wish all good to the bodies of men, all health and welfare; we are generally tender enough of our own bodies, dread the least pain or ill that can befall them: Now Charity, by virtue of the forementioned precept, extends this tenderness to all others: and whatever we apprehend as grievous to ourselves, we must be unwilling should befall another. The like is to be said of the other two, goods and credit, that as we wish our own thriving and reputation, so we should likewise that of others, or else we can never be said to *love our neighbours as ourselves*.

This Charity of the affections, if it be sincere, will certainly have these several effects, which are so inseparable from it, that they are often in Scripture accounted as parts of the duty,

TO THEIR BODIES, GOODS,  
AND CREDIT.  
EFFECTS OF THIS  
CHARITY.

and so most strictly required of us; First, it will keep the mind in a peaceable and meek temper towards others, so far from seeking occasion of contentions, that no provocation shall draw us to it; for where we have kindness we shall be unapt to quarrel, it being one of the special qualities of Charity, that it is *not easily provoked*, 1 Cor. xiii. 5. And therefore whoever is unpeaceable, shows his heart is destitute of this Charity. Secondly, it will breed compassion towards all the miseries of others; every mishap that befalls where we wish well, is a kind of defeat and disaster to ourselves; and therefore, if we wish well to all, we shall be thus concerned in the calamities of all, have a real grief and sorrow to see any in misery, and that according to the proportion of the suffering. Thirdly, it will give us joy in the prosperities of others. Solomon observes, Prov. xiii. 19, that *the desire accomplished is sweet to the soul*; and then whoever has this real desire of his neighbour's welfare, his desire is accomplished in their prosperity, and therefore he cannot but have contentment and satisfaction in it. Both these are together commanded by St. Paul, Rom. xii. 12, *Rejoice with them that rejoice, weep with them that weep*. Fourthly, it will excite and stir up our prayers for others; we are of ourselves impotent, feeble creatures, unable to bestow bless-

ings where we most wish them ; therefore if we do indeed desire the good of others, we must seek it on their behalf from him, whence every *good and perfect gift cometh*, JAMES i. 17. This is so necessary a part of Charity, that without it our kindness is but an insignificant thing, a kind of empty compliment. For how can he be believed to wish well in earnest, who will not thus put life and efficacy into his wishes by forming them into prayers, which will otherwise be vain and fruitless ? The Apostle thought not fit to leave men to their bare wishes, but exhorts that supplications, prayers, and giving of thanks *be made for all men*, 1 TIM. ii. 1, which precept all that have this true charity of the heart, will readily conform to. These severals are so naturally the fruits of this Charity, that it is a deceit for any man to persuade himself he hath it, who cannot produce these fruits to evidence it by.

But there is yet a further excellency of this grace ; it guards **IT CASTS OUT ENVY.** the mind and secures it from several great and dangerous vices ; as first from Envy ; this is by the apostle taught us to be the property of Charity, 1 COR. xiii. 4, *Charity envieth not* ; and indeed common reason may confirm this to us, for envy is a sorrow at the prosperity of another, and therefore must needs be directly contrary to that desire of it which we showed before was the effect of love ; so that if love bear sway in the heart, it will certainly chase out envy. How vainly then do those pretend to this virtue, that are still grudging, and repining at every good hap of others !

Secondly, it keeps down pride and haughtiness. This is **PRIDE.** also taught us by the Apostle in the fore-mentioned place, *charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up* ; and accordingly we find, that where this virtue of love is commanded, there humility is joined with it. Thus it is, COL. iii. 12, *Put on, therefore, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind* : and ROM. xii. 10, *Be kindly affectioned one towards another with brotherly love, in honour preferring one another*, where you see how close an attendant humility is of love. Indeed it naturally flows from it, for love always sets a price and value upon the thing beloved, makes us esteem and prize it ; thus we too constantly find it in self-love, it makes us think highly of ourselves, that we are much more excellent than other men. Now if love thus placed on ourselves beget pride, let us but

divert the course, and turn this love on our brethren, and it will as surely beget humility, for then we should see and value those gifts and excellencies of theirs, which now our pride, or our hatred makes us to overlook and neglect, and not think it reasonable either to despise them, or vaunt and magnify ourselves upon such a comparison ; we should certainly find cause to put the apostle's exhortation in practice, PHIL. ii. 4, That we should *esteem others better than ourselves*. Whoever, therefore, is of so haughty a temper, as to villify and disdain others, may conclude, he hath not this charity rooted in his heart.

Thirdly, it casts out censoriousness and rash judging. Charity, as the apostle saith, 1 COR. xiii. 5, *thinketh no evil*: is not apt to entertain ill CENSORIOUS- conceits of others, but on the contrary, as NESS. it follows, verse 7, *believeth all things, hopeth all things*; that is, it is forward to believe and hope the best of all men ; and surely our own experience tells us the same, for where we love we are usually unapt to discern faults, be they never so gross (witness the great blindness we generally have towards our own) and therefore shall certainly not be like to create them, where they are not, or to aggravate them beyond their true size and degree : and then to what shall we impute those unmerciful censures and rash judgments of others, so frequent among men, but to the want of this charity.

Fourthly, it casts out dissembling and feigned kindness ; where this true and real love is, that false and counterfeit one flies from before it, and DISSEMBLING. this is the love we are commanded to have, such as *is without dissimulation*, ROM. xii. 9. Indeed, where this is rooted in the heart, there can be no possible use of dissimulation ; because this is in truth all that the false one would seem to be, and so is as far beyond it as nature is beyond art ; nay indeed as a divine virtue is beyond a foul sin ; for such is that hypocritical kindness ; and yet it is to be feared, that does too generally usurp the place of this real charity ; the effects of it are too visible among us, there being nothing more common than to see men make large professions to those who, as soon as their backs are turned, they either deride or mischievous.

Fifthly, it casts out all mercenariness, and self-seeking : it is of so noble and generous a temper, that it despises all projectings for gain or advan- SELF-SEEKING.

tage : *Love seeketh not her own*, 1 Cor. xiii. 5. And therefore that huckstering kind of love so much used in the world, which places itself only there, where it may fetch in benefit, is very far from this charity.

Lastly, It turns out of the heart all malice and desire of REVENGE. Revenge, which is so utterly contrary to it, that it is impossible they should both dwell in the same breast ; it is the property of love to *bear all things*, 1 Cor. xiii. 7 ; to endure the greatest injuries, without thought of making any other return to them than prayers and blessings, and therefore the malicious revengeful person is of all others the greatest stranger to this charity.

**THIS CHARITY  
TO BE EXTENDED  
EVEN TO ENEMIES.** It is true, if this virtue were to be exercised but towards some sort of persons, it might consist with malice to others, it being possible for a man that bitterly hates one to love another : but we are to take notice that this Charity must not be so confined, but must extend and stretch itself to all men in the world, particularly to enemies, or else it is not that divine charity commended to us by Christ. The loving of friends and benefactors is so low a pitch, that the very publicans and sinners, the worst of men, were able to attain to it, MATT. v. 46. And therefore it is not counted rewardable in a disciple of Christ ; no, he expects we should soar higher, and therefore hath set us this more spiritual and excellent precept of loving of enemies, MATT. iv. 44, *I say unto you, love your enemies, bless them that curse you, and pray for them that despitefully use you, and persecute you*, and whosoever does not thus, will never be owned by him for a disciple. We are therefore to conclude, that all which hath been said concerning this charity of the affections, must be understood to belong as well to our spitefullest enemy, as our most obliging friend ; but because this is a duty to which the foward nature of man is apt to object much, it will not be amiss to insist a little on some considerations which may enforce it on us.

**MOTIVES THERE-  
UNTO. COM-  
MAND OF  
CHRIST.** And first, consider what hath been already touched on, that it is the command of Christ, both in the texts above mentioned, and multitudes of others ; there being scarce any precept so often repeated in the New Testament, as this of loving and forgiving of our enemies. Thus, EPHES. iv. 32, *Be ye kind one to another,*

*tender-hearted, forgiving one another.* And again, COL. iii. 13, *Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any, even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.* So also, 1 PET. iii. 9, *Not rendering evil for evil, nor railing for railing, but contrariwise blessings.* A whole volume of texts might be brought to this purpose, but these are certainly enough to convince any man, that this is strictly required of us by Christ, and indeed I think, there are few that ever heard of the Gospel, but know it is so. The more prodigiously strange is it, that men that call themselves Christians, should give no degree of obedience to it, nay, not only so, but even publicly avow, and profess the contrary, as we daily see they do, it being ordinary to hear men resolve, and declare that they will not forgive such or such a man, and no consideration of Christ's command can at all move them from their purpose. Certainly these men understand not what is meant by the very word Christian, which signifies a servant and disciple of Christ, and this Charity is the very badge of the one, and lesson of the other: and therefore it is the greatest absurdity and contradiction, to profess themselves Christians, and yet at the same time to resist this so express command of that Christ whom they own as their master. *If I be a master, saith God, where is my fear?* MAL. i. 6. Obedience and reverence are so much the duties of servants, that no man is thought to look on him as a master, to whom he pays them not. *Why call ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things I say?* saith Christ, LUKE vi. 46. The whole world is divided into two great families, Christ's and Satan's, and the obedience each man pays, signifies to which of these masters he belongs; if he obey Christ, to Christ: if Satan, to Satan. Now this sin of malice and revenge is so much the dictate of that wicked spirit, that there is nothing can be a more direct obeying of him: it is the taking his livery on our backs, the proclamation whose servants we are. What ridiculous impudence is it then, for men that have thus entered themselves of Satan's family to pretend to be the servants of Christ! Let such know assuredly, that they shall not be owned by him, but at the great day of account, be turned over to their proper master, to receive their wages in fire and brimstone.

A second consideration is the example of God; this is an argument Christ himself thought fit to use, to impress this duty on us, as you may see, LUKE vi. 35, 36. Where, after

having given the command of loving enemies, he encourages to the practice of it, by telling, that it is that which will make us the *children of the Highest* (that is, it will give us a likeness and resemblance to him, as children have to their parents) *for he is kind to the unthankful and the evil*: and to the same purpose you may read, MATT. v. 45, *He maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust*; and sure this is a most forcible consideration to excite us to this duty. God, we know, is the fountain of perfection, and the being like to him, is the sum of all we can wish for ; and though it was Lucifer's fall, his ambition to be like the Most High, yet had the likeness he affected been only that of holiness and goodness, he might still have been an angel of light. This desire of imitating our Heavenly Father is the especial mark of a child of his. Now this kindness and goodness to enemies is most eminently remarkable in God, and that not only in respect of the temporal mercies, which he indifferently bestows on all, his *sun and rain on the unjust*, as in the text forementioned, but chiefly in his spiritual mercies. We are all by our wicked works, COL. i. 21, *enemies to him*, and the mischief of that enmity would have fallen wholly upon ourselves : God had no motive besides that of his pity to us, to wish a reconciliation ; yet so far was he from returning our enmity, when he might have revenged himself to our eternal ruin, that he designs and contrives how he may bring us to be at peace with him. This is a huge degree of mercy and kindness, but the means he used for effecting this is yet far beyond it, he sent his own Son from heaven to work it, and that not only by persuasions, but sufferings also; so much did he prize us miserable creatures, that he thought us not too dear bought with the blood of his Son. The like example of mercy and patience we have in Christ both *laying down his life for us enemies*, and also in that meek manner of doing it, which we find excellently set forth by the Apostle, 1 PET. ii. 22, 23, 24, and commended to our imitation. Now surely when all this is considered, we may well make St. John's inference; *Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another*, 1 JOHN iv. 11. How shameful a thing is it for us to retain displeasures against our brethren, when God thus lays by his towards us, and that when we have so highly provoked him !

This directs to a third consideration, the comparing our sins against God, with the offences of our brethren against us, which we no sooner shall come to do, but there will appear a vast difference between them, and that in several respects: for first, there is the majesty of the persons against whom we sin, which exceedingly increases the guilt, whereas between man and man, there cannot be so great a distance; for though some men are by God advanced to such eminency of dignity as may make an injury offered to them the greater, yet still they are but men of the same nature with us, whereas he is God blessed for ever. Secondly, there is his sovereignty and power, which is original in God, for we are his creatures, we have received our whole being from him, and therefore are in the deepest manner bound to perfect obedience, whereas all the sovereignty that one man can possibly have over another, is but imparted to them by God, and for the most part there is none of this neither in the case, quarrels being most usual among equals. Thirdly, there is his infinite bounty and goodness to us; all that ever we enjoy, whether in relation to this life or a better being wholly his free gift, and so there is the foulest ingratitude added to our other crimes; in which respect also it is impossible for one man to offend against another in such a degree, for though one may be (and too many are) guilty of unthankfulness towards men, yet because the greatest benefits that man can bestow are infinitely short of those which God doth, the ingratitude cannot be near so great as towards God it is. Lastly, there is the greatness and multitude of our sins against God; which do infinitely exceed all that the most injurious man can do against us; for we all sin much oftener and more heinously against him, than any man, be he never so malicious, can find opportunities of injuring his brethren. This inequality and disproportion our Saviour intimates in the parable, MATT. xviii. where our offences against God are noted by the ten thousand talents, whereas our brethren's against us are described by the hundred pence; a talent hugely outweighs a penny, and ten thousand out-numbers a hundred, yet so and much more does the weight and number of our sins exceed all the offences of others against us: much more might be said to show the vast inequality between the faults which God forgives us; and those we can possibly

THE DISPRO-  
PORTION BE-  
TWEEN OUR  
OFFENCES  
AGAINST GOD,  
AND MEN'S  
AGAINST US.

have to forgive our brethren. But this I suppose may suffice to silence all the objections of cruel and revengeful persons, against this kindness to enemies. They are apt to look upon it as an absurd and unreasonable thing ; but since God himself acts it in so much a higher degree, who can without blasphemy say, it is unreasonable ? If this, or any other spiritual duty appear so to us, we may learn the reason from the apostle, 1 Cor. ii. 14, *The carnal man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness unto him* ; it is the carnality and fleshiness of our hearts that makes it seem so, and therefore, instead of disputing against the duty, let us purge our hearts of that, and then we shall find that true which the spiritual wisdom affirms of her doctrines, Prov. viii. 9, *They are all plain to him that understandeth, and right to them that find knowledge.*

Nay, this loving of enemies is not only a reasonable but a pleasant duty, and that I suppose as a fourth consideration ; there is a great deal of sweet-  
**PLEASANTNESS OF THIS DUTY.** ness and delight to be found in it. Of this I confess none can so well judge as those that have practised it, the nature even of earthly pleasures being such, that it is the enjoyment only that can make a man truly know them. No man can so describe the taste of any delicious thing to another, as that by it he shall know the relish of it ; he must first actually taste of it ; and sure it is no more so in spiritual pleasures ; and therefore he that would fully know the sweet-ness and pleasantness of this duty, let him set to the practice, and then his own experience will be the best informer. But in the mean time, how very unjust, yea, and foolish is it, to pronounce ill of it before trial ! For men to say, this is irksome and intolerable, who never so much as once offered to try whether indeed it were so or no ! Yet by this very means an ill opinion is brought up of this most delightful duty, and passes current among men, whereas in all justice the testimony of it should be taken only from those who have tried it ; and they would certainly give another account of it.

But though the full knowledge hereof be to be had only by this nearer acquaintance, yet methinks even those who look at it but at a distance may discern somewhat of amiableness in it, if no other way, yet at least by comparing it with the uneasiness of its contrary. Malice and revenge are the most restless, tormenting passions that can possess the mind of a man, they keep men in perpetual study and care how

to effect their mischievous purposes, it disturbs their very sleep, as Solomon observes, PROV. iv. 16, *They sleep not except they have done mischief, and their sleep is taken away except they cause some to fall:* yea, it imbitters all the good things they enjoy, so that they have no taste or relish of them. A remarkable example of this we have in Haman, who thought he abounded in all the greatness and felicity of the world, yet the malice he had to a poor despicable man, Mordecai, kept him from tasting contentment in all this, as you may see, ESTHER v. where after he had related to his friends all his prosperities, verse 11, he concludes thus, verse 12, *Yet all this availeth me nothing, so long as I see Mordecai the Jew sitting in the king's gate.* On the other side, the peaceable spirit, that can quietly pass by all injuries and affronts, enjoys a continual calm, and is above the malice of his enemies : for let them do what they can, they cannot rob him of his quiet, he is firm as a rock, which no storms or winds can move, when the furious and revengeful man is like a wave, which the least blast tosses and tumbles from its place. But besides this inward disquiet of revengeful men, they often bring many outward calamities upon themselves, they exasperate their enemies, and provoke them to do them greater mischiefs, nay, oftentimes they willingly run themselves upon the greatest miseries in pursuit of their revenge, to which it is ordinary to see men sacrifice goods, ease, credit, life, nay, soul itself, not caring what they suffer themselves, so they may spite their enemy ; so strangely does this wretched humour besot and blind them. On the contrary, the meek person he often melts his adversary, pacifies his anger : *A soft answer turneth away wrath,* saith Solomon, PROV. xv. 1. And sure there is nothing can tend more to that end ; but if it do happen that his enemy be so inhuman, that he miss of doing that, yet he is still a gainer by all he can suffer. For first, he gains an opportunity of exercising that most Christian grace of charity and forgiveness : and so at once of obeying the command, and imitating the example of his Saviour, which is to a true Christian spirit a most valuable advantage ; and then, secondly, he gains an accession and increase to his reward hereafter. And if it be objected, that that is not to be reckoned in to the present pleasure of the duty, I answer, that the expectation and belief of it is, and that alone is a delight infinitely more ravishing than the present enjoyment of all sensual pleasure can be.

The fourth consideration is, the dangers of not performing this duty ; of which I might reckon up divers, but I shall insist only on that great one, which contains in it all the rest, and that is the forfeiting of our own pardons from God, the having our sins against him kept still on his score and not forgiven. This is a consideration that methinks should affright us into good nature : if it do not, our malice is greater to ourselves than to our enemies. For alas, what hurt is it possible for to do to another which can bear any comparison with that thou dost thyself, in losing the pardon of thy sins ? which is so unspeakable a mischief, that the devil himself with all his malice cannot wish a greater. It is all he aims at, first, that we may sin, and then that those sins may never be pardoned, for then he knows he has us sure enough. Hell and damnation being certainly the portion of every unpardoned sinner, besides all other effects of God's wrath in this life. Consider this, and then tell me what thou hast got by the highest revenge thou ever actedst upon another. It is a devilish phrase in the mouth of men, *that revenge is sweet* : but is it possible there can be (even to the most distemperate palate) any such sweetness in it, as may recompense that everlasting bitterness that attends it ? It is certain no man in his wits can, upon sober judging, imagine there is. But alas, we give not ourselves time to weigh things, but suffer ourselves to be hurried away with the heat of an angry humour, never considering how dear we must pay for it : like the silly bee, that in anger leaves at once her sting and her life behind her ; the sting may perhaps give some short pain to the flesh it sticks in, but yet there is none but discerns the bee has the worst of it, that pays her life for so poor a revenge : so it is in the greatest act of our malice, we may perhaps leave our stings in others, put them to some present trouble, but that compared with the hurt redounds to ourselves by it, is no more than that inconsiderable pain is to death : nay, not so much, because the mischief that we bring upon ourselves are eternal, to which no finite thing can bear any proportion. Remember then, whensoever thou art contriving and plotting a revenge, that thou quite mistakest the mark : thou thinkest to hit the enemy, and, alas, thou woundest thyself to death. And let no man speak peace to himself, or think that these are vain terrors, and that he may obtain pardon from God, though he give

none to his brethren. For he that is truth itself has assured us the contrary, MATT. vi. 15, *If ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.* And lest we should forget the necessity of this duty, he hath inserted it in our daily prayers, where we make it the condition on which we beg pardon from God: *Forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us.* What a heavy curse then does every revengeful person lay upon himself, when he says this prayer! He does in effect beg God not to forgive him; and it is too sure that part of his prayer will be heard: he shall be forgiven just as he forgives, that is, not at all. This is yet farther set out to us in the parable of the Lord and the servant, MATT. xviii. The servant had obtained of his Lord the forgiveness of a vast debt, ten thousand talents, yet was so cruel to his fellow-servant, as to exact a poor trifling sum of a hundred pence, upon which his Lord recalls his former forgiveness, and charges him again with the whole debt: and this Christ applies to our present purpose, verse 35, *So likewise shall my heavenly Father do unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every man his brother their trespasses.* One such act of uncharitableness is able to forfeit us the pardon God hath granted us, and then all our sins return again upon us, and sink us to utter ruin. I suppose it needless to heap up more testimonials of Scripture for the truth of this; these are so clear, as may surely serve to persuade any man, that acknowledges Scripture, of the great and fearful danger of this sin of uncharitableness. The Lord possess all our hearts with such a just sense of it as may make us avoid it.

The last consideration I shall mention, is that of Gratitude. God has showed wonderful mercies to us, Christ has suffered heavy things to bring us into a capacity of that mercy and pardon from God: and shall we not then think ourselves obliged to some returns of thankfulness? If we will take the apostle's judgment, he tells us, 2 Cor. v. 15, *That since Christ died for us all, it is but reasonable that we should not henceforth live unto ourselves, but unto him that died for us.* Indeed were every moment of our life consecrated to his immediate service, it were no more than common gratitude requires, and far less than such inestimable benefits deserve; what a shameful unthankfulness is it then to deny him so poor a satisfaction as this, the forgiving our brethren! Suppose

GRATITUDE TO

GOD

a man that were ransomed either from death or slavery, by the bounty and sufferings of another, should upon his release be charged by him that so freed him, in return of that kindness of his, to forgive some slight debt, which was owing him by some third person, would you not think him the unthankfullest wretch in the world, that should refuse this to so great a benefactor ? Yet such a wretch, and much worse, is every revengeful person : Christ hath bought us out of eternal slavery, and that not with *corruptible things, as silver and gold,* 1 PET. i. 19, *but with his own most precious blood,* and hath earnestly recommended to us the love of our brethren, and that with the most moving arguments, drawn from the greatness of his love to us ; and if we shall obstinately refuse him in so just, so moderate a demand, how unspeakable a vileness is it ! And yet this we do downright, if we keep any malice or grudge to any person whatsoever. Nay, farther, this is not barely an unthankfulness, but there is also joined with it a horrible contempt and despising of him. This peace and unity of brethren was a thing so much prized and valued by him, that when he was to leave the world he thought it the most precious thing he could bequeath, and therefore left it by way of legacy to his disciples, JOHN xiv. 27, *Peace I leave with you.* We use to set a great value on the slightest bequests of our dead friends, to be exceeding careful not to lose them ; and therefore, if we wilfully bangle away this so precious a legacy of Christ, it is a plain sign we want that love and esteem of him, which we have of our earthly friends, and that we despise him as well as his legacy. The great prevailing of this sin of uncharitableness has made me stand thus long on these considerations, for the subduing it. *God grant they may make such impression on the reader, as may be available to that purpose !*

I shall add only this one advice, that these, or whatsoever other remedies against this sin, must be used timely : it is oftentimes the frustrating of bodily medicines, the applying them too late ; and it is much oftener so in spiritual ; there-

**THE FIRST RISING OF RANCOUR  
TO BE SUP-PRESSED.**

fore, if it be possible, let these and the like considerations be so constantly and habitually fixed in thy heart, that they may frame it to such meekness, as may prevent all risings of rancour or revenge in thee, for it is much better they should serve as armour to prevent, than as balsam to cure the wound. But if this passion be

not yet so subdued in thee, but that there will be some stirrings of it, yet then be sure to take it at the very first rise, and let not thy fancy chew, as it were, upon the injury by often rolling it in thy mind, but remember betimes the foregoing considerations, and withal, that this is a time and season of trial to thee, wherein thou mayest show thou hast profited in Christ's school, there now being an opportunity offered thee either of obeying and pleasing God, by passing by this offence of thy brother, or else of obeying and pleasing Satan, that lover of discord, by nourishing hatred against him. Remember this, I say, betimes, before thou be inflamed, for if this fire be thoroughly kindled, it will cast such a smoke as will blind thy reason, and make thee unfit to judge even in this so very plain a case.—Whether it be better, by obeying God, to purchase to thyself eternal bliss, or by obeying Satan, eternal torments. Whereas, if thou put the question to thyself before this commotion and disturbance of mind, it is impossible but thy understanding must pronounce for God; and then unless thou wilt be so perverse that thou wilt deliberately choose death, thou wilt surely practise according to that sentence of thy understanding. I shall add no more on this first part of Charity, that of the Affections.

I proceed now to that of the Actions; and this indeed is it, whereby the former must be approved; we may pretend great charity within, but if none break forth in the actions, we may say of that love, as Saint James doth of the faith he speaks of, *that it is dead*, JAMES ii. 20. It is the loving in deed, that must *approve our hearts before God*, 1 JOHN iii. 18. Now this love in the actions may likewise fitly be distributed, as the former was, in relation to the four distinct capacities of our brethren, their Souls, their Bodies, their Goods, and Credit.

The Soul, I formerly told you, may be considered either in a natural or Spiritual sense, and in both of them Charity binds us to do all the good we can. As the Soul signifies the mind of a man, so we are to endeavour the comfort and refreshment of our brethren, desire to give them all true cause of joy and cheerfulness, especially when we see any under any sadness or heaviness, then to bring out all the cordials we can procure, that is, to labour by all Christian and fit means to cheer the troubled spirits of our brethren, to

CHARITY IN THE  
ACTIONS.

TOWARDS THE  
MIND OF OUR  
NEIGHBOUR.

*comfort them that are in any heaviness,* as the Apostle speaks, 2 Cor. i. 4.

But the Soul, in the spiritual sense, is yet of greater concernment, and the securing of that is a matter of much greater moment, than the refreshing of the mind only, inasmuch as the eternal sorrows and sadness of hell exceed the deepest sorrows of this life ; and therefore, though we must not omit the former, yet on this we are to employ our most zealous charities ; wherein we are not to content ourselves with a bare wishing well to the souls of our brethren : this alone is a sluggish sort of kindness, unworthy of those who are to imitate the great Redeemer of souls, who did and suffered so much in that purchase. No, we must add also our endeavour to make them that we wish them ; to this purpose it were very reasonable to propound to ourselves in all our conversings with others, that one great design of doing some good to their souls. If this purpose were fixed in our minds, we should then discern perhaps many opportunities, which now we overlook, of doing something towards it. The brutish ignorance of one would call upon thee to endeavour his instruction ; the open sin of another, to reprehend and admonish him ; the faint and weak virtue of another, to confirm and encourage him. Every spiritual want of thy brother may give thee some occasion of exercising some part of this Charity : or if thy circumstances be such, that upon sober judging, thou think it vain to attempt any thing thyself, as if either thy meanness, or thy unacquaintedness, or any the like impediment, be like to render thy exhortations fruitless, yet if thou art industrious in thy charity, thou mayest probably find out some other instrument, by whom to do it more successfully. There cannot be a nobler study than how to benefit men's souls, and therefore where the direct means are improper, it is fit we should whet our wits for attaining of others. Indeed it is a shame, we should not as industriously contrive for this great spiritual concernment of others, as we do for every worldly trifling interest of our own ; yet in them we are unwearied, and try one means after another, till we compass our end. But if after all our serious endeavours, the obstinacy of men do not suffer us, or themselves rather, to reap any fruit from them, if all our wooings and entreatings of men to have mercy on their own souls will not work on them, yet be sure to continue still to exhort by thy example. Let thy great care

and tenderness of thy own soul preach to them the value of theirs, and give not over thy compassions to them, but with the prophet, JER. xiii. 17, *Let thy soul weep in secret for them*; and with the Psalmist, *Let rivers of waters run down thine eyes, because they keep not God's law*, PSALM cxix. 136. Yea, with Christ himself, weep over them, *who will not know the things that belong to their peace*, LUKE xix. 42. And when no importunities with them will work, yet even then cease not to importune God for them, that he will draw them to himself. Thus we see Samuel, when he could not dissuade the people from that sinful purpose they were upon, yet he professes notwithstanding, that he will not cease praying for them: nay, he looked on it as so much a duty, that it would be sin for him to omit it. *God forgive*, says he, *that I should sin against the Lord, in ceasing to pray for you*, 1 SAM. xii. 23. Nor shall we need to fear that our prayers will be quite lost, for if they prevail not for those for whom we pour them out, yet however they will return into our own bosoms, PSALM xxxv. 13; we shall be sure not to miss of the reward of that Charity.

In the second place, we are to exercise this active Charity towards the bodies of our neighbours; we are not only to compassionate their pains and miseries, but also to do what we can for their ease and relief. The good Samaritan, LUKE x. had never been proposed as our pattern, had he not as well helped as pitied the wounded man. It is not good wishes, nor nor good words neither, that avail in such cases, as Saint James tells us, *If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, and one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled, notwithstanding ye give him not those things that are needful for the body, what doth it profit?* JAMES ii. 15, 16. No, sure, it profits them nothing in respect of their bodies, and it will profit thee as little in respect of thy soul; it will never be reckoned to thee as a Charity. This relieving of the bodily wants of our brethren, is a thing so strictly required of us, that we find it set down, MATT. xxv., as the especial thing we shall be tried by at the last day, on the omission whereof is grounded that dreadful sentence, verse 41, *Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.* And if it should now be asked what are the particular acts of this kind which we are to perform? I think we cannot better

CHARITY IN RE-  
SPECT OF THE  
BODY.

inform ourselves, for the frequent and ordinary ones, than from this chapter, where are set down these severals : *The giving meat to the hungry, and drink to the thirsty, harbouring the stranger, clothing the naked, and visiting the sick and imprisoned*; by which visiting is meant not a bare coming to see them, but so coming as to comfort and relieve them; for otherwise it will be but like the Levite in the gospel, LUKE x., who came and *looked on the wounded man*, but did no more, which will never be accepted by God. These are common and ordinary exercises of this charity, for which we cannot want frequent opportunities. But besides these there may sometimes, by God's especial providence, fall into our hands occasions of doing other good offices to the bodies of our neighbours; we may sometimes find a wounded man with the Samaritan, and then it is our duty to do as he did; we may sometimes find an innocent person condemned to death, as Susanna was, and then are with Daniel to use all possible endeavour for their deliverances. This case Solomon seems to refer to, PROV. xxiv. 11, *If thou forbear to deliver him that is drawn unto death, and them that are ready to be slain; if thou sayest, Behold, we knew it not; doth not he that pondereth the heart consider? and he that keepeth thy soul, doth not he know it? Shall not he render to every man according to his deeds?* We are not lightly to put off the matter with vain excuses but to remember that God, who knows our most secret thoughts, will severely examine, whether we have willingly omitted the performance of such a charity: sometimes again (nay, God knows, often now-a-days) we may see a man that by a course of intemperance is in danger to destroy his health, to shorten his days, and then it is a due charity not only to the soul, but to the body also, to endeavour to draw him from it. It is impossible to set down all the possible acts of this corporal charity, because there may sometimes happen such opportunities as none can foresee; we are therefore always to carry about us a serious resolution of doing whatever good of this kind we shall at any time discern occasion for, and then whenever that occasion is offered, we are to look on it as a call, as it were from Heaven, to put that resolution in practice. This part of charity seems to be so much implanted in our natures, as we are men, that we generally account them not only unchristian, but inhuman, that are void of it; and therefore I hope there will not need much persuasion to

it, since our very nature inclines us : but certainly that very consideration will serve hugely to increase the guilt of those that are wanting in it ; for since this command is so agreeable even to flesh and blood, our disobedience to it can proceed from nothing but a stubbornness and resistance against God who gives it.

---

## SUNDAY XVII.

Of Charity, Alms-giving, &c. Of Charity in respect of our Neighbour's Credit, &c. Of Peacemaking. Of going to Law. Of Charity to our Enemies, &c.

THE third way of expressing this Charity is towards the Goods or Estate of our neighbour ; we are to endeavour his thriving and prosperity in these outward good things ; and to that end, be willing to assist and further him in all honest ways of improving or preserving them, by any neighbourly and friendly office : opportunities of this do many times fall out. A man may sometimes by his power or persuasion deliver his neighbour's goods out of the hands of a thief or oppressor ; sometimes again by his advice and counsel, he may set him in a way of thriving, or turn him from some ruinous course ; and many other occasions there may be of doing good turns to another, without any loss or damage to ourselves : and then we are to do them, even to our rich neighbours, those that are as wealthy (perhaps much more so) as ourselves : for though Charity do not bind us to give to those that want less than ourselves, yet whenever we can further their profit without lessening our own store, it requires it of us. Nay, if the damage be but light to us in comparison of the advantage to him, it will become us rather to hazard that light damage than lose him that greater advantage.

2. But towards our poor brother, Charity ties us to much more ; we are there only to consider the supplying of his wants, and not to stick at parting with what is our own to relieve him, but as far as we are able give freely what is necessary to him. This duty of alms-giving is perfectly necessary for

CHARITY IN  
RESPECT OF THE  
GOODS.

TOWARDS THE  
RICH.

TOWARDS THE  
POOR.

the approving our love not only to men, but even to God himself, as St. John tells us, 1 JOHN iii. 17, *Whoso hath this world's goods, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?* It is vain for him to pretend to love either God or man, who loves his money so much better, that he will see his poor brother (who is a man, and bears the image of God) suffer all extremities, rather than part with any thing to relieve him. On the other side, the performance of this duty is highly acceptable with God as well as with men.

3. It is called, HEB. xiii. 16, *a sacrifice wherewith God is well pleased*; and again, PHIL. iv. 18, St Paul calls their alms to him, *a sacrifice acceptable, well-pleasing to God*; and the Church hath always looked on it as such, and therefore joined it with the solemnest part of worship, the holy sacrament. But because even sacrifices themselves under the law were often made unacceptable by being maimed, and blemished, it will here be necessary to inquire what are the due qualifications of this sacrifice.

4. Of these there are some that respect the motive, some  
 MOTIVES OF the manner of our giving. The motive may  
 ALMS-GIVING. be threefold, respecting God, our neighbour,  
 and ourselves. That which respects God  
 is obedience and thankfulness to him: he has commanded  
 we should give alms, and therefore one special end of our  
 doing so, must be the obeying that precept of his. And it  
 is from his bounty alone that we receive all our plenty, and  
 this is the properest way of expressing our thankfulness for  
 it, for, as the Psalmist saith, *our goodness extendeth not unto  
 God*, PSALM xvi. 2. That tribute which we desire to pay  
 out of our estates, we cannot pay to his person. It is the  
 poor that are, as it were, his proxy and receivers, and there-  
 fore whatever we should by way of thankfulness give back  
 again unto God, our alms is the way of doing it. Secondly,  
 in respect of our neighbour, the motive must be a true love  
 and compassion to him, a tender fellow-feeling of his wants,  
 and desire of his comfort and relief. Thirdly, in respect of  
 ourselves, the motive is to be the hope of that eternal reward  
 promised to this performance. This Christ points out to us,  
 when he bids us *lay up our treasure in heaven*, MATT. vi.  
 20; and to make us friends of the mammon of unrighteous-  
 ness, that they may receive us into everlasting habitations,

LUKE xvi. 9 : that is, by a charitable dispensing of our temporal goods to the poor, to lay up a stock in heaven, to gain a title to those endless felicities which God hath promised to the charitable. That is the harvest we must expect of what we sow in these works of mercy, which will be so rich as would abundantly recompense us, though we should, as the Apostle speaks, 1 COR. xiii. 3, *bestow all our goods to feed the poor.* But then we must be sure we make this our sole aim, and not, instead of this, propose to ourselves the praise of men, as the motive of our charity, that will rob us of the other ; this is expressly told us by Christ, MATT. vi. They that set their hearts on the credit they shall gain with men, must take that as their portion, ver. 2, *Verily I say unto you, they have their reward ;* they choose, it seems, rather to have men their paymasters than God, and to them they are turned off ; that little airy praise they get from them, is all the reward they must expect: *Ye have no reward of my Father which is in heaven*, ver. 1. We have, therefore, need to watch our hearts narrowly, that this desire of vain-glory steal not it, and befool us into that miserable exchange of a vain blast of men's breath for those substantial and eternal joys of heaven.

5. In the second place, we must take care of our Alms-giving, in respect of the manner ; and in that, first, we must give cheerfully. Men usually value a small thing that is given cheerfully, and with a good heart, more than a much greater, that is wrung from a man with grudging and unwillingness ; and God is of the same mind, he loves a cheerful giver, 2 COR. ix. 7, which the apostle makes the reason of the foregoing exhortation, of not giving grudgingly, or as of necessity, ver. 6. And sure it is no unreasonable thing, that is herein required of us, there being no duty that has to human nature more of pleasure and delight, unless it be where covetousness or cruelty have quite worked out the man, and put a ravenous beast in his stead. Is it not a most ravishing pleasure to him that hath any bowels, to see the joy that a seasonable alms brings to a poor wretch ? How it revives and puts new spirits in him that was even sinking ? Certainly the most sensual creature alive knows not how to bestow his money on any thing that shall bring him in so great a delight, and therefore methinks it should be no hard matter to give not only without

MANNER OF  
ALMS-GIVING.

CHEERFULLY.

grudging, but even with a great deal of alacrity and cheerfulness, it being the fetching in of pleasure to ourselves.

6. There is but one objection can be made against this,

THE FEAR OF  
IMPOVERISHING  
OURSELVES BY  
IT, VAIN AND  
IMPIOUS.

and that is, that the danger of impoverishing one's self by what one gives, may take off that pleasure, and make men either not give at all, or not so cheerfully. To this I answer : That first, were this hazard never so apparent, yet it being the command

of God that we shall thus give, we are yet to obey cheerfully, and be as well content to part with our goods in pursuance of this duty, as we are many times called to do upon some other. In which case Christ tells us, *He that forsakes not all that he hath cannot be his disciple.*

7. But secondly, this is sure a vain supposition, God having particularly promised the contrary to the charitable ; that it shall bring blessings on them, even in these outward things. *The liberal soul shall be made fat, and he that watereth shall be watered also himself, Prov. xi. 25. He that giveth to the poor shall not lack, Prov. xxviii. 27.* And many the like texts there are, so that one may truly say, this objection is grounded in direct unbelief. The short of it is, we dare not trust God for this. Giving to the poor is directly the putting our wealth into his hands ; *He that giveth to the poor lendeth unto the Lord, Prov. xix. 17,* and that too on solemn promise of repayment, as it follows in that verse, *That which he hath given will he pay him again.* It is amongst men thought a great disparagement, when we refuse to trust them ; it shows we either think them not sufficient or not honest. How vile an affront is it then to God thus to distrust him ! Nay, indeed, how horrid blasphemy, to doubt the security of that for which he has thus expressly passed his word, who is Lord of all, and therefore cannot be insufficient, and who is the God of truth, and therefore will not fail to make good his promise ! Let not then that infidel fear of future want, contract and shut up thy bowels from thy poor brother ; for though he be never likely to pay thee, yet God becomes his surety, and enters bond with him, and will most assuredly pay thee with increase. Therefore it is so far from being damage to thee thus to give, that it is thy great advantage. Any man would rather choose to put his money in some sure hand, where he may both improve, and be certain of it at his need, than to let it lie unprofitable by

him, especially if he be in dangers of thieves or other accidents by which he may probably lose it. Now, alas, all that we possess is in minutely danger of losing ; innumerable accidents there are, which may in an instant bring a rich man to beggary ; he that doubts this, let him but read the story of Job, and he will there find an example of it. And therefore what so prudent course can we take for our wealth as to put it out of the reach of those accidents, by thus lending it to God, where we may be sure to find it ready at our greatest need, and that too with improvement and increase ? In which respect it is that the apostle compares alms to seed, 2 COR. ix. 10. We know it is the nature of seed that is sown to multiply and increase, and so do all our acts of mercy, they return not single and naked to us, but bring in their sheaves with them, a most plenteous and bountiful harvest. God deals not with our alms as we too often do with his graces, wrap them up in a napkin, so that they shall never bring in any advantage to us, but makes us most rich returns : and therefore we have all reason most cheerfully, yea, joyfully to set to this duty, which we have such invitations to, as well in respect of our own interests as our neighbour's needs.

8. Secondly, We must give seasonably : it is true indeed there are some so poor, that an alms can never come unseasonably, because they always want, yet even to them there may be some special seasons of doing it to their greater advantage ; for sometimes an alms may not only deliver a poor man from some present extremity, but, by the right timing of it, may set him in some way of a more comfortable subsistence afterward. And for the most, I presume it is a good rule, to dispense what we intend to any, as soon as may be, for delays are hurtful oftentimes both to them and ourselves ; first, as to them, it is sure the longer we delay, the longer they groan under the present want ; and after we have designed them a relief, it is in some degree a cruelty to defer bestowing of it, for so long we prolong their sufferings. You will think him a hard-hearted physician, that having a certain cure for a man in pain, should, when he might presently apply it, make unnecessary delays, and so keep the poor man still in torture ; and the same it is here ; we want of the due compassion, if we can be content our poor brother should have one hour of unnecessary suffering, when we have present opportunity of relieving him ; or if he be not in such an extremity of want,

GIVE SEASON-  
ABLY.

yet whatever we intend him for his greater comfort, he loses so much of it as the time of the delay amounts to. Secondly, in respect of ourselves, it is ill to defer ; for thereby we give advantage to the temptations either of Satan or our own covetous humour to dissuade us from it. Thus it fares too often with many Christian duties : for want of a speedy execution, our purposes cool, and never come to act ; so many resolve they will repent, but because they set not immediately upon it, one delay succeeds another, and keeps them from ever doing it at all ; and so it is very apt to fall out in this case, especially with men who are of a covetous temper, and therefore they of all others should not trust themselves thus to delay.

9. Thirdly, We should take care to give prudently, that is, to give most where it is most needed,  
**PRUDENTLY.** and in such a manner as may do the receiver most good. Charities do often miscarry for want of this care, for if we give at all adventures to all that seem to want, we may sometimes give more to those whose sloth and lewdness is the cause of their want, than to those who best deserve it, and so both encourage the one in their idleness, and disable ourselves from giving to the other. Yet I doubt not such may be the present wants even of the most unworthy, that we are to relieve them ; but where no such pressing need is, we shall do best to choose out the fitter objects of charity, such as are those who either are not able to labour, or else have a greater charge than their labour can maintain, and to those our alms should be given also in such a manner as may be most likely to do them good : the manner of which may differ according to the circumstances of their condition ; it may to some be best, perhaps, to give them by little and little ; to others the giving it all at once may tend more to their benefit ; and sometimes a seasonable loan may do as well as a gift, and that may be in the power sometimes of those who are able to give but little : but when we thus lend on charity, we must lend freely without use, and also with a purpose that if he should prove unable to pay, we will forgive so much of the principal as his needs require and our abilities will permit. They want much of this charity who clap up poor debtors in prison, when they know they have nothing to answer the debt, which is a great cruelty, to make another miserable when nothing is gained to ourselves by it.

10. Fourthly, We should give liberally, we must not be

strait-handed in our alms, and give by such pitiful scantlings as will bring almost no relief to the receiver, for that is a kind of mockery ; it is as if one should pretend to feed one that is almost famished, by giving him a crumb of bread ; such doles as that would be most ridiculous, yet I fear it is too near the proportion of some men's alms ; such men are below those disciples we read of, who knew only the baptism of John, for it is to be observed, that John Baptist, who was but the forerunner of Christ, makes it a special part of his doctrine, that he *that hath two coats should impart to him that hath none*, LUKE iii. 11. He says not, he that hath some great wardrobe, but even he that hath but two coats must part with one of them ; from whence we may gather, that whatsoever is above (not our vanity, but) our needs should thus be disposed of when our brethren's necessity requires it. But if we look into the first time of the Gospel, we shall find Christianity far exceeded this proportion of John's ; the converts assigned not a part only, but frankly *gave all to the use of the brethren*, ACTS iv. And though that being upon an extraordinary occasion, will be no measure of our constant practice, yet it may show us how prime and fundamental a part of Christianity this of charity is, that at the very first founding of the church such vast degrees of it were practised ; and if we farther consider what precepts of love are given us in the Gospel, even to the *laying down our lives for the brethren*, 1 JOHN iii. 16, we cannot imagine our goods are in God's account so much more precious than our lives, that he would command us to be prodigal of the one, and yet allow us to be sparing of the other.

11. A multitude of arguments might be brought to recommend this bounty to all that profess Christ ; I shall mention only two, which I find used by St. Paul to the Corinthians on this occasion. The first is the example of Christ, 2 COR. viii. 9, *For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, who though he was rich, yet for our sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich.* Christ emptied himself of all that glory and greatness he enjoyed in Heaven with his Father, and submitted himself to a life of much meanness and poverty, only to enrich us. And therefore, for shame, let us not grudge to empty our coffers, to lessen somewhat of our heaps, to relieve his poor members. The second, is the expectation of reward, which will be more or less, according to the degrees of our alms, 2 COR. ix. 6, *He*

*that soweth sparingly shall reap sparingly, and he that soweth bountifully shall reap bountifully.* We think him a very improvident husbandman that, to save a little seed at present, sows so thin as to spoil his crop ; and the same folly it will be in us, if by the sparingness of our alms we make ourselves a lank harvest hereafter, lose either all or a great part of those rewards which God hath provided for the liberal alms-giver. What is the proportion which may be called a liberal giving, I shall not undertake to set down, there being degrees even in liberality ; one may give liberally, and yet another give more liberally than he ; besides, liberality is to be measured, not so much by what is given as by the ability of the giver. A man of a mean estate may give less than one of a great, and yet be the more liberal person, because that little may be more out of his than the greater is out of the other's. Thus we see Christ pronounces the poor widow to *have given much more to the treasury than all the rich men*, LUKE xxi. 3 ; not that her two mites were more than their rich gifts, but that it was more for her, she having left nothing behind, whereas they gave out of their abundance what they might easily spare. Every man must herein judge for himself ; we see the Apostle, though he earnestly press the Corinthians to bounty, yet prescribes not to them how much they shall give, but leaves that to their own breasts, 2 COR. ix. 7, *Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give.* But let us still remember that the more we give (provided we do not thereby fail in the support of those that most immediately depend on us), the more acceptable it will be to God, and the more rewardable by him. And to secure the performance of the duty of alms-giving (whatever the proportion be), we may do very well to follow the advice St. Paul gives the Corinthians in this matter, 1 COR. xvi. 2, *Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store as God hath prospered him.* If men will do thus, lay by somewhat weekly, in store for this work of charity, it were the surest way not to be unprovided of somewhat to give when an occasion offered itself, and by giving so by little and little the expense would become less sensible, and so be a means to prevent those grudgings and repinings, which are apt to attend men in greater disbursements ; and sure this were in other respects also a very proper course, for when a tradesman casts up his weekly account and sees what his gains have been, it is

of all others the most seasonable time to offer this tribute to God out of what he hath by his blessing gained. If any will say they cannot so well weekly reckon their gains, as by longer spaces of time, I shall not contend with them for that precise time, let it be done monthly or quarterly, so it be done. But that somewhat should still be laid by in bank for these uses, rather than left loose to our sudden charities, is sure very expedient; and I doubt not, whoever will make trial of it, will upon experience acknowledge it to be so.

12. The fourth exercise of our Charity is towards the Credit of our neighbour; and of this we may have many occasions; sometimes towards the innocent, and sometimes also towards the guilty. If one whom we know

CHARITY IN  
RESPECT OF THE  
CREDIT.

to be an innocent person be slandered and traduced, Charity binds us to do what we may for the declaring his innocence, and delivering him from that false imputation, and that not only by witnessing when we are called to it, but by a voluntary offering our testimony on his behalf; or if the accusation be not before a court of justice, and so there be no place for that our more solemn testimony, but that it be only a slander tossed from one to another, yet even there we are to do what we can to clear him, by taking all occasions publicly to declare what we know of his innocence. But even to the guilty there is some Charity of this kind to be performed, sometimes by concealing the fault, if it be such that no other part of Charity to others make it necessary to discover it, or it be not so notorious as that it will be sure to betray itself. The wounds of reputation are of all others the most incurable, and therefore it may well become Christian Charity to prevent them, even where they have been deserved; and perhaps such a tenderness in hiding the fault may sooner bring the offender to repentance, if it be seconded (as it ought to be) with all earnestness of private admonition: but if the fault be such that it be not to be concealed, yet still there may be place for this Charity in extenuating and lessening it as far as the circumstances will bear: as if it were done suddenly and rashly, Charity will allow some abatement of the censure, which would belong to a designed and deliberate act; and so proportionably in other circumstances. But the most frequent exercises of this charity happen towards those of whose either innocence or guilt we have no knowledge, but are by some doubtful actions brought under suspi-

cion : and here we must remember, that it is the property of love not to think evil, to judge the best ; and therefore we are both to abstain from uncharitable conclusions of them ourselves, and as much as lies in us to keep others from them also, and so endeavour to preserve the credit of our neighbour ; which is oftentimes as much shaken by unjust suspicions, as it would be by the truest accusations. To these cases, I suppose belongs that precept of Christ, MATT. vii. 1, *Judge not* ; and when we consider how that is backed in the following words, *that ye be not judged*, we shall have cause to believe it no such light matter as the world seems to account it ; our merciful judging of others will be paid home to us, in the strict and severe judgment of God.

13. I have now gone through this Active Charity as it relates to the four several capacities of our brethren, many of the particulars whereof were before briefly mentioned when we spake of Justice. If any think it improper that the same Acts should be made part of

Justice and Charity too, I shall desire them

to consider that Charity being by Christ's command become a debt to our brethren, all the parts of it may in that respect be ranked under the head of Justice, since it is sure paying of debts is a part of that : yet because in our common use we do distinguish between the offices of Justice and Charity, I have chosen to enlarge on them in particular reference to Charity. But I desire it may still be remembered that whatsoever is under precept, is so much a due from us, that we sin not only against Charity, but Justice too if we neglect it ; which deserves to be considered the more to stir up our care to the performance, and the rather because there seems to be a common error in this point. Men look upon their Acts of mercy as things purely voluntary, that they have no obligation to ; and the effect of it is this, that they are apt to think very highly of themselves when they have performed any, though never so mean, but never blame themselves, though they omit all : which is a very dangerous, but withal a very natural fruit of the former persuasions. If there be any Charities wherein Justice is not concerned, they are those which for the height and degrees of them are not made matter of strict duty, that is, are not in those degrees commanded by God : and even after these, it will be very reasonable for us to labour ; but that cannot be done without taking

THE ACTS OF  
CHARITY, IN  
SOME RESPECTS  
ACTS OF JUS-  
TICE ALSO.

the lower and necessary degrees in our way ; and therefore let our first care be for them.

14. To help us wherein there will be no better means than to keep before our eyes that grand rule of *Loving our Neighbours as ourselves*: this the Apostle makes the sum of our whole duty to our neighbours, ROM. xiii. 9.

THE GREAT  
RULE OF  
CHARITY.

Let this therefore be the standard whereby to measure all thy actions which relate to others : whenever any necessity of thy neighbours presents itself to thee, ask thyself whether, if thou wert in the like case, thy love to thyself would not make thee industrious for relief, and then resolve thy love to thy neighbour must have the same effect with him. This is that royal law, as St. James calls it, JAMES ii. 8, which all that profess themselves subjects to Christ must be ruled by ; and whosoever is so will not fail of performing all charities to others, because it is sure he would upon the like occasions have all such performed to himself. There is none but wishes to have his good name defended, his poverty relieved, his bodily suffering succoured ; only it may be said that in the spiritual wants there are some so careless of themselves that they wish no supply, they desire no reproofs, no instructions, nay, are angry when they are given them ; it may therefore seem that such men are not by virtue of this rule tied to those sorts of Charities. To this I answer, That the love of ourselves, which is here set as the measure of that to our neighbour, is to be understood to be that reasonable love which men ought to have, and therefore, though a man fail of that due love he owes himself, yet his neighbour hath not thereby forfeited his right ; he has still a claim to such a degree of our love, as is answerable to that which in right we should bear to ourselves, and such, I am sure, is this care of our spiritual estate, and therefore it is not our despising our own souls that will absolve us from Charity to other men's : yet I shall not much press this duty in such men, it being neither likely that they will be persuaded to it, or do any good by it ; their ill example will overwhelm all their good exhortations, and make them unfruitful.

15. There is yet one Act of Charity behind, which does not properly fall under any one of the former heads, and yet may relate to them all, and that is the making peace and amity among others : by doing whereof we may much benefit both the souls, bodies,

PEACE-MAKING.

goods, and credit of our brethren ; for all these are in danger by strife and contention. The reconciling of enemies is a most blessed work, and brings a blessing on the actors ; we have Christ's word for it, *Blessed are the peace-makers*, MATT. v. 9 ; and therefore we may be encouraged diligently to lay hold of all opportunities of doing this office of Charity, to use all our art and endeavour to take up all grudges and quarrels we discern among others ; neither must we only labour to restore peace where it is lost, but to preserve it where it is : First, generally, by striving to beget in the hearts of all we converse with a true value of that most precious jewel, Peace ; Secondly, particularly, by a timely prevention of those jars and unkindnesses we see likely to fall out. It may many times be in the power of a discreet friend or neighbour to cure those mistakes and misapprehensions, which are the first beginnings of quarrels and contentions ; and it will be both more easy and more profitable thus to prevent than pacify strifes. It is sure it is more easy, for when a quarrel is once broken out, it is like a violent flame which cannot so soon be quenched as it might have been whilst it was but a smothering fire. And then it is also more profitable, for it prevents many sins, which in the progress of an open contention are almost sure to be committed. Solomon says, *In the multitude of words there wanteth not sin*, PROV. x. 19, which cannot more truly be said of any sorts of words than those that pass in anger, and then, though the quarrel be afterwards composed, yet those sins will still remain on their account ; and therefore it is a great Charity to prevent them.

#### 16. But to fit a man for this so excellent an office of Peace-making,

**HE THAT UN-DERTAKES IT  
MUST BE PEACE-ABLE HIMSELF.**

it is necessary that he be first remarkably peaceable himself ; for with what face canst thou persuade others to that which thou wilt not perform thyself ? Or how canst thou expect thy persuasions should work ? It will be a ready reply in every man's mouth, *Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye*, MATT. vii. 5 ; and therefore be sure thou qualify thyself for the work. There is one point of peaceableness which seems to be little regarded among men, and that is in the case of Legal trespasses ; men think it nothing to go to law about

**OF GOING TO  
LAW.**

every petty trifle, and as long as they have but law on their side never think they are to blame : but sure, had we that true peaceableness of spirit which we ought, we should be unwilling for such slight matters to trouble and disquiet our neighbours. Not that all going to law is utterly unchristian, but such kind of suits especially, as are upon contentiousness and stoutness of humour to defend such an inconsiderable right, as the parting with will do us little or no harm, or, which is yet worse, to avenge such a trespass. And even in great matters, he shall part with somewhat of his right for love of peace, does surely the most christianly, and most agreeably to the advice of the Apostle, 1 Cor. vi. 7, *Rather to take wrong, and suffer ourselves to be defrauded.* But if the damage be so unsupportable that it is necessary for us to go to law, yet even then we must take care of preserving peace ; first, by carrying still a friendly and Christian temper towards the party, not suffering our hearts to be at all estranged from him ; secondly, by being willing to yield to any reasonable terms of agreement whenever they shall be offered ; and truly if we carry not this temper of mind in our suits, I see not how they can be reconcileable with that peaceableness so strictly required of all Christians. Let those consider this who make it their pleasure themselves to disquiet their neighbour, or their trade to stir up others to do it. This tender regard of peace both in ourselves and others, is absolutely necessary to be entertained of all those who own themselves to be the servants of him, whose title it is to be the *Prince of Peace*, Isa. ix. 6.

17. All that remains to be touched on concerning this Charity of the Actions is the extent of it, THIS CHARITY  
OF THE ACTIONS  
MUST REACH TO  
ENEMIES. which must be as large as the former of the affections, even to the taking in, not only strangers, and those of no relation to us, but even of our bitterest enemies. I have already spoken so much of the obligation we are under to forgive them, that I shall not here say any thing of that, but that being supposed a duty, it will sure then appear no unreasonable thing to proceed one step further, by doing them good turns ; for when we have once forgiven them, we can then no longer account them enemies, and so it will be no hard matter even to flesh and blood to do all kind things to them. And indeed this is the way by which we must try

the sincerity of our forgiveness. It is easy to say, I forgive such a man ; but if when an opportunity of doing him good is offered, thou declinest it, it is apparent there yet lurks the old malice in thy heart : where there is a thorough forgiveness, there will be as great a readiness to benefit an enemy as a friend ; nay, perhaps in some respects a greater, a true charitable person looking upon it as an especial prize, when he has an opportunity of evidencing the truth of his reconciliation, and obeying the precept of his Saviour, by *doing good to them that hate him*, MATT. v. 44. Let us therefore resolve that all actions of kindness are to be performed to our enemies, for which we have not only the command, but also the example of Christ, who had not only some inward relentings towards us his obstinate and most provoking enemies, but showed it in acts, and those no cheap or easy ones, but such as cost him his dearest blood. And surely we can never pretend to be either obeyers of his command, or followers of his example, if we grudge to testify our loves to our enemies by those so much cheaper ways *of feeding them in hunger*, and the like, recommended to us by the Apostle, ROM. xii. 20. But if we could perform these acts of kindness to enemies in such manner as might draw them from their enmity, and win them to peace, the Charity would be doubled ; and this we should aim at, for that we see the Apostle sets as the end of the forementioned acts of feeding, &c. that we may *heap coals of fire on their heads*, not coals to burn, but to melt them into all love and tenderness towards us ; and this were indeed the most complete way of imitating Christ's example, who in all he did and suffered for us, designed the reconciling of us to himself.

18. I have now showed you the several parts of our duty  
SELF-LOVE A to our neighbour, towards the performance  
HINDRANCE TO whereof I know nothing more necessary  
THIS CHARITY. than the turning out of our hearts that self-love which so often possesses them ; and that so wholly, that it leaves no room for Charity, nay, nor Justice neither to our neighbour. By this self-love I mean not that true love of ourselves, which is the love and care of our souls (for that would certainly help, not hinder us in this duty), but I mean that immoderate love of our own worldly interests and advantages, which is apparently the root of all both injustice and uncharitableness towards others. We

find this sin of self-love set by the Apostle in the head of a whole troop of sins, 2 TIM. iii. 2, as if it were some principal officer in Satan's camp; and certainly not without reason, for it never goes without an accursed train of many other sins, which like the dragon's tail, REV. xii. 4, sweeps away all care of duty to others. We are by it made so vehement and intent upon the pleasing ourselves, that we have no regard to any body else contrary to the direction of St. Paul, ROM. xv. 2, which is not to please ourselves, *but every man to please his neighbour for his good to edification*; which he backs with the example of Christ, ver. 3, *For even Christ pleased not himself*. If, therefore, we have any sincere desire to have this virtue of Charity rooted in our hearts, we must be careful to weed out this sin of self-love, for it is impossible they can prosper together.

19. But when we have removed this hindrance we must remember that this, as all other graces, proceeds not from ourselves, it is the gift of God; and, therefore, we must earnestly pray to him to work it in us, to send his Holy Spirit, which once appeared in the form of a Dove, a meek and gall-less creature, to frame our hearts to the same temper, and enable us rightly to perform this duty.

20. I HAVE now passed through those several branches I at first proposed and showed you what is our Duty to God, Ourselves, and our Neighbour: Of which I may say as it is, LUKE x. 28, *This do, and thou shalt live*. And surely it is no impossible task to perform this in such a measure as God will graciously accept, that is, in sincerity, though not in perfection, for God is not that austere master, LUKE xix. 22, *that reaps where he has not sowed*; he requires nothing of us, which he is not ready by his grace to enable us to perform, if we be not wanting to ourselves, either in asking it by prayer, or in using it by diligence. And as it is not impossible, so neither is it such a sad melancholy task as men are apt to think it. It is a special policy of Satan's to do as the spies did, NUMB. xiii. 32, *bring up an ill report upon this good land*, this state of Christian life, thereby to discourage us from entering into it, to fright us with I know not what giants we shall meet with;

PRAYER A  
MEANS TO PRO-  
CURE IT.

CHRISTIAN  
DUTIES BOTH  
POSSIBLE AND  
PLEASANT.

but let us not thus be cheated, let us but take the courage to try, and we shall indeed find it a Canaan, *a land flowing with milk and honey*. God is not in this respect to his people *a wilderness, a land of darkness*, JER. ii. 31. His service does not bereave men of any true joy, but helps them to a great deal: Christ's yoke is an easy, nay, a pleasant yoke, his burden a light, yea, a gracious burden. There is in the practice of Christian duties a great deal of pleasant pleasure, and if we feel it not, it is because of the resistance our vicious and sinful customs make, which by the contention raises an uneasiness. But then first, that is to be charged only on ourselves, for having got those ill customs, and thereby made that hard to us, which in itself is most pleasant, the duties are not to be accused for it. And then, secondly, even there the pleasure of subduing those ill habits, overcoming those corrupt customs, is such, as hugely outweigheth all the trouble of the combat.

21. But it will perhaps be said that some parts of piety  
EVEN WHEN are of such a nature as will be very apt to  
THEY EXPOSE US expose us to persecutions and sufferings in  
TO OUTWARD the world, and that those are not joyous but  
SUFFERINGS. grievous.

I answer, that even in those there is matter of joy. We see the Apostles thought it so; *They rejoiced that they were counted worthy to suffer for Christ's name*, ACTS v. 41; and St. Peter tells us, *that if any suffer as a Christian, he is to glorify God for it*, 1 PET. iv. 16. There is such a force and virtue in the testimony of a good conscience, as is able to change the greatest suffering into the greatest triumph, and that testimony we can never have more clear and lively than when we suffer for righteousness' sake; so that you see Christianity is very amiable even in its saddest dress; the inward comforts of it do far surpass all the outward tribulations that attend it, and that even in the instant, while we are in the state of warfare upon earth. But then if we look forward to the crown of our victories, those eternal rewards in heaven, we can never think those tasks sad, though we had nothing at present to sweeten them, that have such recompenses await them at the end; were our labours never so heavy, we could have no cause to faint under them. Let us, therefore, whenever we meet with any discouragement in our course, fix our eye on this rich prize,

and then *run with patience the race which is set before us*, HEB. xii. 1. Follow the Captain of our salvation through the greatest sufferings, yea, even through the same red sea of blood which he hath waded, whenever our obedience to him shall require it; for though our fidelity to him should bring us to death itself, we are sure to be no losers by it, for to such he hath promised a crown of life, the very expectation whereof is able to keep a Christian more cheerful in his fetters and dungeon, than a worldling can be in the midst of his greatest prosperities.

22. All that remains for me farther to add, is earnestly to entreat and beseech the reader, that without delay, he put himself into this so pleasant and gainful a course, by setting sincerely to the practice of all those things, which either by this book, or by any other means, he descerns to be his duty; and the further he hath formerly gone out of his way, the more haste it concerns him to make to get into it, and to use the more diligence in walking in it. He that hath a long journey to go, and finds he hath lost a great part of his day in a wrong way, will not need much entreaty either to turn into the right, or to quicken his pace in it. And this is the case of all those that have lived in any course of sin; they are in a wrong road, which will never bring them to the place they aim at, nay, which will certainly bring them to the place they most fear and abhor. Much of their day is spent, how much will be left to finish their journey in, none knows; perhaps the next hour, the next minute, the night of death may overtake them: what a madness is it then for them to defer one moment to turn out of that path which leads to certain destruction, and to put themselves in that which will bring them to bliss and glory! Yet so are men bewitched and enchanted with the deceitfulness of sin, that no entreaty, no persuasion can prevail with them, to make this so reasonable, no necessary a change; not but that they acknowledge it needful to be done, but they are unwilling to do it yet; they would enjoy all the pleasures of sin as long as they live, and then they hope at their death, or some little time before it, to do all the business of their souls. But, alas! Heaven is too high to be thus jumped into; the way to it is a long and leisurely ascent, which requires time to walk. The hazards of such deferring

THE DANGER  
OF DELAYING  
OUR TURNING  
TO GOD.

are more largely spoken of in the Discourse of Repentance : I shall not here repeat them, but desire the reader seriously to lay them to heart, and then surely he will think it seasonable counsel that is given by the wise man, ECCLUS. v. 7, *Make no tarrying to turn to the Lord, and put not off from day to day.*

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS  
FOR SEVERAL OCCASIONS,  
*Ordinary and Extraordinary.*



# PRIVATE DEVOTIONS

FOR SEVERAL OCCASIONS,

Ordinary and Extraordinary.

---

## CHRISTIAN READER :

I HAVE, for the help of thy Devotions, set down some FORMS OF PRIVATE PRAYER, upon several occasions : if it be thought an omission that there are none for Families, I must answer for myself that it was not from any opinion, that God is not as well to be worshipped in the family as the closet ; but because the Providence of God and the Church hath already furnished thee, for that purpose, infinitely beyond what my utmost care could do : I mean the PUBLIC LITURGY or COMMON PRAYER, which for all public addresses to God (and such are family prayers) are so excellent and useful, that we may say of it as David did of Goliah's sword, 1 SAM. xxi. 9, There is none like it.

## DIRECTIONS FOR THE MORNING.

*As soon as ever thou awakest in the morning, lift up thy heart to God in this or the like short Prayer.*

LORD, as thou hast awakened my body from sleep, so by thy grace awaken my soul from sin ; and make me so to walk before thee this day, and all the rest of my life, that when the last trumpet shall awake me out of my grave, I may rise to the life immortal, through Jesus Christ.

---

WHEN thou hast thus begun, suffer not (without some urgent necessity) any worldly thoughts to fill thy mind, till thou hast also paid thy more solemn devotions to Almighty God ; and, therefore, during the time thou art dressing thyself (which should be no longer than common decency requires), exercise thy mind in some spiritual thoughts : as for example, consider to what temptations thy business or company that day

are most like to lay thee open, and arm thyself with resolutions against them; or again, consider what occasions of doing service to God, or good to thy neighbour, are that day most likely to present themselves, and resolve to embrace them; and also contrive how thou mayest improve them to the uttermost. But especially it will be fit for thee to examine whether there have any sin escaped thee since thy last night's examination. If after these considerations any further leisure remain, thou mayest profitably employ it in meditating on the general Resurrection (whereof our rising from our beds is a representation), and of that dreadful Judgment which shall follow it, and then think with thyself in what preparation thou art for it, and resolve to husband carefully every minute of thy time towards the fitting thee for that great account. As soon as thou art ready, retire to some private place, and there offer up to God thy morning sacrifice of praise and Prayer.

### PRAVERS FOR THE MORNING.

*At thy first kneeling down say,*

O HOLY, blessed, and glorious Trinity, three persons and one God, have mercy upon me a miserable sinner.

LORD, I know not what to pray for as I ought, O let thy Spirit help my infirmities, and enable me to offer up a spiritual sacrifice, acceptable to thee by Jesus Christ.

### *A Thanksgiving.*

O GRACIOUS Lord, whose mercies endure for ever, I thy unworthy servant, who have so deeply tasted of them, desire to render thee the tribute of my humblest praises for them. In thee, O Lord, I live, and move, and have my being: thou first madest me to be, and then, that I might not be miserable but happy, thou sentest thy Son out of thy bosom to redeem me from the power of my sins by his grace, and from the punishment of them by his blood, and by both to bring me to his glory. Thou hast by thy mercy caused me to be born within thy peculiar fold, the Christian Church, where I was early consecrated to thee in baptism, and have been partaker of all those spiritual helps which might aid me to perform that vow I there made to thee; and when by my own wilfulness or negligence I have failed to do it, yet thou in thy manifold mercies hast not forsaken me, but hast graciously invited me to repentance, afforded me all means both outward and inward for it, and with much

patience hast attended and not cut me off in the acts of those many damning sins I have committed, as I have most justly deserved. It is, O Lord, thy restraining grace alone by which I have been kept back from any the greatest sins ; and it is thy inciting and assisting grace alone, by which I have been enabled to do any the least good ; therefore not unto me, not unto me, but unto thy name be the praises. For these and all other thy spiritual blessings, my soul doth magnify the Lord, and all that is within me praise his holy name. I likewise praise thee for those many outward blessings I enjoy, as health, friends, food and raiment, the comforts as well as the necessaries of this life, for those continual protections of thy hand, by which I and mine are kept from dangers, and those gracious deliverances thou hast often afforded out of such as have befallen me, and for that mercy of thine whereby thou hast sweetened and allayed those troubles thou hast not seen fit wholly to remove : for thy particular preservation of me this night, and all other thy goodness towards me. Lord, grant that I may render thee not only the fruit of my lips, but the obedience of my life, that so these blessings here may be an earnest of those richer blessings thou hast prepared for those that love thee, and that for his sake, whom thou hast made the Author of eternal salvation to all that obey him, even Jesus Christ.

### *A Confession.*

O RIGHTEOUS Lord, who hatest iniquity, I thy sinful creature cast myself at thy feet, acknowledging that I most justly deserve to be utterly abhorred and forsaken by thee : for I have drunk iniquity like water, gone on in a continued course of sin and rebellion against thee, daily committing those things thou forbidest, and leaving undone those things thou commandest ; mine heart, which should be an habitation for thy Spirit, is become a cage of unclean birds, of foul and disordered affections ; and out of this abundance of the heart my mouth speaketh, my hands act, so that in thoughts, word, and deed, I continually transgress against thee. [*Here mention the greatest of thy sins.*] Nay, O Lord, I have despised that goodness of thine which should lead me to repentance, hardening my heart against all those means thou hast used for my amendment. And now, Lord, what can I expect from thee but judgment and fiery indignation, that is indeed the due reward of my sins ? But, O Lord, there is

mercy with thee, that thou mayest be feared. O fit me for that mercy, by giving me a deep and hearty repentance, and then, according to thy goodness, let thine anger and thy wrath be turned away from me; look upon me in thy Son, my blessed Saviour, and for the merit of his sufferings pardon all my sins. And, Lord, I beseech thee, by the power of thy grace so to renew and purify my heart, that I may become a new creature, utterly forsaking every evil way, and living in constant, sincere, universal obedience to thee all the rest of my days, that, behaving myself as a good and faithful servant, I may by thy mercy at the last be received into the joy of my Lord. Grant this for Jesus Christ his sake.

*A Prayer for Grace.*

O MOST gracious God, from whom every good and perfect gift cometh, I wretched creature that am not able of myself so much as to think a good thought, beseech thee to work in me both to will and do according to thy good pleasure. Enlighten my mind that I may know thee, and let me not be barren or unfruitful in that knowledge. Lord, work in my heart a true faith, a purifying hope, and an unfeigned love towards thee; give me a full trust on thee, zeal for thee, reverence of all things that relate to thee; make me fearful to offend thee, thankful for thy mercies, humble under thy corrections, devout in thy service, sorrowful for my sins; and grant that in all things I may behave myself so as befits a creature to his Creator, a servant to his Lord; enable me likewise to perform that duty I owe to myself; give me that meekness, humility, and contentedness, whereby I may always possess my soul in patience and thankfulness; make me diligent in all my duties, watchful against all temptations, perfectly pure and temperate, and so moderate in my most lawful enjoyments, that they may never become a snare to me: make me also, O Lord, to be so affected towards my neighbour, that I may never transgress that royal law of thine, of loving him as myself; grant me exactly to perform all parts of justice, yielding to all whatsoever by any kind of right becomes their due, and give me such bowels of mercy and compassion that I may never fail to do all acts of charity to all men, whether friends or enemies, according to thy command and example. Finally, I beseech thee, O Lord, to sanctify me throughout, that my whole spirit, and soul, and body, may be preserved blameless unto the coming of our

Lord Jesus Christ ; to whom with thee and the Holy Ghost be all honour and glory for ever. *Amen.*

*Intercession.*

O BLESSED Lord, whose mercy is over all thy works, I beseech thee to have mercy upon all men, and grant that the precious ransom which was paid by thy Son for all may be effectual to the saving of all. Give thy enlightening grace to those that are in darkness, and thy converting grace to those that are in sin ; look with thy tenderest compassions upon the universal church. O be favourable and gracious unto Sion, build thou the walls of Jerusalem : unite all those that profess thy name to thee, by purity and holiness ; and to each other by brotherly love. Have mercy on this desolate church and sinful nation : thou hast moved the land and divided it ; heal the sores thereof, for it shaketh it ; make us so truly to repent of those sins which have provoked thy judgments, that thou mayest turn and repent, and leave a blessing behind thee. Bless those whom thou hast appointed our governors, whether in church or state : so rule their hearts and strengthen their hands, that they may neither want will nor power to punish wickedness and vice, and to maintain God's true religion and virtue. Have pity, O Lord, on all that are in affliction ; be a father to the fatherless, and plead the cause of the widow, comfort the feeble-minded, support the weak, heal the sick, relieve the needy, defend the oppressed, and administer to every one according to their several necessities ; let thy blessings rest upon all that are near and dear to me, and grant them whatsoever thou seest necessary either to their bodies or their souls. [*Here name thy nearest relations.*] Reward all those that have done me good, and pardon all those that have done or wished me evil, and work in them and me all that good which may make us acceptable in thy sight, through Jesus Christ.

*For Preservation.*

O MERCIFUL God, by whose bounty alone it is that I have this day added to my life, I beseech thee so to guide me in it by thy grace, that I may do nothing which may dishonour thee, or wound my own soul, but that I may diligently apply myself to do all such good works as thou hast prepared for me to walk in ; and, Lord, I beseech thee, give thy angels charge over me, to keep me in all my ways, that no evil

happen unto me, nor any plague come nigh my dwelling, but that I and mine may be safe under thy gracious protection, through Jesus Christ.

O LORD, pardon the wanderings and coldness of these petitions, and deal with me, not according either to my prayers or deserts, but according to my needs and thine own rich mercies in Jesus Christ, in whose blessed name and words I conclude these my imperfect prayers ; saying, Our Father, &c.

---

### DIRECTIONS FOR NIGHT.

AT night when it draws towards the time of rest, bethink thyself how thou hast passed the day ; examine thine own heart what sin either of thought, word, or deed, thou hast committed, what opportunity of doing good thou hast omitted, and whatsoever thou findest to accuse thyself of, confess humbly and penitently to God, renew thy purposes and resolutions of amendment, and beg his pardon in Christ, and this not slightly, and only as of course, but with all devout earnestness, and heartiness, as thou wouldest do if thou wert sure thy death was as near approaching as thy sleep, which for ought thou knowest may be so indeed, and therefore thou shouldst no more venture to sleep unreconciled to God, than thou wouldest dare to die so. In the next place, consider what special and extraordinary mercies thou hast that day received, as if thou hast had any great deliverance, either in thy inward man, from some dangerous temptations, or in thy outward, from any great and apparent danger, and offer to God thy hearty and devout praise for the same ; or if nothing extraordinary have so happened, and thou hast been kept even from the approach of danger, thou hast not the less, but the greater cause to magnify God, who hath by his protection so guarded thee, that not so much as the fear of evil hath assaulted thee. And therefore omit not to pay him the tribute of humble thankfulness, as well for his usual and daily preservations, as his more extraordinary deliverances. And above all, endeavour still by the consideration of his mercies to have thy heart the more closely knit to him, remembering that every favour received from him is a new engagement upon thee to love and obey him.

### PRAYERS FOR NIGHT.

O HOLY, blessed, and glorious Trinity, three Persons and one God, have mercy upon me a miserable sinner.

Lord, I know not what to pray for as I ought, O let thy

Spirit help my infirmities, and enable me to offer up a spiritual sacrifice, acceptable unto thee by Jesus Christ.

*A Confession.*

O most Holy Lord God, who art of purer eyes than to behold iniquity, how shall I, abominable wretch, dare to appear before thee, who am nothing but pollution ? I am defiled in my very nature, having a backwardness to all good, and a readiness to all evil ; but I have defiled myself yet much worse by my own actual sins and wicked customs : I have transgressed my duty to thee, my neighbour, and myself, and that both in thought, in word, and in deed, by doing those things which thou hast expressly forbidden, and by neglecting to do those things thou hast commanded me. And this not only through ignorance in frailty, but knowingly and wilfully, against the motions of thy Spirit, and the checks of my own conscience to the contrary. And to make all these out of measure sinful, I have gone on in a daily course of repeating these provocations against thee, notwithstanding all thy calls to, and my own purposes and vows of amendment ; yea, this very day I have not ceased to add new sins to all my former guilts. [*Here name the particulars.*] And now, O Lord, what shall I say, or how shall I open my mouth, seeing I have done these things ? I know that the wages of these sins is death ; but O thou who willest not the death of a sinner, have mercy upon me ; work in me, I beseech thee, a sincere contrition, and a perfect hatred of my sins : and let me not daily confess, and yet as daily renew them : but grant, O Lord, that from this instant I may give a bill of divorce to all my most beloved lusts, and then be thou pleased to marry me to thyself in truth, in righteousness and holiness. And for all my past sins, O Lord, receive a reconciliation ; accept of that ransom thy blessed Son hath paid for me, and for his sake whom thou hast set forth as a propitiation, pardon all my offences, and receive me to thy favour. And when thou hast thus spoken peace to my soul, Lord, keep me, that I turn not any more to folly, but so establish me with thy grace, that no temptation of the world, the devil, or my own flesh, may ever draw me to offend thee ; that being made free from sin, and becoming a servant unto God, I may have my fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

*A Thanksgiving.*

O THOU Father of Mercies, who art kind even to the unthankful, I acknowledge myself to have abundantly experienced that gracious property of thine ; for notwithstanding my daily provocations against thee, thou still heapest mercy and loving-kindness upon me. All my contempts and despisings of thy spiritual favours have not yet made thee withdraw them, but in the riches of thy goodness and long-suffering thou still continuest to me the offers of grace and life in thy Son. And all my abuses of thy temporal blessings thou hast not punished with an utter deprivation of them, but art still pleased to afford me a liberal portion of them. The sins of this day thou hast not repaid, as justly thou mightest, by sweeping me away with a swift destruction, but hast spared and preserved me, according to the greatness of thy mercy. [*Here mention the particular mercies of that day.*] What shall I render unto the Lord for all these benefits he hath done unto me ? Lord, let this goodness of thine lead me to repentance, and grant that I may not only offer thee thanks and praise, but may also order my conversation aright, that so I may at the last see the salvation of God, through Jesus Christ.

[*Here use the Prayer for Grace, and that of Intercession appointed for the Morning.*]

*For Preservation.*

O BLESSED Lord, the keeper of Israel, that neither slumberest nor sleepest, be pleased in thy mercy to watch over me this night ; keep me by thy grace from all works of darkness, and defend me by thy power from all dangers : grant me moderate and refreshing sleep, such as may fit me for the duties of the day following. And, Lord, make me ever mindful of that time when I shall lie down in the dust ; and because I know neither the day nor the hour of my Master's coming, grant me grace that I may be always ready, that I may never live in such a state as I shall fear to die in ; but that whether I live, I may live unto the Lord, or whether I die, I may die unto the Lord, so that, living and dying, I may be thine, through Jesus Christ.

[*Use the same concluding Prayer as in the Morning.*]

As thou art putting off thy clothes, think with thyself that the time approaches that thou must put off thy body also, and then thy soul must appear naked before God's judgment-seat; and therefore thou hadst need be careful to make it so clean and pure by repentance and holiness, that he who will not look on iniquity may graciously behold and accept it.

*Let thy Bed put thee in mind of thy Grave, and when thou liest down say,*

O BLESSED Saviour, who by thy precious death and burial didst take away the sting of death and the power of the grave, grant me the joyful fruits of that thy victory, and be thou to me in life and death advantage.

I will lay me down in peace, and take my rest; for it is thou, Lord, only, that makest me dwell in safety.

Into thy hands I commend my spirit; for thou hast redeemed it, O Lord, thou God of truth.

---

IN the ANCIENT CHURCH there were, besides morning and night, four other times every day which were called HOURS OF PRAYER, and the zeal of those first Christians was such, as made them constantly observed. It would be thought too great a strictness now, in this lukewarm age, to enjoin the like frequency; yet I cannot but mention the example, and say, that for those who are not by very necessary business prevented, it will be but reasonable to imitate it, and make up in public and private those FOUR TIMES OF PRAYER, besides the OFFICES already set down for MORNING and NIGHT; and that none may be to seek how to exercise their devotions at these times, I have added divers COLLECTS for several Graces, whereof every man may use at each such time of prayer so many as his zeal and leisure shall point out to him, adding, if he please, one of the Confessions appointed for Morning or Night, and never omitting the LORD'S PRAYER.

But if any man's state of life be really so busy, as will not allow him time for so long and solemn devotions; yet certainly there is no man so overlaid with business, but that he may find leisure oftentimes in a day to say the LORD'S PRAYER alone: and therefore let him use that, if he cannot more. But because it is the character of a Christian, PHIL. iii. 20, *that he hath his conversation in heaven*, it is very fit that besides these set times of prayer, he should divers times in a day, by short and sudden EJACULATIONS, dart up his soul thither. And for this sort of devotion no man can want leisure, for it may be performed in the midst of business; the artificer at his work, the husbandman at his plough may practise it Now as he cannot want time, so that he may not want matter for it I

have thought it not unuseful, out of that rich storehouse the Book of Psalms, to furnish him with some texts, which may very fitly be used for this purpose ; which being learned by heart, will always be ready at hand to employ his devotion ; and the matter of them being various, some for pardon of sins, some for Grace, some for the light of God's countenance, some for the Church, some for Thanksgiving, &c. every man may fit himself according to the present need and temper of his soul. I have given these not as a full collection, but only a taste, by which the reader's appetite may be raised to search after more in that book, and other parts of Holy Scripture.

### COLLECTS FOR SEVERAL GRACES.

#### *For Faith.*

O BLESSED Lord, whom without faith it is impossible to please, let thy Spirit, I beseech thee, work in me such a faith as may be acceptable in thy sight, even such as worketh by love. O let me not rest in a dead ineffectual faith, but grant that it may be such as may show itself by my works, that it may be that victorious faith, which may enable me to overcome the world, and conform me to the image of that Christ, on whom I believe ; that so at the last I may receive the end of my faith, even the salvation of my soul, by the same Jesus Christ.

#### *For Hope.*

O LORD, who art the hope of all the ends of the earth, let me never be destitute of a well-grounded hope, nor yet possessed with a vain presumption : suffer me not to think thou wilt either be reconciled to my sins, or reject my repentance : but give me, I beseech thee, such a hope as may be answerable to the only ground of hope, thy promises ; and such as may both encourage and enable me to purify myself from all filthiness both of flesh and spirit, that so it may indeed become to me an anchor of the soul both sure and steadfast, entering even within the veil ; whither the forerunner is for me entered, even Jesus Christ my High Priest and blessed Redeemer.

#### *For the Love of God.*

O HOLY and gracious Lord, who art infinitely excellent in thyself, and infinitely bountiful and compassionate towards me, I beseech thee suffer not my heart to be so hardened

through the deceitfulness of sin, as to resist such charms of love, but let them make deep and lasting impressions on my soul. Lord, thou art pleased to require my heart, and thou only hast right to it. O let me not be so sacrilegiously unjust as to alienate any part of it, but enable me to render it up whole and entire to thee. But, O my God, thou seest it is already usurped, the world with its vanities hath seized it, and like a strong man armed keeps possession. O thou who art stronger, come upon him, and take this unworthy heart of mine as thine own spoil, refine it with that purifying fire of thy love, that it may be a fit habitation for thy Spirit. Lord, if thou seest it fit, be pleased to let me taste of those joys, those ravishments of thy love, wherewith thy saints have been so transported. But if in this I know not what I ask, if I may not choose my place in thy kingdom, yet, O Lord, deny me not to drink of thy cup, let me have such a sincerity and degree of love, as may make me endure any thing for thy sake, such a perfect love as may cast out all fear and sloth too, that nothing may seem to me too grievous to suffer, or too difficult to do in obedience to thee : that so expressing my love by keeping thy commandments, I may by thy mercy at last obtain that crown of life, which thou hast promised to those that love thee, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

### *For Sincerity.*

O HOLY Lord, who requirest truth in the inward parts, I humbly beseech thee to purge me from all hypocrisy and unsincerity. The heart, O Lord, is deceitful above all things, and my heart is deceitful above all hearts : O thou who searchest the heart and reins, try me, and seek the ground of my heart, and suffer not any accursed thing to lurk within me, but purify me even with fire, so thou consume my dross. O Lord, I cannot deceive thee, but I may most easily deceive myself. I beseech thee let me not rest in any such deceit ; but bring me to a sight and hatred of my most hidden corruptions, that I may not cherish any darling lust, but make an utter destruction of every Amalekite. O suffer me not to speak peace to myself, when there is no peace, but grant I may judge of myself as thou judgest of me, that I may never be at peace with myself, till I am at perfect peace with thee, and by purity of heart be qualified to see thee in thy kingdom, through Jesus Christ.

*For Devotion in Prayer.*

O GRACIOUS Lord God, who not only permittest, but invitest us miserable and needy creatures to present our petitions to thee ; grant, I beseech thee, that the frequency of my prayer may be somewhat proportionable to those continual needs I have of thy mercy. Lord, I confess it is the greatest honour and greatest advantage, thus to be allowed access to thee ; yet so sottish and stupid is my profane heart, that it shuns or frustrates the opportunities of it. My soul, O Lord, is possessed with a spirit of infirmity, it is bowed together, and can in no wise lift up itself to thee ; O be thou pleased to cure this sad, this miserable disease, to inspirit and enliven this earthly drossy heart, that it may freely mount towards thee ; that I may set a true value on this most valuable privilege, and take delight in approaching to thee : and that my approaches may be with a reverence some way answerable to that awful Majesty I come before ; with an importunity and earnestness answerable to those pressing wants I have to be supplied ; and with such a fix-edness and attention of mind, as no wandering thoughts may interrupt : that I may no more incur the guilt of drawing near to thee with my lips, when my heart is far from thee, or have my prayers turned into sin ; but may so ask that I may receive, seek that I may find, knock that it may be opened unto me ; that from praying to thee here, I may be translated to the praising thee eternally in thy glory, through the merits and intercession of Jesus Christ.

*For Humility.*

O THOU high and lofty One, that inhabitest eternity, yet art pleased to dwell with the humble spirit, pour into my heart, I beseech thee, that excellent grace of humility, which may utterly work out all those vain conceits I have of myself. Lord, convince me powerfully of my own wretchedness ; make me to see that I am miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked, and not only dust, but sin ; that so in all thy dispensations towards me, I may lay my hand upon my mouth, and heartily acknowledge that I am less than the least of thy mercies, and greater than the greatest of thy judgments. And, O Lord, grant me not only to walk humbly with my God, but even with men also, that I may not only submit myself to thy rebukes, but even to those of my fellow Chris-

tians, and with meekness receive and obey their admonitions. And make me so to behave myself towards all, that I never do any thing through strife and vain glory : and to that end grant, that in lowliness of mind I may esteem every other man better than myself, and be willing that others should esteem them so also ; that I neither nourish any high opinion of myself, nor covet one among others, but that, despising the vain praise of men, I may seek that praise which cometh from thee only. That so instead of those mean servile arts I have used to recommend me to the esteem of men, I may now employ all my industry and care to approve myself to thee, who resistest the proud, and givest grace to the humble : grant this, O Lord, for his sake who humbled himself unto the death of the cross, Jesus Christ.

### *For the Fear of God.*

O GLORIOUS Majesty, who only art high, and to be feared, possess my soul with a holy awe and reverence of thee, that I may give thee the honour due unto thy Name, and may bear such a respect to all things which relate to thee, that I may never profane any holy thing, or sacrilegiously invade what thou hast set apart to thyself. And, O Lord, since thou art a God that wilt not clear the guilty, let the dread of thy justice make me tremble to provoke thee in any thing. O let me not so misplace my fear, as to be afraid of a man that shall die, and of the son of man, who shall be made as grass, and forget the Lord my maker : but replenish my soul with that fear of the Lord, which is the beginning of wisdom, which may be as a bridle to all my brutish appetites, and keep me in a constant conformity to thy holy will. Hear me, O Lord, I beseech thee, and put this fear in my heart, that I may not depart from thee, but may with fear and tremblng work out my own salvation, through Jesus Chirst.

### *For Trust on God.*

O ALMIGHTY Lord, who never failest them that trust on thee : Give me grace, I beseech thee, in all my difficulties and distresses, to have recourse to thee, to rest and depend on thee ; thou shalt keep him, O Lord, in perfect peace, whose mind is staid on thee. O let me always rest on this firm pillar, and never exchange it for the broken reeds of worldly succours ; suffer not my heart to be overcharged with the

cares of this life, taking thought what I shall eat, or drink, or wherewithal I shall be clothed, but grant that, having by honest labour and industry done my part, I may cheerfully commit myself to thy providence, casting all my care upon thee, and being careful for nothing, but to be of the number of those whom thou ownest and carest for, even such as keep thy testimonies, and think upon thy commandments to do them. That, seeking first thy kingdom and the righteousness thereof, all these outward things may be added unto me, in such a measure as thy wisdom knows best for me ; grant this, O Lord, for Jesus Christ his sake.

*For Thankfulness.*

O MOST gracious and bountiful Lord, who fillest all things living with good, and expectest no other return but praise and thanksgiving ; let me, O Lord, never defraud thee of that so easy tribute, but let my heart be ever filled with the sense, and my mouth with the acknowledgment of thy mercies. It is a joyful and pleasant thing to be thankful ; O suffer me not, I beseech thee, to lose my part in that divine pleasure ; but grant that as I daily receive blessings from thee, so I may daily from an affectionate and devout heart offer up thanks to thee ; and grant that not only my lips, but my life, may show forth thy praise, by consecrating myself to thy service, and walking in holiness and righteousness before thee all the days of my life, through Jesus Christ my Lord and blessed Saviour.

*For Contrition.*

O HOLY Lord, who art a merciful embracer of true penitents, but yet a consuming fire towards obstinate sinners ; how shall I approach thee, who have so many provoking sins to inflame thy wrath, and so little sincere repentance to incline thy mercy ! O be pleased to soften and melt this hard obdurate heart of mine, that I may heartily bewail the iniquities of my life ; strike this rock, O Lord, that the waters may flow out, even floods of tears, to wash my polluted conscience. My drowsy soul hath too long slept securely in sin ; Lord, awake it, though it be with thunder, and let me rather feel thy terrors than not feel my sin. Thou sentest thy blessed Son to heal the broken-hearted ; but, Lord, what will that avail me, if my heart be whole ? O break it, that it may be capable of this healing virtue ; and grant, I beseech thee, that

having once tasted the bitterness of sin, I may fly from it as from the face of a serpent, and bring forth fruits of repentance in amendment of life, to the praise and glory of thy grace in Jesus Christ our blessed Redeemer.

*For Meekness.*

O BLESSED Jesu, who was led as a sheep to the slaughter, let, I beseech thee, that admirable example of meekness quench in me all sparks of anger and revenge, and work in me such a gentleness and calmness of spirit, as no provocations may ever be able to disturb. Lord, grant I may be so far from offering the least injury, that I may never return the greatest, any otherwise than with prayers and kindness : that I who have so many talents to be forgiven by thee, may never exact pence of my brethren ; but that, putting on bowels of mercy, meekness, long-suffering, thy peace may rule in my heart, and make it an acceptable habitation to thee, who art the Prince of peace, to whom with the Father and Holy Spirit be all honour and glory for ever.

*For Chastity.*

O HOLY and immaculate Jesus, whose first descent was into the Virgin's womb, and who dost still love to inhabit only in pure and virgin hearts, I beseech thee send thy Spirit of purity to cleanse me from all filthiness both of flesh and spirit ; my body, O Lord, is the temple of the Holy Ghost ; O let me never pollute that temple with any uncleanness. And because out of the heart proceed the things that defile the man, Lord, grant me to keep my heart with all diligence, that no impure or foul thoughts be harboured there ; but enable me, I beseech thee, to keep both body and soul pure and undefiled, that so I may glorify thee here both in body and spirit, and be glorified in both with thee hereafter.

*For Temperance.*

O GRACIOUS Lord, who hast in thy bounty to mankind offered to us the use of thy good creatures for our corporal refreshment ; grant that I may always use this liberty with thankfulness and moderation. O let me never be so enslaved to that brutish pleasure of taste, that my table become a snare to me ; but give me, I beseech thee, a perfect abhorrence of all degrees of excess, and let me eat and drink only for those ends, and according to those measures, which thou hast

assigned me, for health, and not for luxury. And, Lord, grant that my pursuits may be not after the meat that perisheth, but after that which endureth to everlasting life ; that hungering and thirsting after righteousness, I may be filled with thy grace here, and thy glory hereafter, through Jesus Christ.

*For Contentedness.*

O MERCIFUL God, thy wisdom is infinite to choose, and thy love forward to dispense good things to us ; O let me always fully and entirely resign myself to thy disposals, have no desires of my own, but a perfect satisfaction in thy choices for me ; that so in whatsoever estate I am, I may be therein content. Lord, grant I may never look with murmuring on my own condition, nor with envy on other men's. And to that end, I beseech thee, purge my heart of all covetous affections. O let me never yield up any corner of my soul to Mammon, but give me such a contempt of these fading riches, that whether they increase or decrease, I may never set my heart upon them, but that all my care may be to be rich towards God, to lay up my treasure in heaven ; that I may so set my affections on things above, that when Christ who is my life shall appear, I may also appear with him in glory. Grant this, O Lord, for the merits of the same Jesus Christ.

*For Diligence.*

O LORD, who hast in thy wisdom ordained that man should be born to labour, suffer me not to resist that design of thine, by giving myself up to sloth and idleness ; but grant I may so employ my time, and all other talents thou hast intrusted me with, that I may not fail under the sentence of the slothful and wicked servant. Lord, if it be thy will, make me some way useful to others, that I may not live an unprofitable part to mankind ; but, however, O Lord, let me not be useless to myself, but grant I may give all diligence to make my calling and election sure. My soul is beset with many and vigilant adversaries ; O let me not fold my hands to sleep in the midst of so great dangers, but watch and pray, that I enter not into temptation ; enduring harshness as a good soldier of Jesus Christ, till at the last from this state of warfare, thou translate me to the state of triumph and bliss in thy kingdom, through Jesus Christ.

*For Justice.*

O THOU King of Righteousness, who hast commanded us to keep judgment and do Justice, be pleased by thy grace to cleanse my heart and hands from all fraud and injustice, and give me a perfect integrity and uprightness in all my dealings. O make me ever abhor to use my power to oppress, or my skill to deceive my brother, and grant I may most strictly observe that sacred rule, of doing as I would be done to ; that I may not dishonour my Christian profession by an unjust and fraudulent life, but in simplicity and godly sincerity, have my conversation in this life ; never seeking to heap up treasures in this life ; but preferring a little with righteousness before great revenues without right. Lord, make me exactly careful to render to every man what by any sort of obligation becomes his due, that I may never break the bond of any of those relations that thou hast placed me in, but may so behave myself towards all, that none may have any evil thing to say of me ; that so if it be possible, I may have peace with all men, or, however, I may, by keeping innocency, and taking heed to the thing that is right, have peace at the last, even peace with thee, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

*For Charity.*

O MERCIFUL Lord, who hast made of one blood, and redeemed by one ransom, all nations of men, let me never harden my bowels against any that partake of the same nature and redemption with me, but grant me an universal charity towards all men. Give me, O thou Father of compassions, such a tenderness and meltingness of heart, that I may be deeply affected with all the miseries and calamities outward and inward of my brethren ; and diligently employ all my abilities for their succour and relief. O let not an unchristian self-love possess my heart, but drive out that accursed spirit, and let thy spirit of love enter and dwell there, and make me seek, not to please myself, but my neighbour for his good to edification, even as Christ pleased not himself. Lord, make me a faithful steward of all those talents thou hast committed to me for the benefit of others, that so when thou shalt call me to give an account of my stewardship, I may do it with joy, and not with grief. Grant this, merciful Lord, I beseech thee, for Jesus Christ his sake.

*For Perseverance.*

O ETERNAL and unchangeable Lord God, who art the same yesterday, and to-day, and for ever; be thou pleased to communicate some small ray of that excellence, some degree of that stability to me thy wretched creature, who am light and unconstant, turned about with every blast; my understanding is very deceivable, O establish it in thy truth, keep it from the snares of seducing spirits, that I may not be led away with the error of the wicked, and fall from my own steadfastness; my will also, O Lord, is irresolute and wavering, and doth not cleave steadfastly unto God; my goodness is but as the morning cloud, and as the early dew it passeth away. O strengthen and confirm me, and whatever good work thou hast wrought in me, be pleased to accomplish and perform it until the day of Christ. Lord, thou seest my weakness, and thou knowest the number and strength of those temptations I have to struggle with, O leave me not to myself, but cover thou my head in the day of battle, and in all spiritual combats make me more than conqueror through him that loved me. O let no terrors or flatteries either of the world or my own flesh ever draw me from my obedience to thee; but grant that I may continue steadfast, unmovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, and by patient continuing in well doing seek, and at last obtain glory, and honour, and immortality, and eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

### A BRIEF PARAPHRASE OF THE LORD'S PRAYER

TO BE USED AS A PRAYER.

*Our Father, which art in Heaven.*

O LORD, who dwellest in the highest heavens, thou art the author of our being, thou hast also begotten us again unto a lively hope, and carriest towards us the tenderness and bowels of a compassionate Father. O make us to render to thee the love and obedience of children; and that we may resemble thee *our Father in heaven*, (that place of true delight and purity) give us a holy disdain of all the deceitful pleasures and foul pollutions of this world, and so raise

up our minds, that we may always have our conversation in heaven, from whence we look for our Saviour the Lord Jesus Christ.

*1. Hallowed be thy Name.*

STRIKE such an awe in our hearts, that we may humbly reverence thee in *Thy Name*, which is great, wonderful, and holy ; and carry such a sacred respect to all things that relate to thee and thy worship, as may express our reverence to thy great Majesty. Let all the people praise thee, O God, let all the people praise thee.

*2. Thy Kingdom come.*

ESTABLISH thy throne and rule for ever in our souls, and by the power of thy grace subdue all those rebellious corruptions that exalt themselves against thee ; they are those enemies of thine which would not that thou shouldst reign over them, O let them be brought forth and slain before thee, and make us such faithful subjects of this thy *kingdom of grace*, that we may be capable of the *kingdom of glory*, and then, Lord Jesus, come quickly.

*3. Thy will be done in earth, &c.*

ENABLE us by thy grace cheerfully to suffer *thy will* in all thy afflictions, and readily perform it in all thy commands : give us of that heavenly zeal to thy service, wherewith the blessed angels of thy presence are inspired, that we may obey thee with the like fervour and alacrity, and that following them in their obedience, we may be joined with them to sing eternal praises in thy kingdom, to God, and to the Lamb for ever.

*4. Give us this day our, &c.*

GIVE us that continual supply of thy grace, which may sustain and nourish our souls unto eternal life. And be thou pleased also to provide for our bodies all those things which thou seest fit for their support, through this our earthly pilgrimage ; and make us cheerfully to rest on thee for them, first seeking thy kingdom and the righteousness thereof, and then not doubting but all these things shall be added unto us.

*5. Forgive us our trespasses, &c.*

HEAL our souls, O Lord, for we have sinned against thee,

let thy tender mercies abound towards us, in the *forgiveness of all our offences*; and grant, O Lord, that we may never forfeit this pardon of thine, by denying ours to our brethren, but give us those bowels of compassion to others which we stand in so much greater need of from thee, that we may *forgive* as fully and finally upon Christ's command, as we desire to be *forgiven*, for his merits and intercession.

#### *6. Lead us not into temptation, &c.*

O LORD, we have no strength against those multitudes of *temptations* that daily assault us, only our eyes are upon thee; O be thou pleased either to restrain them, or assist us, and in thy faithfulness suffer us not to be *tempted* above that we are able, but in all our temptations make us a way to escape, that we be not overcome by them, but may, when thou shalt call us to it, resist even unto blood, striving against sin, that we being faithful unto death, thou mayest give us the crown of life.

#### *For thine is the Kingdom.*

HEAR us, and graciously answer our petitions, for thou art the good *King* over all the earth, whose *Power* is infinite, and art able to do for us above all that we can ask or think, and to whom belongeth the *Glory* of all that good thou workest in us or for us. Therefore blessing, honour, glory, and power be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, to our God for ever and ever. *Amen.*

### PIOUS EJACULATIONS

TAKEN OUT OF THE BOOK OF PSALMS.

#### *For Pardon of Sin.*

HAVE mercy on me, O God, after thy great goodness, according to the multitude of thy mercies do away mine offences.

Wash me throughly from my wickedness, and cleanse me from my sin.

Turn thy face from my sins, and put out all my misdeeds.

My misdeeds prevail against me; O be thou merciful unto my sins.

Enter not into judgment with thy servant, for in thy sight shall no man living be justified.

For thy Name's sake, O Lord, be merciful unto my sin, for it is great.

Turn thee, O Lord, and deliver my soul. O save me for thy mercies' sake.

*For Grace.*

TEACH me to do the thing that pleaseth thee, for thou art my God.

Teach me thy way, O Lord, and I will walk in thy truth; O knit my heart to thee, that I may fear thy name.

Make me a clean heart, O God, and renew a right spirit within me.

O let my heart be sound in thy statutes, that I be not ashamed.

Incline my heart unto thy testimonies, and not to covetousness.

Turn away mine eyes lest they behold vanity, and quicken thou me in thy way.

I am a stranger upon earth, O hide not thy commandments from me.

Lord, teach me to number my days, that I may apply my heart unto wisdom.

*For the Light of God's Countenance.*

LORD, why abhorrest thou my soul, and hidest thy face from me? O hide not thou thy face from me, nor cast thy servant away in displeasure.

Thy loving-kindness is better than life itself.

Lord, lift thou up the light of thy countenance upon me.

Comfort the soul of thy servant, for unto thee, O Lord, do I lift up my soul.

*Thanksgiving.*

I WILL always give thanks unto the Lord, his praise shall ever be in my mouth.

Thou art my God, and I will thank thee, thou art my God, and I will praise thee.

I will sing unto the Lord, as long as I live, I will praise my God whilst I have my being.

Praised be God, which hast not cast out my prayer, nor turned his mercy from me.

Blessed be the Lord God, even the God of Israel, which only doth wondrous things :

And blessed be the name of his majesty for ever, and all the earth shall be filled with his majesty. *Amen. Amen.*

*For Deliverance from Trouble.*

BE merciful unto me, O Lord, be merciful unto me, for my soul trusteth in thee, and under the shadow of thy wings shall be my refuge, until these calamities be overpast.

Deliver me, O Lord, from mine enemies, for I flee unto thee to hide me.

O keep my soul, and deliver me, let me not be confounded, for I have put my trust in thee.

Mine eyes are ever looking unto the Lord : for he shall pluck my feet out of the net.

Turn thee unto me and have mercy upon me : for I am desolate and in misery.

The sorrows of my heart are enlarged : O bring thou me out of my troubles.

*For the Church.*

O BE favourable and gracious unto Sion, build thou the walls of Jerusalem.

O God, wherefore art thou absent from us so long ? Why is thy wrath so hot against the sheep of thy pasture ?

O think upon thy congregation, whom thou hast purchased and redeemed of old.

Look upon the tribe of thine inheritance, and Mount Sion where thou hast dwelt.

It is time for thee, Lord, to lay to thy hand, for they have destroyed thy law.

Arise, O God, and maintain thine own cause : deliver Israel, O God, out of all his troubles.

BRIEF HEADS OF SELF-EXAMINATION,

*Especially before the Sacrament, collected out of the foregoing Treatise, concerning the Breaches of our Duty.*

TO GOD.

*Faith.*

NOT believing there is a God.

Not believing his Word.

Not believing it practically, so as to live according to our belief.

### *Hope.*

DESPAIRING of God's mercy, so as to neglect duty.

Presuming groundlessly on it, whilst we go on in wilful sin.

### *Love.*

Not loving God for his excellencies.

Not loving him for his goodness to us.

Not labouring to please him.

Not desiring to draw near to him in his ordinances.

Not longing to enjoy him in heaven.

### *Fear.*

Not fearing God so as to keep from offending him.

Fearing man above him, by committing sin, to shun some outward suffering.

### *Trust.*

Not trusting on God in dangers and distresses.

Using unlawful means to bring us out of them.

Not depending on God for supply of our wants.

Immoderate care for outward things.

Neglecting to labour, and expecting God should support us in our idleness.

Not looking up to God for a blessing on our honest endeavours.

### *Humility.*

Not having a high esteem of God.

Not submitting obediently to act his will.

Not patiently suffering it, but murmuring at his corrections.

Not amending by them.

Not being thankful to him.

Not acknowledging his wisdom in choosing for us, but having anger and impatient desires of our own.

### *Honour.*

Not honouring God by a reverent usage of the things that relate to him.

Behaving ourselves irreverently in his house.

Robbing God, by taking things that are consecrated to him.

Profaning holy times, the Lord's day, and the feasts and fasts of the Church.

Neglecting to read the Holy Scriptures, not marking when we do read.

Being careless to get knowledge of our duty, choosing rather to continue ignorant, than put ourselves to the pains or charge of learning.

Placing religion in hearing of sermons, without practice

Breaking our vow made at baptism.

By resorting to witches and conjurers ; i. e. to the devil.

By loving the pomps and vanities of the world, and following its sinful customs.

By fulfilling the lusts of the flesh.

Profaning the Lord's Supper.

By coming to it ignorantly without examination, contrition, and purposes of new life.

By behaving ourselves irreverently at it, without devotion and spiritual affection.

By neglecting to keep the promises made at it.

Profaning God's name, by blasphemous thoughts or discourse.

Giving others occasion to blaspheme him by our vile and wicked lives.

Taking unlawful oaths.

Perjury.

Swearing in ordinary communication.

### *Worship.*

Not worshipping God.

Omitting prayers, public or private, and being glad of a pretence to do so.

Asking unlawful things, or to unlawful ends.

Not purifying our hearts from sin before we pray.

Not praying with faith and humility.

Coldness and deadness in prayer.

Wandering thoughts in it.

Irreverent gestures of body in prayer.

### *Repentance.*

NEGLECTING the duty of repentance.

Not calling ourselves to daily account for our sins.

Not assigning any set or solemn times for humiliation and confession, or too seldom.

Not deeply considering our sins, to beget contrition.

Not acting revenge upon ourselves, by fasting and other acts of mortification.

### *Idolatry.*

OUTWARD idolatry in worshipping of creatures. Inward idolatry, in placing our love and other affections more on creatures than the Creator.

### TO OURSELVES.

#### *Humility.*

BEING puffed up with high conceits of ourselves.

In respect of natural parts, as beauty, wit, &c.

Of worldly riches and honours.

Of grace.

Greedily seeking the praise of men.

Directing Christian actions, as prayer, alms, &c. to that end.

Committing sins to avoid reproach from wicked men.

#### *Meekness.*

DISTURBING our minds with anger and peevishness.

#### *Consideration.*

NOT carefully examining what our estate towards God is.

Not trying ourselves by the true rule, i. e. our obedience to God's commands.

Not weighing the lawfulness of our actions before we venture on them.

Not examining our past actions, to repent of the ill, to give God the glory of the good.

#### *Contentedness.*

UNCONTENTEDNESS in our estates.

Greedy desires after honour and riches.

Seeking to gain them by sinful means.

Envying the condition of other men.

#### *Diligence, Watchfulness.*

BEING negligent in observing and resisting temptations.

Not improving God's gifts, outward or inward, to his honour.

Abusing our natural parts, as wit, memory, &c. to sin.  
Neglecting or resisting the motions of God's Spirit.

*Chastity.*

UNCLEANNESS, adultery, fornication, unnatural lusts, &c.  
Uncleanness of the eye and hand.

Filthy and obscene talking.

Impure fancies and desires.

Heightening of lust by pampering the body.

Not labouring to subdue it by fasting, or other severities.

*Temperance.*

EATING too much.

Making pleasure, not health, the end of eating.

Being too curious or costly in meats.

Drunkenness.

Drinking more than is useful to our bodies, though not to drunkenness.

Wasting the time or estate in good fellowship.

Abusing our strength of brain to the making others drunk.

Immoderate sleeping.

Idleness and negligence in our callings.

Using unlawful recreations.

Being too vehement upon lawful ones.

Spending too much time at them.

Being drawn by them to anger or covetousness.

Being proud of apparel.

Striving to go beyond our rank.

Bestowing too much time, care, or cost about it.

Abstaining from such excesses, not out of conscience but covetousness.

Pinching our bodies to fill our purses.

TO OUR NEIGHBOUR.

*Negative Justice.*

BEING injurious to our neighbour.

Delighting causelessly to grieve his mind.

Ensnaring his soul in sin, by command, counsel, enticement, or example.

Affrighting him from godliness, by our scoffing at it.

Not seeking to bring those to repentance whom we have led into sin.

*Murder.*

**MURDER**, open or secret.

Drawing men to intemperance or other vices, which may bring diseases or death.

Stirring men up to quarrelling and fighting.

Maiming or hurting the body of our neighbour.

Fierceness and rage against him.

*Adultery*

**COVETING** our neighbour's wife.

Actually defiling her.

*Malice.*

**SPOILING** the goods of others upon spite and malice.

*Covetousness.*

**COVETING** to gain them to ourselves.

*Oppression.*

**OPPRESSION** by violence and force, or colour of law.

*Theft.*

Not paying what we borrow.

Not paying what we have voluntarily promised.

Keeping back the wages of the servant and hireling.

*Deceit.*

**UNFAITHFULNESS** in trusts, whether to the living or dead.

Using arts of deceit in buying and selling.

Exacting upon the necessities of our neighbours.

*False Witness.*

**BLASTING** the credit of our neighbour.

By false witness.

By railing.

By whispering.

Encouraging others in their slanders.

Being forward to believe all ill reports of our neighbour.

Causeless suspicions.

Rash judging of him.

Despising him for his infirmities.

Inviting others to do so, by scoffing and deriding him.

Bearing any malice in the heart.

Secret wishing of death or hurt to our neighbour.

Rejoicing when any evil befalls him.

Neglecting to make what satisfaction we can, for any sort of injury done to our neighbour.

### *Positive Justice, Humility, Lying.*

CHURLISH and proud behaviour to others.

Froward and peevish conversation.

Bitter and reproachful language.

Cursing.

Not paying the respect due to the qualities or gifts of others.

Proudly overlooking them.

Seeking to lessen others' esteem of them.

Not employing our abilities, whether of mind or estate, in administering to those whose wants require it.

### *Gratitude.*

UNTHANKFULNESS to our benefactors.

Especially those that admonish us.

Not amending upon their reproof.

Being angry at them for it.

Not reverencing our civil parent, the lawful magistrate.

Judging and speaking evil of him.

Grudging his just tributes.

Sowing sedition among people.

Refusing to obey his lawful commands.

Rising up against him, or taking part with them that do.

Despising our spiritual fathers.

Not loving them for their works' sake.

Not obeying those commands of God they deliver to us.

Seeking to withhold from them their just maintenance.

Forsaking our lawful pastors to follow factious teachers.

### *Parents.*

STUBBORN and irreverent behaviour to our natural parents.

Despising and publishing their infirmities.

Not loving them, nor endeavouring to bring them comfort.

Contemning their counsels.

Murmuring at their government.

- Coveting their estates, though by their death.  
 Not ministering to them in their wants of all sorts.  
 Neglecting to pray for God's blessing on the several sorts of parents.  
 Want of natural affection to children.  
 Mothers refusing to nurse them without a just impediment.  
 Not bringing them timely to baptism.  
 Not early instructing them in the ways of God.  
 Suffering them for want of timely correction to get customs of sin.  
 Setting them evil examples.  
 Discouraging them by harsh and cruel usage.  
 Not providing for their subsistence according to our ability.  
 Consuming their portions in our own riot.  
 Reserving all till our death, and letting them want in the mean time.  
 Not seeking to entail a blessing on them by our Christian lives.  
 Not heartily praying for them.  
 Want of affection to our natural brethren.  
 Envyings and heart-burnings towards them.

### *Duty to Brethren.*

- Not loving our spiritual brethren, i. e. our fellow-Christians.  
 Having no fellow-feeling of their sufferings.  
 Causelessly forsaking their communion in holy duties.  
 Not taking deeply to heart the desolations of the church.

### *Marriage.*

- MARRYING within the degrees forbidden.  
 Marrying for undue ends, as covetousness, lust, &c.  
 Unkind, froward, and unquiet behaviour towards the husband or wife.  
 Unfaithfulness to the bed.  
 Not bearing with the infirmities of each other.  
 Not endeavouring to advance one another's good, spiritual or temporal.  
 The wife resisting the lawful commands of her husband.  
 Her striving for rule and dominion over him.  
 Not praying for each other.

*Friendship.*

UNFAITHFULNESS to a friend.  
 Betraying his secrets.  
 Denying him assistance in his needs.  
 Neglecting lovingly to admonish him.  
 Flattering him in his faults.  
 Forsaking his friendship upon slight or no cause.  
 Making leagues in sin instead of virtuous friendship.

*Servants.*

SERVANTS disobeying the lawful commands of their masters.

Purloining their goods.  
 Carelessly wasting them.  
 Murmuring at their rebukes  
 Idleness.  
 Eye-service.

*Masters.*

MASTERS using servants tyrannically and cruelly.  
 Being too remiss, and suffering them to neglect their duty.  
 Having no care of their souls.  
 Not providing them means of instruction in religion.  
 Not admonishing them when they commit sins.  
 Not allowing them time and opportunity for prayer, and the worship of God.

*Charity.*

WANT of bowels and charity to our neighbours.  
 Not heartily desiring their good, spiritual or temporal.  
 Not loving and forgiving enemies.  
 Taking actual revenges upon them.  
 Falseness, professing kindness and acting none  
 Not labouring to do all the good we can to the soul of our neighbour.  
 Not assisting him to our power in his bodily distresses.  
 Not defending his good name, when we know him slandered.  
 Denying him any neighbourly office to preserve or advance his estate.  
 Not defending him from oppression, when we have power.

Not relieving him in his poverty.  
Not giving liberally or cheerfully.

*Going to Law.*

Not loving peace.  
Going to law upon slight occasions.  
Bearing inward enmity to those we sue.  
Not labouring to make peace among others.

*The use of this CATALOGUE OF SINS is this : Upon days of Humiliation, especially before the Sacrament, read them consideringly over, and at every particular ask thine own heart, Am I guilty of this ? And whatsoever by such Examination thou findest thyself faulty in, confess particularly and humbly to God, with all the heightening circumstances, which may any way increase their guilt, and make serious resolutions against every such sin for the future ; after which thou mayest use this Form following :*

O LORD, I am ashamed, and blush to lift up my face to thee, for my iniquities are increased over my head, and my trespass is grown up even unto heaven. I have wrought all these great provocations, and that in the most provoking manner ; they have not been only single, but repeated acts of sin : for, O Lord, of all this black catalogue which I have now brought forth before thee, how few are there which I have not often committed ? Nay, which are not become even habitual and customary to me ? And to this frequency, I have added both a greediness and obstinacy in sinning, turning into my course as the horse rusheth into the battle, doing evil with both hands, earnestly, yea, hating to be reformed, and casting thy words behind me, quenching thy Spirit within me, which testified against me, to turn me from my evil ways ; and frustrating all those outward means, whether of judgment or mercy, which thou hast used to draw me to thyself. Nay, O Lord, even my repentances may be numbered amongst my greatest sins : they have sometimes been feigned and hypocritical, always so slight and ineffectual, that they have brought forth no fruit in amendment of life ; but I have still returned with the dog to the vomit, and the sow to the mire again, and have added the breach of resolutions and vows to all my former guilts.

Thus, O Lord, I am become out of measure sinful, and since I have thus chosen death, I am most worthy to take part in it, even in the second death, the lake of fire and brimstone. This, this, O Lord, is in justice to be the portion of my cup; to me belongs nothing but shame and confusion of face eternally. But to thee, O Lord God, belongeth mercy and forgiveness, though I have rebelled against thee; O remember not my sins and offences, but according to thy mercy think thou upon me, O Lord, for thy goodness. Thou sentest thy Son to seek and to save that which was lost; behold, O Lord, I have gone astray like a sheep that is lost: O seek thy servant, and bring me back to the Shepherd and Bishop of my soul. Let thy Spirit work in me a hearty sense and detestation of all my abominations, that true contrition of heart which thou hast promised not to despise. And then be thou pleased to look on me, to take away all iniquity, and receive me graciously; and for his sake who hath done nothing amiss, be reconciled to me, who have done nothing well; wash away the guilt of my sins in his blood, and subdue the power of them by his grace: and grant, O Lord, that I may, from this hour, bid a final adieu to all ungodliness and worldly lust, that I may never once more cast a look towards Sodom, or long after the flesh-pots of Egypt; but consecrate myself entirely to thee, to serve thee in righteousness and true holiness, reckoning myself to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God, through Jesus Christ our Lord and blessed Saviour.

#### THIS PENITENTIAL PSALM

MAY ALSO FITLY BE USED.

*Psalm li.*

HAVE mercy upon me, O God, after thy great goodness according to the multitude of thy mercies do away mine offences.

Wash me throughly from my wickedness, and cleanse me from my sin.

For I acknowledge my faults, and my sin is ever before me.

Against thee only have I sinned, and done this evil in thy sight, that thou mightest be justified in thy saying, and clear when thou art judged.

Behold I was shapen in wickedness, and in sin hath my mother conceived me.

But lo, thou requirest truth in the inward parts, and shalt make me to understand wisdom secretly.

Thou shalt purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean, thou shalt wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow.

Thou shalt make me hear of joy and gladness, that the bones which thou hast broken may rejoice.

Turn thy face from my sins, and put out all my misdeeds.

Make me a clean heart, O God, and renew a right spirit within me.

Cast me not away from thy presence, and take not thy holy Spirit from me.

O Give me the comfort of thy help again, and establish me with thy free spirit.

Then shall I teach thy ways unto the wicked, and sinners shall be converted unto thee.

Deliver me from blood-guiltiness, O God, thou that art the God of my health, and my tongue shall sing of thy righteousness.

Thou shalt open my lips, O Lord, and my mouth shall show forth thy praise.

For thou desirest no sacrifice, else would I give it thee : but thou delightest not in burnt-offering.

The sacrifice of God is a troubled spirit ; a broken and contrite heart, O God, shalt thou not despise.

O be favourable and gracious unto Sion, build thou the walls of Jerusalem.

Then shalt thou be pleased with the sacrifices of righteousness, with the burnt-offerings and oblations ; then shall they offer young bullocks upon thine altar.

Glory be to the Father, and to the Son, and to the Holy Ghost.

As it was in the beginning, is now, and ever shall be, world without end. *Amen.*

## PRAYERS

### *Before the receiving of the Blessed Sacrament.*

O most merciful God, who hast in thy great goodness prepared this spiritual feast for sick and famished souls, make my desires and gasping after it, answerable to my needs of

it. I have, with the prodigal, wasted that portion of grace thou bestowedst upon me ; and therefore do infinitely want a supply out of this treasury : But, O Lord, how shall such a wretch as I dare to approach this holy table ? I am a dog, how shall I presume to take the children's bread ? or how shall this spiritual manna, this food of angels, be given to one who hath chosen to feed on husks with swine ? Nay, to one who hath already so often trampled these precious things under foot, either carelessly neglecting or unworthily receiving these holy mysteries ? O Lord, my horrible guiltiness makes me tremble to come, and yet makes me not dare to keep away ; for where, O Lord, shall my polluted soul be washed, if not in this fountain which thou hast opened for sin and for uncleanness ? Hither therefore I come, and thou hast promised that him that cometh to thee, thou wilt in no wise cast out. This is, O Lord, the blood of the New Testament ; grant me so to receive it, that it may be to me for remission of sins ; and though I have so often and so wretchedly broken my part of that Covenant, whereof this sacrament is a seal, yet be thou graciously pleased to make good thine ; to be merciful to my unrighteousness, and to remember my sins and my iniquities no more : and not only so, but to put thy laws into my heart, and to write them in my mind, and by the power of thy grace dispose my soul to such a sincere and constant obedience, that I may never again provoke thee. Lord, grant that in these holy mysteries I may not only commemorate, but effectually receive my blessed Saviour, and all the benefits of his passion : and to that end give me such a preparation of soul as may qualify me for it ; give me a deep sense of my sins and unworthiness, that, being weary and heavy laden, I may be capable of his refreshings, and by being supplied in my own tears, I may be the fitter to be washed in his blood ; raise up my dull and earthly mind from grovelling here below, and inspire it with a holy zeal, that I may with spiritual affection approach this spiritual feast ; and let, O Lord, that infinite love of Christ in dying for so wretched a sinner, inflame my frozen benumbed soul, and kindle in me that sacred fire of love to him, and that so vehement that no waters may quench, no floods drown it, such as may burn up all my dross, not leave one unmortified lust in my soul, and such as may also extend itself to all whom thou hast given me command and example to love, even enemies as well as friends. Finally, O

Lord, I beseech thee to clothe me in the wedding garment, and make me, though of myself a most unworthy, yet by thy mercy an acceptable guest at this holy table ; that I may not eat or drink my own condemnation, but may have my pardon sealed, my weakness repaired, my corruptions subdued, and my soul so inseparably united to thee, that no temptations may ever be able to dissolve the union, but that being begun here in grace, it may be consummated in glory. Grant this, O Lord, for thy dear Son's sake, Jesus Christ.

*Another.*

O BLESSED Jesus, who once offered up thyself for me upon the cross, and now offerest thyself to me in the sacrament, let not, I beseech thee, my impenitence and unworthiness frustrate these so inestimable mercies to me, but qualify me by thy grace to receive the full benefit of them. O Lord, I have abundant need of thee, but am so clogged with guilt, so holden with the cords of my sins, that I am not able to move towards thee. O loose me from this band wherewith Satan and my own lusts have bound me, and draw me that I may run after thee. O Lord, thou seest daily how eagerly I pursue the paths that lead to death ; but when thou invitest me to life and glory, I turn my back and forsake my own mercy. How often hath this feast been prepared, and I have with frivolous excuses absented myself ; or if I have come, it hath been rather to defy than to adore thee. I have brought such troops of thy professed enemies, unrepented sins, along with me, as if I came not to commemorate, but renew thy passion, crucifying thee afresh, and putting thee to open shame. And now of what punishment shall I be thought worthy, who have thus trampled under foot the Son of God, and counted the blood of the covenant an unholy thing ? Yet, O merciful Jesu, this blood is my only refuge : O let this make my atonement, or I perish eternally. Wherefore didst thou shed it, but to save sinners ? Neither can the merit of it be overwhelmed either by the greatness or number of sins. I am a sinner, a great one, O let me find its saving efficacy. Be merciful unto me O God, be merciful to me, for my soul trusteth in thee, and in the clefts of thy wounds shall be my refuge, until thy Father's indignations be overpast. O thou who hast as my High Priest sacrificed for me, intercede for me also, and plead thy meritorious sufferings on my behalf, and suffer not, O my Redeemer, the price of thy blood to be

utterly lost : and grant, O Lord, that as the sins I have to be forgiven are many, so I may love much. Lord, thou seest what faint, what cold affections I have towards thee : O warm and enliven them ; and as in this sacrament that transcendent love of thine in dying for me is shed forth, so I beseech thee let it convey such grace into me, as may enable me to make some returns of love. O let this divine fire descend from heaven into my soul, and let my sins be the burnt-offering for it to consume, that there may not any corrupt affection, any cursed thing, be sheltered in my heart ; that I may never again defile that place which thou hast chosen for thy temple, Thou diedst, O dear Jesu, to redeem me from all iniquity, O let me not again sell myself to work wickedness. But grant that I may approach thee at this time with most sincere and fixed resolutions of an entire reformation, and let me receive such grace and strength from thee, as may enable me faithfully to perform them. Lord, there are many old habituated diseases my soul groans under. [*Here mention thy most prevailing corruptions.*] And though I lie never so long at the pool of Bethesda, come never so often to thy table, yet unless thou be pleased to put forth thy healing virtue, they will still remain uncured. O thou blessed Physician of souls, heal me, and grant that I may now so touch thee, that every one of these loathsome issues may immediately stanch ; that these sicknesses may not be unto death, but unto the glory of thy mercy in pardoning, to the glory of thy grace in purifying so polluted a wretch. O Christ, hear me and grant I may now approach thee with such humility and contrition, love and devotion, that thou mayest vouchsafe to come unto me, and abide with me, communicating to me thyself, and all the merits of thy passion. And then, O Lord, let no accusations of Satan, or my own conscience, amaze or distract me ; but, having peace with thee, let me also have peace in myself, that this wine may make glad, this bread of life may strengthen my heart, and enable me cheerfully to run the way of thy commandments. Grant this, merciful Saviour, for thine own bowels and compassion's sake.

#### EJACULATIONS

*To be used at the Lord's Supper.*

LORD, I am not worthy that thou shouldst come under my roof.

I have sinned, what shall I do unto thee, O thou Preserver of men ?

[*Here recollect some of thy greatest sins.]*

If thou, Lord, shouldst be extreme to mark what is done amiss, O Lord, who may abide it ?

But with the Lord there is mercy, and with him is plenteous redemption.

Behold, O Lord, thy beloved Son, in whom thou art well pleased.

Hearken to the cry of his blood, which speaketh better things than that of Abel.

By his agony and bloody sweat, by his cross and passion, good Lord, deliver me.

O Lamb of God, which takest away the sins of the world, grant me thy peace.

O Lamb of God, which takest away the sins of the world, have mercy on me.

#### *Immediately before Receiving.*

Thou hast said, that he that eateth thy flesh and drinketh thy blood, hath eternal life.

Behold the servant of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word.

#### *At the receiving of the Bread.*

By thy crucified body deliver me from this body of death.

#### *At the Receiving of the Cup.*

O LET this blood of thine purge my conscience from dead works to serve the living God.

Lord, if thou wilt thou canst make me clean.

O touch me, and say, I will, be thou clean

#### *After Receiving.*

WHAT shall I render unto the Lord for all the benefits he hath done unto me ?

I will take the cup of salvation, and call upon the name of the Lord.

Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

Therefore blessing, honour, glory, and power, be to him that sitteth upon the throne, and to the Lamb for ever and ever. *Amen.*

I have sworn, and am steadfastly purposed to keep thy righteous judgments.

O hold thou up my goings in thy paths, that my footsteps slip not.

### A THANKSGIVING

#### *After the Receiving of the Sacrament.*

O THOU Fountain of all goodness, from whom every good and perfect gift cometh, and to whom all honour and glory should be returned, I desire, with all the most fervent and inflamed affections of a grateful heart, to bless and praise thee for those inestimable mercies thou hast vouchsafed me. Lord, what is man that thou shouldst so regard him, as to send thy beloved Son to suffer such bitter things for him? But, Lord, what am I, the worst of men, that I should have any part in this atonement, who have so often despised him and his sufferings? O the height and depth of this mercy of thine, that art pleased to admit me to the renewing of that covenant with thee, which I have so often and so perversely broken! that I, who am not worthy of that daily bread which sustains the body, should be made partaker of this bread of life, which nourisheth the soul, and that the God of all purity should vouchsafe to unite himself to so polluted a wretch! O my God, suffer me no more, I beseech thee, to turn thy grace into wantonness, to make thy mercy an occasion of security, but let this unspeakable love of thine constrain me to obedience, that since my blessed Lord hath died for me, I may no longer live unto myself, but to him. O Lord, I know there is no concord between Christ and Belial; therefore since he hath now been pleased to enter my heart, O let me never permit any lust to chase him thence, but let him that hath so dearly bought me, still keep possession of me, and let nothing ever take me out of his hand. To this end be thou graciously pleased to watch over me, and defend me from all assaults of my spiritual enemies; but especially deliver me from myself, from the treachery of my own heart, which is too willing to yield itself a prey. And where thou seest I am either by nature or custom most weak, there do thou, I beseech thee, magnify thy power in my

preservation. [*Here mention thy most dangerous temptations*]. And, Lord, let my Saviour's sufferings for my sins, and the vows I have now made against them, never depart from my mind ; but let the remembrance of the one enable me to perform the other, that I may never make truce with those lusts which nailed his hands, pierced his side, and made his soul heavy to the death : but that having now anew listed myself under his banner, I may fight manfully, and follow the Captain of my salvation, even through a sea of blood. Lord, lift up my hands that hang down, and my feeble knees, that I faint not in this warfare. O be thou my strength, who am not able of myself to struggle with the slightest temptations. How often have I turned by back in the day of battle ! How many of these sacramental vows have I violated ! And, Lord, I have still the same unconstant deceitful heart to betray me to the breach of this. O thou who art Yea and Amen, in whom there is no shadow of change, communicate to me, I beseech thee, such a stability of mind, that I may no more thus start aside like a broken bow, but that, having my heart whole with thee, I may continue steadfast in thy covenant, that not one good purpose which thy Spirit hath raised in me this day may vanish, as so many have formerly done, but that they may bring forth fruit unto life eternal. Grant this, O merciful Father, through the merits and mediation of my crucified Saviour.

### A PRAYER OF INTERCESSION

*To be used either before or after the Receiving of the Sacrament.*

O most gracious Lord, who so tenderly lovedst mankind as to give thy dear Son out of thy bosom to be a propitiation for the sins of the whole world, grant that the effect of this redemption may be as universal as the design of it, that it may be to the salvation of all. O let no person by impenitence and wilful sin forfeit his part in it, but by the power of thy grace bring all, even the most obstinate sinners, to repentance. Enlighten all that sit in darkness, all Jews, Turks, Infidels, and Heretics ; take from them all blindness, hardness of heart, and contempt of thy word, and so fetch them home, blessed Lord, unto thy fold, that they may be saved among the number of the true Israelites. And for all

those upon whom the name of thy Son is called, grant, O Lord, that their conversations may be such as becometh the gospel of Christ ; that his name be no longer blasphemed among the heathens through us. O blessed Lord, how long shall Christendom continue the vilest part of the world, a sink of all those abominable pollutions which even barbarians detest ? O let not our profession and our practice be always at so wide a distance. Let not the disciples of the holy and immaculate Jesus be of all others the most profane and impure. Let not the subjects of the Prince of Peace be of all others the most contentious and bloody ; but make us Christians in deed as well as in name, that we may walk worthy of that holy vocation wherewith we are called, and may all with one mind and one mouth glorify thee, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. Have mercy on this languishing Church, look down from heaven the habitation of thy holiness and of thy glory. Where is thy zeal and thy strength, the sounding of thy bowels and of thy mercies towards us ? are they restrained ? Be not wroth very sore, O Lord, neither remember iniquity for ever ; but though our backslidings are many, and we have grievously rebelled, yet according to all thy goodness, let thy anger and thy fury be turned away, and cause thy face to shine upon thy sanctuary which is desolate, for the Lord's sake ; and so separate between us and our sins, that they may no longer separate between us and our God. Save and defend all Christian kings, princes and governors, especially those to whom we owe subjection ; plead thou their cause, O Lord, against those that strive with them, and fight thou against those that fight against them : and so guide and assist them in the discharge of that office whereunto thou hast appointed them, that under them we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all goodness and honesty. Bless them that wait at thine altar, open thou their lips that their mouth may show forth thy praise. O let not the lights of the world be put under bushels, but place them in their candlesticks, that they may give light to all that are in the house. Let not Jeroboam's priests profane thy service, but let the seed of Aaron still minister before thee. And, O thou Father of mercies, and God of all comfort, succour and relieve all that are in affliction ; deliver the outcast and poor, help them to right that suffer wrong, let the sorrowful sighing of the prisoners come before thee, and, according to the greatness of thy power, preserve thou those that

appointed to die: grant ease to those that are in pain, supplies to those that suffer want; give to all presumptuous sinners a sense of their sins, and to all despairing, a sight of thy mercies; and do thou, O Lord, for every one abundantly above what they can ask or think. Forgive my enemies, persecutors, and slanderers, and turn their hearts. Pour down thy blessings on all my friends and benefactors, all who have commended themselves to my prayers. [*Here thou mayest name particular persons*]. And grant, O merciful Father, that through this blood of the cross, we may all be presented pure and unblamable, and unreprovable in thy sight; that so we may be admitted unto that place of purity where no unclean thing can enter, there to sing eternal praises to Father, Son, and Holy Ghost for ever.

### *A Prayer in time of common Persecution.*

O BLESSED Saviour, who hast made the cross the bridge of thy disciples, enable me, I beseech thee, willingly and cheerfully to embrace it: thou seest, O Lord, I am fallen into days wherein he that departeth from evil maketh himself a prey; O make me so readily to expose all my outward concernments, when my obedience to thee requireth it, that what falls as a prey to man, may by thee be accepted as a sacrifice to God. Lord, preserve me so by thy grace, that I never suffer as an evil-doer; and then, O Lord, if it be my lot to suffer as a Christian, let me not be ashamed, but rejoice that I am counted worthy to suffer for thy name. O thou who for my sake endurest the cross, and despisest the shame, let the example of that love and patience prevail against all the tremblings of my corrupt heart, that no terrors may ever be able to shake my constancy, but that how long soever thou shalt permit the rod of the wicked to lie on my back, I may never put my hand unto wickedness. Lord, thou knowest whereof I am made, thou rememberest that I am but flesh; and flesh, O Lord, shrinks at the approach of any thing grievous. It is thy Spirit, thy Spirit alone, that can uphold: O establish me with thy free Spirit, that I be not weary and faint in my mind. And by how much the greater thou discernest my weakness, so much the more do thou show forth thy power in me; and make me, O Lord, in all temptations steadfastly to look to thee, the author and finisher of my faith, that so I may run the race which is set before me, and resist even unto blood, striving against sin. O dear Jesus, hear me, and though

Satan desire to have me, that he may winnow me as wheat, yet do thou, O blessed Mediator, pray for me, that my faith fail not, but that, though it be tried with fire, it may be found unto praise, and glory, and honour, at thy appearing. And, O Lord, I beseech thee, grant that I may preserve not only constancy towards God, but charity also towards men, even those whom thou shalt permit to be the instruments of my sufferings. Lord, let me not fail to imitate that admirable meekness of thine, in loving and praying for my greatest persecutors ; and do thou, O Lord, overcome all their evil with thy infinite goodness, turn their hearts, and draw them powerfully to thyself, and at last receive both me and mine enemies into those mansions of peace and rest where thou reignest with the Father and the Holy Ghost, one God for ever.

*A Prayer in time of affliction.*

O JUST and Holy Lord, who with rebukes dost chasten man for sin, I desire unfeignedly to humble myself under thy mighty hand, which now lies heavy upon me. I heartily acknowledge, O Lord, that all I do, all I can suffer, is but the due reward of my deeds, and therefore in thy severest inflictions I must still say, Righteous art thou, O Lord, and upright are thy judgments. But, O Lord I beseech thee, in judgment remember mercy, and though my sins have enforced thee to strike, yet consider my weakness, and let not thy stripes be more heavy or more lasting than thou seest profitable for my soul; correct me, but with the chastisement of a father, not with the wounds of an enemy ; and though thou take not off thy rod, yet take away thine anger. Lord, do not abhor my soul, nor cast thy servant away in displeasure, but pardon my sins, I beseech thee ; and if yet in thy fatherly wisdom thou see fit to prolong thy corrections, thy blessed will be done. I cast myself, O Lord, at thy feet, do with me what thou pleasest. Try me as silver is tried, so thou bring me out purified. And, Lord, make even my flesh also to subscribe to this resignation, that there may be nothing in me that may rebel against thy hand ; but that, having perfectly suppressed all repining thoughts, I may cheerfully drink of this cup. And how bitter soever thou shalt please to make it, Lord, let it prove medicinal, and cure all the diseases of my soul, that it may bring forth in me the peaceable fruit of righteousness. That so these light afflictions which are but

for a moment, may work for me a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory, through Jesus Christ.

### *A Thanksgiving for Deliverance.*

O BLESSED Lord, who art gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repentest thee of the evil, I thankfully acknowledge before thee, that thou hast not dealt with me after my sins, nor rewarded me according to my iniquities. My rebellions, O Lord, deserve to be scourged with scorpions, and thou hast corrected them only with a gentle and fatherly rod ; neither hast thou suffered me to lie long under that, but hast given me a timely and a gracious issue out of my late distresses. O Lord, I will be glad and rejoice in thy mercy, for thou hast considered my trouble, and hast known my soul in adversity. Thou hast smitten, and thou hast healed me. O let these various methods of thine have their proper effects upon my soul, that I who have felt the smart of thy chastisements, may stand in awe and not sin ; and that I who have likewise felt the sweet refreshings of thy mercy, may have my heart ravished with it, and knit to thee in the firmest bands of love ; and that by both I may be preserved in a constant entire obedience to thee all my days ; through Jesus Christ.

### *Directions for the Time of Sickness.*

WHEN thou findest thyself visited with sickness, thou art immediately to remember that it is God which with rebukes doth chaste man for sin. And therefore let thy first care be, to find out what it is that provokes him to smite thee ; and to that purpose examine thine own heart, search diligently what guilts lie there, confess them humbly and penitently to God, and for the greater security renew thy repentance for all the old sins of thy former life, beg most earnestly and importunately his mercy and pardon in Christ Jesus, and put on sincere and zealous resolutions of forsaking every evil way for the rest of that time which God shall spare thee. And that thy own heart deceive thee not in this so weighty a business, it will be wisdom to send for some godly divine, not only to assist thee with his prayers, but with his counsel also. And to that purpose open thy heart so freely to him that he may be able to judge whether thy repentance be such as may give thee confidence to appear before God's dreadful tribunal, and that if it be not, he may help thee what he can

towards the making it so. And when thou hast thus provided for thy better part, thy soul, then consider thy body also, and as the wise man saith, ECCLUS. xxxviii. 12, "Give place to the physician, for the Lord hath created him." Use such means as may be most likely to recover thy health, but always remember that the success of them must come from God ; and beware of Asa's sin, who sought to the physicians, and not to the Lord, 2 CHRON. vi. 12. Dispose also betimes of thy temporal affairs, by making thy will, and setting all things in such order as thou meanest finally to leave them in, and defer it not till thy sickness grow more violent ; for then perhaps thou shalt not have such use of thy reason as may fit thee for it ; or if thou have, it will be then much more seasonable to employ thy thoughts on higher things, on the world thou art going to, rather than that thou art about to leave ; we cannot carry the things of this world with us when we go hence, and it is not fit we should carry the thoughts of them. Therefore let those be early dispatched, that they may not disturb thee at last.

*A Prayer for a Sick Person.*

O MERCIFUL and righteous Lord, the God of health and of sickness, of life and of death, I most unfeignedly acknowledge that my great abuse of those many days of strength and welfare, which thou hast afforded me, hath most justly deserved thy present visitation. I desire, O Lord, humbly to accept of this punishment of mine iniquity, and to bear the indignation of the Lord, because I have sinned against him. And, O thou merciful Father, who designest not the ruin, but the amendment, of those whom thou scourgest, I beseech thee by thy grace so to sanctify this correction of thine to me, that this sickness of my body may be a means of health to my soul ; make me diligent to search my heart, and do thou, O Lord, enable me to discover every accursed thing, how closely soever concealed there, that by the removal thereof, I may make way for the removal of this punishment. Heal my soul, O Lord, which hath sinned against thee ; and then, if it be thy blessed will, heal my body also : restore the voice of joy and health unto my dwelling, that I may live to praise thee, and to bring forth fruits of repentance. But if in thy wisdom thou hast otherwise disposed, if thou hast determined that this sickness shall be unto death, I beseech thee to fit and prepare me for it : give me that sincere

and earnest repentance, to which thou hast promised mercy and pardon ; wean my heart from the world, and all its fading vanities, and make me to gasp and pant after those more excellent and durable joys, which are at thy right hand for ever. Lord, lift thou up the light of thy countenance upon me, and in all the pains of my body, in all the agonies of my spirit, let thy comforts refresh my soul, and enable me patiently to wait till my change come. And grant, O Lord, that when my earthly house of this tabernacle is dissolved, I may have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens ; and that for his sake, who by his precious blood hath purchased it for me, even Jesus Christ.

*A Thanksgiving for Recovery.*

O GRACIOUS Lord, the God of the spirits of all flesh, in whose hand my time is, I praise and magnify thee, that thou hast in love to my soul delivered it from the pit of corruption, and restored me to health again ; it is thou alone, O Lord, that hast preserved my life from destruction, thou hast chastened and corrected me, but thou hast not given me over unto death O let this life which thou hast thus graciously spared, be wholly consecrated to thee. Behold, O Lord, I am by thy mercy made whole, O make me strictly careful to sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto me. Lord, let not this reprieve thou hast now given me, make me secure, as thinking that my Lord delayeth his coming ; but grant me, I beseech thee, to make a right use of this long suffering of thine, and so to employ every minute of that time thou shalt allow me, that when thou shalt appear, I may have confidence, and not be ashamed before thee at thy coming. Lord, I have found by this approach towards death, how dreadful a thing it is to be taken unprepared ; O let it be a perpetual admonition to me to watch for my Master's coming. And when the pleasures of sin shall present themselves to entice me, O make me to remember how bitter they will be at the last. O Lord, hear me, and as thou hast in much mercy afforded me time, so grant me also grace to work out my own salvation, to provide oil in my lamp, that when the Bridegroom cometh, I may go in with him to the marriage. Grant this, I beseech thee, for thy dear Son's sake.

*A Prayer at the approach of Death.*

O ETERNAL and ever-living God, who first breathedst into

man the breath of life, and when thou takest away that breath he dies and is turned again to his dust ; look with compassion on me thy poor creature who am now drawing near the gates of death, and, which is infinitely more terrible, the bar of judgment. Lord, my own heart condemns me, and thou art infinitely greater than my heart, and knowest all things. The sins I know and remember, fill me with horror ; but there are also multitudes of others, which I either observed not at that time, or have since carelessly forgot, which are all present to thee. Thou settest my misdeeds before thee, and my secret sins in the light of thy countenance ; and to what a mountainous heap must the minutely provocations of so many years arise ? how long shall one so ungodly stand in thy judgment, or such a sinner in the congregation of the righteous ? And to add yet more to my terror, my very repentance, I fear, will not abide the trial ; my frequent relapses heretofore, have sufficiently witnessed the unsincerity of my past resolutions. And then, O Lord, what can secure me that my present dislikes of my sins are not rather the effects of my amazing danger than of any real change ? And, O Lord, I know thou art not mocked, nor wilt accept of any thing that is not perfectly sincere. O Lord, when I consider this, fearfulness and trembling come upon me ; and an horrible dread overwhelmeth me ; my flesh trembleth for fear of thee, and my heart is wounded within me. But, O Lord, one deep calleth upon another, the depth of my misery upon the depth of thy mercy : Lord, save now, or I perish eternally. O thou that wildest not that any should perish, but that all would come to repentance, bring me, I beseech thee, though thus late, to a sincere repentance, such as thou wilt accept, who triest the heart. Create in me, O God, a clean heart, and renew a right spirit within me. Lord, one day is with thee as a thousand years ; O let thy mighty Spirit work in me now in this my last day, whatsoever thou seest wanting to fit me for thy mercy and acceptance. Give me a perfect and entire hatred of my sins, and enable me to present thee with that sacrifice of a broken and contrite heart, which thou hast promised not to despise ; that by this I may be made capable of that atonement which thy dear Son hath by the more excellent oblation of himself made for all repenting sinners. He is the propitiation for our sins, he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities, the chastisement of our peace was on him ; O heal me by his

stripes, and let the cry of his blood drown the clamour of my sins, I am indeed a child of wrath, but he is the Son of thy love ; for his sake spare me, O Lord, spare thy creature, whom he hath redeemed with his most precious blood, and be not angry with me for ever. In his wounds, O Lord, I take sanctuary, O let not thy vengeance pursue me to this city of refuge : my soul hangeth upon him, O let me not perish with a Jesus, with a Saviour, in my arms. But by his agony and bloody sweat, by his cross and passion, by all that he did and suffered for sinners, good Lord, deliver me ; deliver me, I beseech thee, from the wages of my sins, thy wrath and everlasting damnation, in this time of my tribulation, in the hour of death, and in the day of judgment. Hear me, O Lord, hear me, and do not now repay my former neglects of thy calls, by refusing to answer me in this time of my greatest need. Lord, there is but a step between me and death, O let not my sun go down upon thy wrath, but seal my pardon before I go hence and be no more seen. Thy loving-kindness is better than life itself, O let me have that in exchange, and I shall most gladly lay down this mortal life. Lord, thou knowest all my desire, and my groaning is not hid from thee ; deal thou with me, O Lord, according to thy name, for sweet is thy mercy ; take away the sting of death, the guilt of my sins, and then though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil ; I will lay me down in peace, and Lord, when I awake up, let me be satisfied with thy presence in thy glory. Grant this, merciful God, for his sake who is both the Redeemer and Mediator of sinners, even Jesus Christ.

### PSALMS.

PUT me not to rebuke, O Lord, in thine anger, neither chasten me in thy heavy displeasure.

There is no health in my flesh because of thy displeasure, neither is there any rest in my bones by reason of my sins.

For my wickednesses are gone over my head, and are a sore burden too heavy for me to bear.

My wounds stink and are corrupt through my foolishness.

Therefore is my spirit vexed within me, and my heart within me is desolate.

My sins have taken such hold upon me that I am not able

to look up: yea, they are more in number than the hairs of my head, and my heart hath failed me.

But thou, O Lord God, art full of compassion and mercy, long-suffering, plenteous in goodness and truth.

Turn thee unto me and have mercy upon me, for I am desolate and in misery.

If thou, Lord, shouldst be extreme to mark what is done amiss, O Lord, who may abide it?

O remember not the sins and offences of my youth, but according to thy mercy think thou upon me for thy goodness.

Look upon my adversity and misery, and forgive me all my sin.

Hide not thy face from thy servant, for I am in trouble, O haste thee and hear me.

Out of the deep do I call unto thee, Lord, hear my voice.

Turn thee, O Lord, and deliver my soul, O save me for thy mercies' sake.

O go not from me, for trouble is hard at hand, and there is none to help.

I stretch forth my hands unto thee, my soul gaspeth unto thee, as a thirsty land.

Draw nigh unto my soul and save it; O deliver me, because of my enemies.

For my soul is full of trouble, and my life draweth nigh unto hell.

Save me from the lion's mouth, hear me from among the horns of the unicorns.

O set me up upon the rock that is higher than I, for thou art my hope, and a strong tower for me against the enemy.

Why art thou so heavy, O my soul, and why art thou so disquieted within me?

Put thy trust in God, for I will yet give him thanks for the help of his countenance.

The Lord shall make good his loving-kindness towards me, yea, thy mercy, O Lord, endureth for ever, despise not then the work of thine own hands.

O God, thou art my God, early will I seek thee.

My soul thirsteth for thee, my flesh also longeth after thee in a barren and dry land, where no water is.

Like as the hart desireth the water-brook, so longeth my soul after thee, O God.

My soul is athirst for God, even for the living God, when shall I come to appear before the presence of God?

How amiable are thy dwellings, O Lord of Hosts?

My soul hath a desire and longing to enter into the courts of the Lord; my flesh and my heart rejoice in the living God.

O that I had wings like a dove! for then would I fly away and be at rest.

O send out thy light and thy truth, that they may lead me, and bring me unto thy holy hill, and to thy dwelling.

For one day in thy courts is better than a thousand.

I had rather be a door-keeper in the house of my God, than to dwell in the tents of wickedness.

I should utterly have fainted, but that I believed verily to see the goodness of the Lord, in the land of the living.

Thou art my helper and my redeemer, O Lord, make no long tarrying.

### EJACULATIONS.

O LORD, of whom may I seek for succour but of thee? who for my sins art justly displeased? Yet, O Lord God most holy, O Lord most mighty, O holy and most merciful Saviour, deliver me not into the bitter pains of eternal death.

Thou knowest, Lord, the secrets of my heart, shut not up thy merciful eyes to my prayer, but hear me, O Lord most holy, O God most mighty, O holy and merciful Saviour, thou most worthy Judge eternal, suffer me not at my last hour for any pains of death to fall from thee.

Father, I have sinned against heaven and before thee, and am not worthy to be called thy child; yet, O Lord, do not thou cast off the bowels and compassions of a Father; but even as a Father pitith his own children, so be thou merciful unto me.

Lord, the prince of this world cometh, O let him have nothing in me, but as he accuseth, do thou absolve; he lays many and grievous things to my charge, which he can too well prove; I have nothing to say for myself, do thou answer for me, O Lord my God.

O Lord, I am clothed with filthy garments, and Satan stands at my right hand to resist me; O be thou pleased to rebuke him, and pluck me as a brand out of the fire; cause

mine iniquities to pass from me, and clothe me with the righteousness of thy Son.

Behold, O God, the devil is coming towards me, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. O save and deliver me, lest he devour my soul like a lion, and tear it in pieces while there is none to help.

O my God, I know that no unclean thing can enter into thy kingdom, and I am nothing but pollution, my very righteousness are as filthy rags. O wash me and make me white in the blood of the Lamb, that so I may be fit to stand before thy throne.

Lord, the snares of death compass me round about, O let not the pains of hell also take hold upon me, but though I find trouble and heaviness, yet, O Lord, I beseech thee deliver my soul.

O dear Jesus, who hast bought me with the precious price of thine own blood ; challenge now thy purchase, and let not the malice of hell pluck me out of thy hand.

O blessed High Priest, who art able to save them to the utmost who come unto God by thee, save me, I beseech thee, who have no hope, but on thy merits and intercession.

O God, I confess I have defaced that image of thine thou didst imprint upon my soul ; yet, O thou faithful Creator, have pity on thy creature.

O Jesu, I have by my many and grievous sins crucified thee afresh, yet thou who prayedst for thy persecutors, intercede for me also, and suffer not, O my Redeemer, my soul (the price of thy blood) to perish.

O Spirit of grace, I have by my horrid impieties done despite to thee ; yet, O blessed Comforter, though I have often grieved thee, be thou pleased to succour and relieve me, and say unto my soul, I am thy salvation.

Mine eyes look unto thee, O Lord, in thee is my trust, O cast not out my soul.

O Lord, in thee have I trusted, let me never be confounded.

O BLESSED Lord, who scourgest every son whom thou receivest, let me not be weary of thy correction, but give me such a perfect subjection to thee the Father of spirits, that this chastisement may be for my profit, that I may thereby be partaker of thy holiness.

O thou Captain of my salvation, who wert made perfect

by sufferings, sanctify to me all the pains of body, all the terrors of mind, which thou shalt permit to fall upon me.

Lord, my sins have deserved eternal torments, make me cheerfully and thankfully to bear my present pains, chasten me as thou pleasest here, that I may not be condemned with the world.

Lord, the waters are come in even unto my soul. O let thy Spirit move upon these waters, and make them like the pool of Bethesda, that they may cure whatsoever spiritual disease thou discernest in me.

O Christ, who first sufferedst many and grievous things, and then enteredst into glory, make me so to suffer with thee, that I may also be glorified with thee.

O dear Jesus, who humbledst thyself to the death of the cross for me, let that death of thine sweeten the bitterness of mine.

When thou hadst overcome the sharpness of death, thou didst open the kingdom of heaven to all believers.

I believe that thou shalt come to be my Judge.

I pray thee, therefore, help thy servant whom thou hast redeemed with thy most precious blood.

Make me to be numbered with thy saints in glory everlasting.

Thou art the resurrection and the life, he that believeth in thee, though he were dead, yet shall he live: Lord, I believe, help thou my unbelief.

My flesh and my heart faileth, but God is the strength of my heart, and my portion for ever.

I desire to be dissolved, and to be with Christ, which is far better: Lord, I groan earnestly, desiring to be clothed upon with that house from heaven.

I desire to put off this my tabernacle. O be pleased to receive me into everlasting habitations.

Bring my soul out of prison, that I may give thanks unto thy name.

Lord, I am here to wrestle, not only with flesh and blood, but with principalities and powers, and spiritual wickedness. O take me from the tents of Kedar, into the heavenly Jerusalem, where Satan shall be utterly trodden under my feet.

I cannot here attend one minute to thy service without distraction, O take me up to stand before thy throne, where I shall serve thee day and night.

I am here in heaviness through many tribulations, O

receive me into that place of rest, where all tears shall be wiped from my eyes, where there shall be no more death, nor sorrow, nor crying, nor pain.

I am here in the state of banishment and absence from the Lord, O take me where I shall for ever behold thy face, and follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth.

I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith, henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness.

**O BLESSED** Jesu, who hath loved me, and washed me from my sins in thine own blood, receive my soul.

Into thy hands I commend my spirit, for thou hast redeemed me, O Lord, thou God of truth. Come Lord Jesu, come quickly.

### PRAYERS

#### FOR THEIR USE WHO MOURN IN SECRET FOR THE PUBLIC CALAMITIES, &c.

**PSALM** lxxiv. *O God, wherefore art thou absent from us so long? why is thy wrath so hot against the sheep of thy pasture? &c.*

**PSALM** lxxxix. *O God, the heathen are come into thine inheritance: thy holy temple have they defiled, and made Jerusalem an heap of stones, &c.*

**PSALM** lxxx. *Hear, O thou Shepherd of Israel; thou that leadest Joseph like a sheep: show thyself also, thou that sittest upon the Cherubims, &c.*

#### *A Prayer to be used in these times of Calamity.*

**O LORD** God, to whom vengeance belongeth, I desire humbly to confess before thee, both on my own behalf, and that of this nation, that these many years of calamity we have groaned under, are but the just, (yea, mild) returns of those many more years of our provocations against thee, and that thy present wrath is but the due punishment of thy abused mercy. O Lord, thou hast formerly abounded to us in blessings above all the people of the earth. Thy candle shined upon our heads, and we delighted ourselves in thy great goodness. Peace was within our walls, and plenteousness within our

palaces ; there was no decay, no leading into captivity, and no complaining in our streets : but we turned this grace into wantonness, we abused our peace to security, our plenty to riot and luxury, and made those good things which should have endeared our hearts to thee, the occasion of estranging them from thee. Nay, O Lord, thou gavest us yet more precious mercies, thou wert pleased thyself to pitch thy tabernacle with us, to establish a pure and glorious church among us, and give us thy word to be a lamp unto our feet, and a light unto our paths : but, O Lord, we have made no other use of that light than to conduct us to the chambers of death ; we have dealt proudly and not hearkened to thy commandments, and by rebelling against the light, have purchased to ourselves so much the heavier portion in the outer darkness. And now, O Lord, had the overflowings of thy vengeance been answerable to that of our sin, we had long since been swept away with a swift destruction, and there had been none of us alive at this day to implore thy mercy. But thou art a gracious God, slow to anger, and hast proceeded with us with much patience and long-suffering, thou hast sent thy judgments to awaken us to repentance, and hast also allowed us space for it : but alas ! we have perverted this mercy of thine beyond all the former, we return not to him that smiteth us, neither do we seek the Lord ; we are slidden back by a perpetual backsliding ; no man repenteth him of his wickedness, or saith, What have I done ? 'Tis true indeed we fear the rod, (we dread every suffering, so that we are ready to buy it off with the foulest sin,) but we fear not Him that hath appointed it, but by a wretched obstinacy harden our necks against thee, and refuse to return. And now, O God, what balm is there in Gilead that can cure us, who when thou wouldest heal us, will not be healed ? We know thou hast pronounced that there is no peace to the wicked, and how shall we then pray for peace, that still retain our wickedness ? This, this, O Lord, is our sorest disease ; O give us medicines to heal this sickness, heal our souls, and then we know thou canst soon heal our land. Lord, thou hast long spoken by thy word to our ears, by thy judgments even to all our senses, but unless thou speak by thy Spirit to our hearts, all other calls will still be ineffectual. O send out this voice, and that a mighty voice, such as may awake us out of this lethargy : Thou that didst call Lazarus out of the grave, O be pleased to call us who are dead, yea, putrefied in tres-

passes and sins, and make us to awake to righteousness. And though, O Lord, our frequent resistances even of those inward calls, have justly provoked thee to give us up to the lusts of our own heart; yet, O thou boundless Ocean of mercy, who art good not only beyond what we can deserve, but what we can wish, do not withdraw the influence of thy grace, and take not thy holy Spirit from us. Thou wert found of those that sought thee not: O let that act of mercy be repeated to us who are so desperately, yet so insensibly sick, that we cannot so much as look after the Physician; and by how much our ease is the more dangerous, so much the more sovereign remedies do thou apply. Lord, help us, and consider not so much our unworthiness of thy aid, as our irremediable ruin, if we want it; save, Lord, or we perish eternally. To this end dispense to us in our temporal interest what thou seest may best secure our spiritual; if a greater degree of outward misery will tend to the curing our inward, Lord, spare not thy rod, but strike yet more sharply. Cast out this devil, though with never so much foaming and tearing. But if thou seest that some return of mercy may be most likely to melt us, O be pleased so far to condescend to our wretchedness, as to afford us that, and, whether by thy sharper or thy gentler methods, bring us home to thyself. And then, O Lord, we know thy hand is not shortened, that it cannot save: when thou hast delivered us from our sins, thou canst and wilt deliver us from our troubles. O show us thy mercy and grant us thy salvation, that, being redeemed both in our bodies and spirits, we may glorify thee in both, in a cheerful obedience, and praise the name of our God, that hath dealt wonderfully with us, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

### *A Prayer for this Church.*

O THOU great God of recompenses, who turnest a fruitful land into barrenness for the wickedness of them that dwell therein; thou hast most justly executed that fatal sentence on this Church, which having once been the perfection of beauty, the joy of the whole earth, is now become a scorn and derision to all that are round about her. O Lord, what could have been done to thy vineyard that thou hast not done in it? And since it hath brought forth nothing but wild grapes, it is perfectly just with thee to take away the hedge thereof, and let it be eaten up. But, O Lord, though our iniquities testify

against us, yet do thou it for thy name's sake ; for our backslidings are many, we have sinned against thee. O the Hope of Israel, the Saviour thereof in time of trouble, why shouldst thou be a stranger in the land, as a wayfaring man that turneth aside to tarry for a night ? Why shouldst thou be as a man astonished ? as a mighty man that cannot save ? Yet thou, O Lord, art in the midst of us, and we are called by thy name, leave us not ; deprive us of what outward enjoyment thou pleasest, take from us the opportunities of our luxury, and it may be a mercy ; but O take not from us the means of our reformation, for that is the most direful expression of thy wrath. And though we have hated the light, because our deeds were evil, yet, O Lord, do not, by withdrawing it, condemn us to walk on still in darkness, but let it continue to shine till it have guided our feet into the way of peace. O Lord, arise, stir up thy strength and come and help, and deliver not the soul of thy turtle dove [*this disconsolate Church*] unto the multitude of the enemy, but help her, O God, and that right early. But if, O Lord, our rebellions have so provoked thee, that the *ark must wander in the wilderness till all this murmuring generation be consumed*, yet let not that perish with us, but bring it at last into a Canaan, and *let our more innocent posterity see that which in thy just judgment thou deniest to us*. In the mean time let us not cease to bewail that desolation our sins have wrought, to think upon the stones of Sion, and pity to see her in the dust, nor ever be ashamed or afraid to own her in her lowest and most persecuted condition, but esteem the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures of Egypt, and so approve our constancy to this our afflicted mother, that her blessed Lord and head may own us with mercy when we shall come in the glory of thee his Father with the holy angels. Grant this, merciful Lord, for the same Jesus Christ his sake.

### *A Prayer for the Peace of the Church.*

LORD Jesus Christ, which of thine Almightyness madest all creatures both visible and invisible, which of thy godly wisdom governest and settest things in most goodly order, which of thine unspeakable goodness keepest, defendest, and furtherest all things, which of thy deep mercy restorest the decayed, renewest the fallen, raisest the dead ; vouch safe, we pray thee, at last to cast down thy countenance upon

thy well beloved spouse, the church, but let it be that amiable and merciful countenance wherewith thou pacifiest all things in heaven, in earth, and whatsoever is above heaven and under the earth : vouchsafe to cast upon us those tender and pitiful eyes with which thou didst once behold Peter that great shepherd of thy church, and forthwith he remembered himself and repented ; with which eyes thou once didst view the scattered multitude, and wert moved with compassion, that for lack of a good shepherd they wandered as sheep dispersed and strayed asunder. Thou seest, O good Shepherd, what sundry sorts of wolves have broken into thy sheepcotes ; so that if it were possible the very perfect persons should be brought into error ; thou seest with what winds, with what waves, with what storms, thy silly ship is tossed, thy ship wherein thy little flock is in peril to be drowned. And what is now left but that it utterly sink, and we all perish ? Of this tempest and storm we may thank our own wickedness and sinful living, we discern it well and confess it ; we discern thy righteousness, and we bewail our unrighteousness : but we appeal to thy mercy, which surmounteth all thy works ; we have now suffered much punishment, being scourged with so many wars, consumed with such losses of goods, shaken with so many floods, and yet appears there no where any haven or port unto us : being thus tired and forlorn among so strange evils, but still every day more grievous punishments and more seem to hang over our heads, we complain not of thy sharpness, most tender Saviour, but we discern here also thy mercy, forasmuch as much grievouser plagues we have deserved. But, O most merciful Jesus, we beseech thee that thou wilt not consider nor weigh what is due for our deservings, but rather what becometh thy mercy, without which neither the angels in Heaven can stand sure before thee, much less we silly vessels of clay. Have mercy on us, O Redeemer, which art easy to be entreated, not that we be worthy of thy mercy, but give thou this glory unto thine own Name. Suffer not those which either have not known thee, or do envy thy glory, continually to triumph over us, and say, where is their God, where is their Redeemer, where is their Saviour, where is their Bridegroom, that they thus boast on ? These opprobrious words redound unto thee, O Lord, while by our evils men weigh and esteem thy goodness ; they think we be forsaken, whom they see not

amended. Once when thou sleptst in the ship, and a tempest suddenly arising threatened death to all in the ship, thou awokest at the outcry of a few disciples, and straightway at thine Almighty word the waters couched, the winds fell, the storm was suddenly turned into a great calm ; the dumb waters knew their Maker's voice. Now in this far greater tempest, wherein not a few men's bodies be in danger, but innumerable souls, we beseech thee at the cry of thy holy Church, which is in danger of drowning, that thou wilt awake. So many thousands of men do cry, *Lord save us, we perish* : the tempest is past man's power; it is thy word that must do the deed : Lord Jesu, only say thou with a word of thy mouth, *Cease, O tempest, and forthwith shall the desired calm appear*. Thou wouldest have spared so many thousands of most wicked men, if in the city of Sodom had been found but ten good men. Now here be so many thousands of men which love the glory of thy Name, which sigh for the beauty of thy house, and wilt thou not at these men's prayers let go thine anger, and remember thine accustomed and old mercies ? Shalt thou not with thy heavenly policy turn our folly into thy glory ? Shalt thou not turn wicked men's evils into thy Church's good ? For thy mercy is wont then most of all to succour, when the thing is with us past remedy, and neither the might nor wisdom of men can help it. Thou alone bringest things that be never so out of order into order again, which art the only author and maintainer of peace. Thou framedst that old confusion wherein without order, without fashion, confusedly lay the discordant seeds of things, and with a wonderful order the things of that nature fought together, thou didst allay and knit in a perpetual band. But how much greater confusion is this where is no charity, no fidelity, no bonds of love, no reverence neither of laws nor yet of rulers, no agreement of opinions, but, as it were in a misordered choir, every man singeth a contrary note ! Among the Heavenly planets is no dissension, the elements keep their place, every one do the office whereunto they be appointed : And wilt thou suffer thy spouse, for whose sake all things were made thus by continual discords to perish ? Shall thou suffer the wicked spirits, which be authors and workers of discord, to bear such a swing in thy kingdom unchecked ? Shalt thou suffer the strong captain of mischief, whom thou once overthrewest, again to invade thy tents, and to spoil thy soldiers ? When thou wert here

a man conversant among men, at thy voice fled the devils. Send forth, we beseech thee, O Lord, thy Spirit, which may drive away out of the breasts of all them that profess thy Name, the wicked spirits, masters of riot, of covetousness, of vain-glory, of carnal lust, of mischief and discord. *Create in us, O our God and king, a clean heart, and renew thy holy Spirit in our breasts, pluck not from us thy holy Ghost. Render unto us the joy of thy saving health, and with thy principal Spirit strengthen thy spouse and the herdmen thereof.* By this spirit thou reconcilest the earthly to the heavenly: by this thou didst frame and reduce so many tongues, so many nations, so many sundry sorts of men into one body of a church, which body by the same spirit is knit to thee their Head. This Spirit if thou wilt vouchsafe to renew in all men's hearts, then shall all these foreign miseries cease, or if they cease not, they shall turn to the profit and avail of them which love thee. Stay this confusion, set in order this horrible chaos, O Lord Jesus, let thy Spirit stretch out itself upon these waters of evil wavering opinions. And because thy Spirit, which, according to thy prophet's saying, *containeth all things*, hath also the science of speaking; make, that like as unto all them which be of thy house is one light, one baptism, one God, one hope, one Spirit, so they may also have one voice, one note, one song, professing one catholic truth. When thou didst mount up to Heaven triumphantly, thou threwest out from above thy precious things, thou gavest gifts amongst men, thou dealtest sundry rewards of thy Spirit. Renew again from above thy old bountifulness; give that thing to thy Church, now fainting and growing downward, that thou gavest unto her shooting up at her first beginning. Give unto Princes and Rulers the grace so to stand in awe of thee, that they so may guide the commonweal, as they should shortly render account unto thee that art the King of kings. Give wisdom to be always assistant unto them, that whatsoever is best to be done, they may espie it in their minds, and pursue the same in their doings. Give to the bishops the gift of prophecy, that they may declare and interpret holy Scripture, not of their own brain, but of thine inspiring. Give them the threefold Charity which thou once demandedst of Peter, what time thou didst betake unto him the charge of thy sheep. Give to the priests the love of soberness and of chastity. Give to thy people a good will to follow thy commandments, and a ready-

ness to obey such persons as thou hast appointed over them. So shall it come to pass, if through thy gift thy princes shall command that thou requirest, if thy pastors and herdmen shall teach the same, and thy people obey them both, that the old dignity and tranquillity of the Church shall return again with a goodly order unto the glory of thy Name. Thou sparest the Ninevites appointed to be destroyed, as soon as they converted to repentance ; and wilt thou despise thy house fallen down at thy feet which instead of sackcloth, hath sighs, and instead of ashes, tears ? Thou promisest forgiveness to such as turn unto thee, but this self thing is thy gift, a man to turn with his whole heart unto thee, to the intent all our goodness should redound unto thy glory. Thou art the Maker, repair the work that thou hast fashioned. Thou art the Redeemer, save that thou hast bought. Thou art the Saviour, suffer not them to perish which do hang on thee. Thou art the Lord and owner, challenge thy possession. Thou art the head, help thy members. Thou art the King, give us a reverence of thy laws. Thou art the Prince of Peace, breathe upon us brotherly love. Thou art the God, have pity on thy humble beseechers, be thou according to Paul's saying, all things in all men, to the intent the whole choir of thy Church with agreeing minds and constant voices for mercy obtained at thy hands, may give thanks to the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost : which after the most perfect example of concord be distinguished in property of persons and one in nature : to whom be praise and glory eternally. *Amen*

THE END.



# INDEX.

---

- Adultery, 174  
Alms-giving, 255, 256, 257  
Ambition, 133  
Anger, 127  
Apparel, 159  
Baptism, 71, 216; its vow, 72  
Bargaining, 149, 184  
Blasphemy, 95  
Blessing of Parents, 219  
Borrowing, 179  
Brawling, 199  
Brethren, 223  
Calamities, 193  
Cares, 146  
Catechizing, 68  
Censoriousness, 241  
Charity, 86, 237, 255, 263, 267  
Chastity, 138  
Children, their Duties, 211, 215  
Christ, 41; his sufferings 89; his love, 90  
Christian Duties possible and pleasant, 269  
Church, 62, 66  
Commands, 40, 61  
Confession, 83, 88, 102  
Consideration, 129—132  
Contentedness, 132  
Contrition, 82  
Corrections, 59  
Courteousness, 198  
Covenant, xxvi; New, 91  
Covetousness, 133, 161, 178  
Credit, 189, 263; lost, 194  
Cruelties, 172  
Cursing, 95, 199  
Debts, paying, 179  
Deceit, 182  
Despair, 43  
Detraction, 201  
Devotion, 86  
Diligence, 136, 235  
Drinking, 144  
Drunkenness, 144; excuses for it, 145  
Duties to those in want, 202  
— to Relations, 204, 223  
— to all Ranks and Qualities, 200, 202  
Duty to God, 38—56; to ourselves, 119; to magistrates, 206; to parents, 206, 211, 215; to pastors, 87, 208; to children, 216; to husband, 226; to wife, 228  
Duty of Servants, 233; of Masters, 235  
Eating, 142  
Education of Children, 217  
Enemies, 242, 267  
Envy, 134, 200  
Example, 221  
Faith, 39, 83  
False reports, 189, 194  
False witness, 190  
Fasting, 116  
Fear, 49  
Feasts and Fasts, 66  
Fidelity, 234  
Forgiving, 248  
Fraud, 186  
Friendship, 231  
Gaming, 158  
God, 39, 66, 95, 102  
Goods of Nature, 122; of Fortune, 123; of Grace, 123; of Neighbour, 177  
Graces, 85, 87  
Gratitude, 204  
Guide in Spirituals, 87  
Health, 142  
Honour of God, 62, 95  
Hope, 42  
Humiliation, 81  
Humility, 57, 119  
Husband, 228  
Idolatry, 118  
Improving of Talents, 136  
Inconsideration, the danger of, 136  
Industry, 136  
Infirmitiess, 193, 225  
Injuries, 172  
Injustice, 186  
Justice (see Neighbour)  
Kindness of God, 44  
Kindred, 204  
King, 206  
Law-suits, 266  
Light of Nature, 37; of Scripture, 38

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| Lord's Day, 65                                       | Repentance, 112                         |
| Lord's Supper, 55, 77                                | Reports, false, 189                     |
| Love of God, 44                                      | Reproach, 147                           |
| Love to God, fruits of, 46                           | Resolution, 84                          |
| Love to Brethren, 223                                | Restitution, 188                        |
| Lying, 196   | Sacraments, 71, 77—94                   |
| Magistrates, 206                                     | Sacrilege, 64                           |
| Maiming, 171   | Scoffing, 192                           |
| Malice, 177  | Scriptures, 38, 67                      |
| Marriage, 214, 264                                   | Servants, 233                           |
| Masters, 235   | Sins, 78, 85, 104                       |
| Meekness, 127, 198                                   | Slanders, 190                           |
| Minister, 87, 208                                    | Sleep, 156                              |
| Murder, 167  | Sloth, mischief of, 157                 |
| Murmuring, 132                                       | Sobriety, 112                           |
| Nature, 136  | Soul, <i>vide</i> Preface               |
| Neighbours, 162, 174, 177, 189, 195,<br>237          | Sports, 158                             |
| Oaths, 95—102  | Stealing, 181                           |
| Obedience, 84, 207, 210, 213                         | Swearing, 95, 199                       |
| Offences against God and man, the<br>difference, 245 | Temperance, 142—156                     |
| Oppression, 178                                      | Thankfulness, 59                        |
| Parents, 206, 211, 215                               | Thanksgiving, 105                       |
| Patience, 58   | Theft, 179, 181                         |
| Peace-making, 265                                    | Threatenings, 40                        |
| Perjury, 97  | Trust, deceived, 183                    |
| Petitions, 103                                       | Truth, 196                              |
| Poor, 203, 255                                       | Uncleanness, 139                        |
| Prayer, 101—112                                      | Vain-glory, 124                         |
| Preachers, 208, 210                                  | Wants of parents to be supplied,<br>214 |
| Preaching, 69  | Watchfulness, 101                       |
| Presumption, 43                                      | Whisperings, 191                        |
| Pride, 119, 172, 198                                 | Wife, 174, 226                          |
| Promises, 40   | Witness, false, 196                     |
| Recreation, 156                                      | Word of God, 67                         |
| Relations, 204, 223                                  | Works, 58                               |
|  | Worship, 102                            |









am  
jas

Princeton Theological Seminary Speer Library



1 1012 01003 6160